



# Bodleian Libraries

UNIVERSITY OF OXFORD

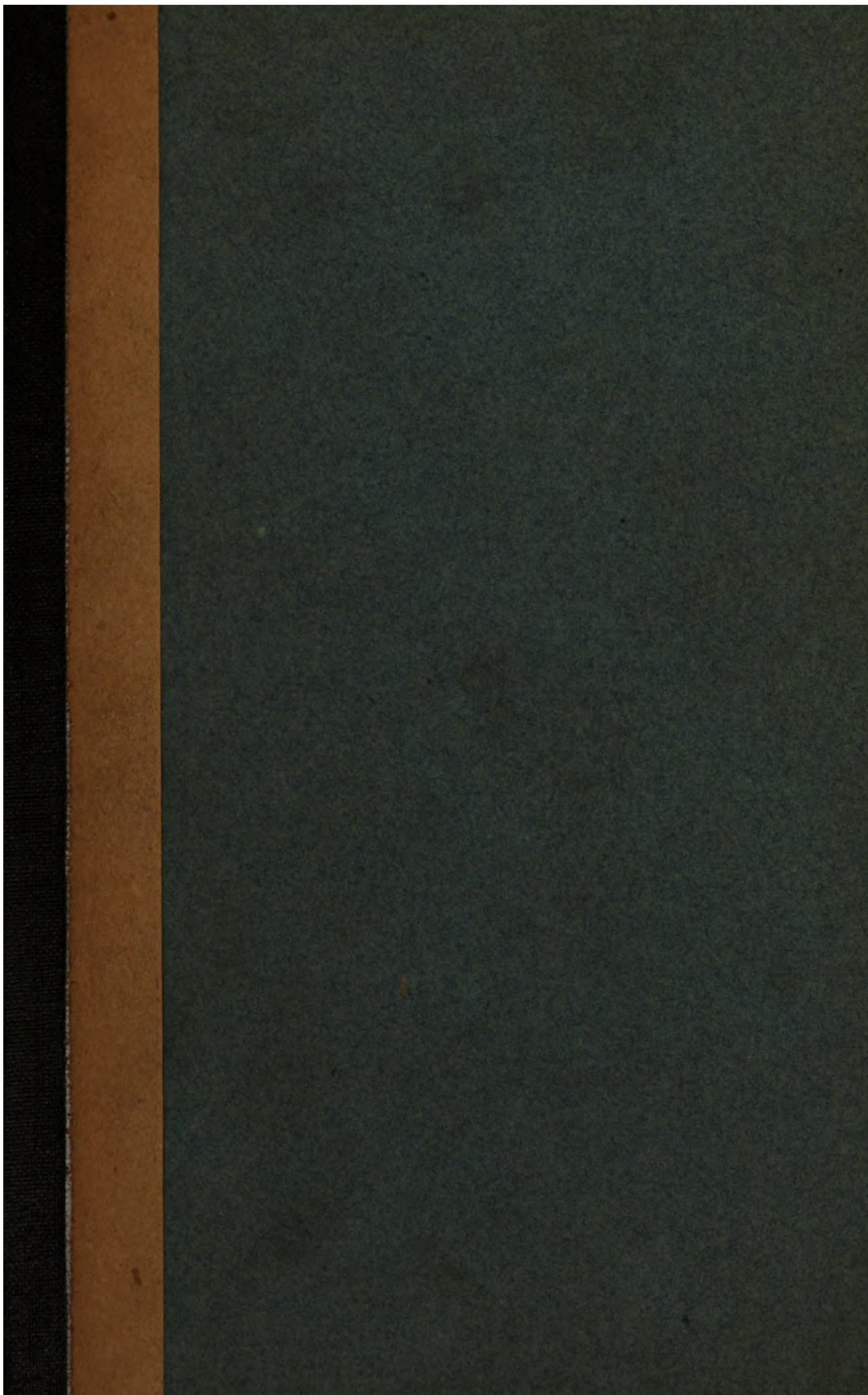
This book is part of the collection held by the Bodleian Libraries and scanned by Google, Inc. for the Google Books Library Project.

For more information see:

<http://www.bodleian.ox.ac.uk/dbooks>

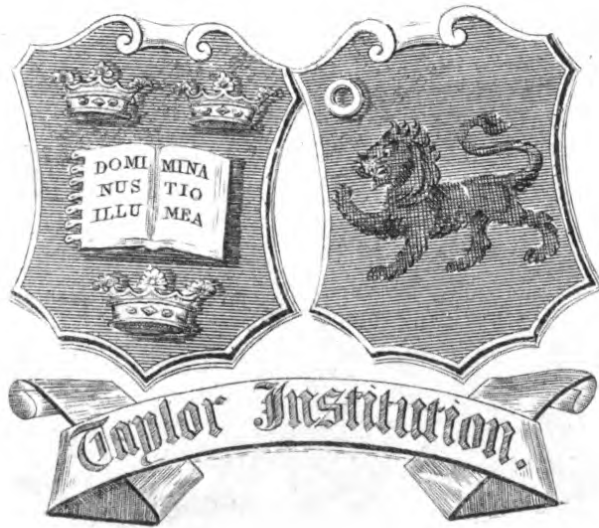


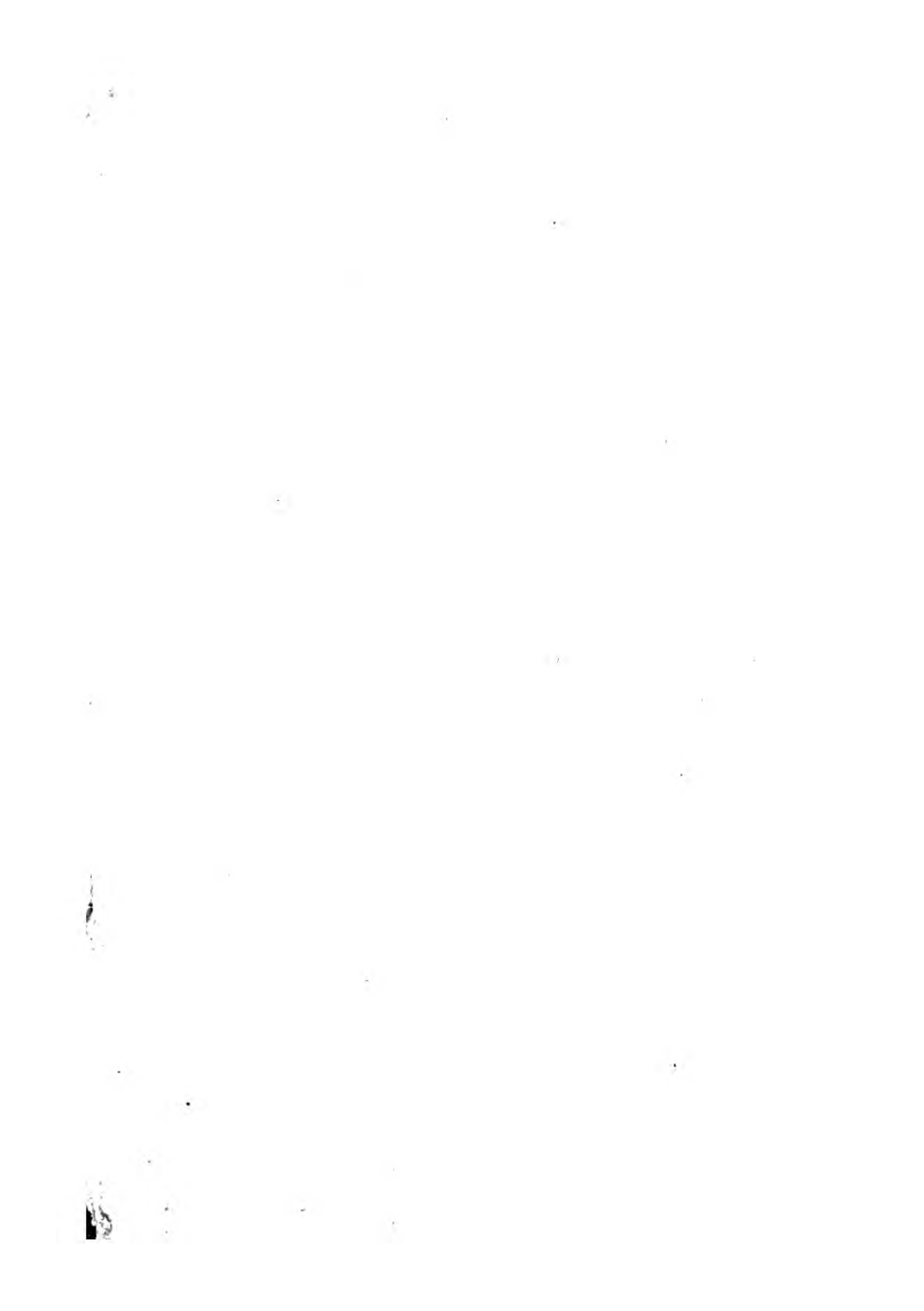
This work is licensed under a Creative Commons Attribution-NonCommercial-ShareAlike 2.0 UK: England & Wales (CC BY-NC-SA 2.0) licence.





17. a. 29.











CHAPMAN'S DRAMATIC WORKS.









THE COMEDIES AND TRAGEDIES OF GEORGE CHAPMAN  
NOW FIRST COLLECTED WITH  
ILLUSTRATIVE NOTES AND A  
MEMOIR OF THE AUTHOR IN  
THREE VOLUMES

VOLUME THE SECOND



LONDON  
JOHN PEARSON YORK STREET COVENT GARDEN  
1873





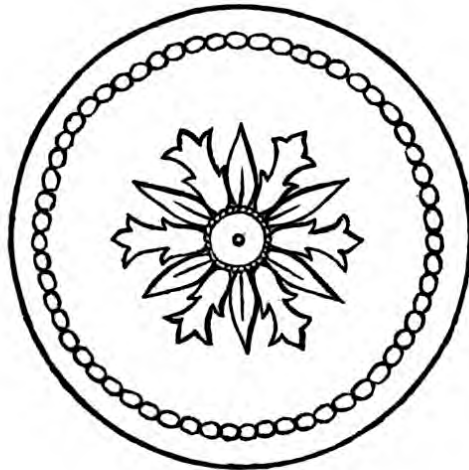


*Bussy D'Ambois:*

A  
TRAGEDIE:

As

*it hath been often presented  
at Paules.*



LONDON,  
Printed for *William Aspley*,  
1607.

[*The Text of the Edition of 1641, "much corrected  
"and amended by the Author before his death,"  
has been mainly followed, and the variations of  
the original, when of any importance, have been  
given in footnotes.*]

## *Prologue.\**

**N***ot out of confidence that none but wee  
Are able to present this Tragedie,  
Nor out of envie at the grace of late  
It did receive, nor yet to derogate  
From their deserts, who give out boldly, that  
They move with equall feet on the same flat;  
Neither for all, nor any of such ends,  
Wee offer it, gracious and noble friends,  
To your review, wee, farre from emulation  
(And charitably judge from imitation)  
With this worke entertaine you, a peece knowne  
And still beleev'd in Court to be our owne,  
To quit our claime, doubting our right or merit,  
Would argue in us poverty of spirit  
Which we must not subscribe to: Field is gone,  
Whose Action first did give it name, and one  
Who came the neereſt to him, is denide  
By his gray beard to ſhew the height and pride*

---

\* First published in the edition of 1641.

*Prologue.*

*Of D'Ambois youth and braverie ; yet to hold  
Our title still a foot, and not grow cold  
By giving it o're, a third man with his best  
Of care and paines defends our interest ;  
As Richard he was lik'd, nor doe wee feare  
In personating D'Ambois, hee'le appeare  
To faint, or goe lesse, so your free consent  
As heretofore give him encouragement.*

---

---



*Buffy D'Ambois.*

A

TRAGEDIE.

Actus primi Scena prima.

*Enter Buffy D'Ambois poore.*



Ortune, not Reason, rules the state of  
things,  
Reward goes backwards, Honor on his  
head ;  
Who is not poore, is monstrous ; only Need  
Giues forme & worth to eury humane feed.  
As Cedars beaten with continuall<sup>1</sup> stormes,  
So great men flourish ; and doe imitate  
Vnskilfull statuaries, who suppose  
(In forming a Coloffus)<sup>2</sup> if they make him  
Stroddle enough, stroote, and looke big, and gape,

---

<sup>1</sup> As Cedars beaten with incessant stormes. 1607.

<sup>2</sup> In forging a Coloffus. 1607.

Their worke is goodly : fo men meere great<sup>3</sup>  
 (In their affected grauitie of voice,  
 Sowerneffe of countenance, maners crueltie,  
 Authoritie, wealth, and all the spawne of Fortune)  
 Thinke they beare all the kingdomes worth before  
 them ;  
 Yet differ not from thofe Colofficke Statues,  
 Which with Heroique formes, without o'refpread,  
 Within are nought but mortar, flint and lead.  
 Man is a Torch borne in the winde ; a Dreame  
 But of a fhadow, fumm'd with all his fubftance ;  
 And as great Seamen v'fing their wealth  
 And skils in Neptunes deep inuifible pathes,  
 In tall fhips richly built and ribd with braffe,  
 To put a Girdle round about the world,  
 When they haue done it (comming neere their Hauen)  
 Are glad to giue a warning peece, and call  
 A poore ftaid fifher-man, that neuer paff  
 His Contries fight, to waft and guide them in :  
 So when we wander furtheft through the waues  
 Of Glaffe Glorie and the Gulfes of State,  
 Topt with all Titles, fpreading all our reaches,  
 As if each priuate Arme would fphere the earth ;  
 Wee muft to vertue for her guide refort,  
 Or wee fhall fhipwracke in our fafeft Port. *Procumbit.*

*Monsieur with two Pages.*

There is no fecond place in Numerous State  
 That holds more than a Cypher : In a King  
 All places are contain'd. His worde and lookes  
 Are like the flafhes and the bolts of Ioue,  
 His deedes inimitable, like the Sea  
 That fhuts ftill as it opes, and leaues no trafts,  
 Nor prints of Prefident for poore mens facts :  
 There's but a Thred betwixt me and a Croune ;

I would not wish it cut, vnlesse by nature ;  
Yet to prepare mee for that possible Fortune,  
Tis good to get resolued spirits about mee.<sup>4</sup>  
I followed *D'Ambois* to this greene Retreat ;  
A man of spirit beyond the reach of feare,  
Who (discontent with his neglected worth)  
Neglects the light, and loues obscure Abodes ;  
But he is yoong and haughtie, apt to take  
Fire at aduancement, to beare state and flourish ;  
In his Rise therefore shall my bounties shine :  
None lothes the world so much, nor loues to scoffe it,  
But gold and grace will make him surfet of it.

What, *D'Ambois* ?

*Buff.* He fir.

*Monf.* Turn'd to Earth, aliue ?

Vp man, the Sunne shines on thee.

*Buff.* Let it shine.

I am no more to play in't, as great men are.

*Monf.* Think'st thou men great in state, motes in  
the funne ?

They say so that would haue thee freeze in shades,  
That (like the grosse Sicilian Gurmundist)  
Emptie their Noses in the Cates they loue,  
That none may eat but they. Do thou but bring  
Light to the Banquet Fortune sets before thee,  
And thou wilt loth leane Darkeness like thy Death,  
Who would beleue thy Mettall could let sloth  
Rust and consume it ? If *Themistocles*  
Had liued obscur'd thus in th' Athenian state,  
*Xerxes* had made both him and it his slaues.  
If braue *Camillus* had lurckt so in Rome,  
He had not fve times beene dictator there,  
Nor foure times triumpht. If *Epaminondas*  
(Who liu'd twice twentie yeeres obscurd in Thebs)  
Had liu'd so still, he had beene still vnnam'd,

---

<sup>4</sup> Yet to prepare mee for that likely Fortune,  
Tis fit I get resolued spirits about mee. 1607.



And paid his Countrie nor himfelfe their right :  
 But putting foorth his strength, he rescude both  
 From imminent ruine ; and like Burnisht Steele,  
 After long vse he shin'd ; for as the light  
 Not only ferues to shew, but render vs  
 Mutually profitable ; so our liues  
 In acts exemplarie, not only winne  
 Our selues good Names, but doth to others giue  
 Matter for vertuous Deedes, by which wee liue.

*Buff.* What would you wish me ?<sup>5</sup>

*Monf.* Leauē the troubled streames,  
 And liue as Thriuers doe at the Well head.

*Buff.* At the Well head ? Alas what should I doe  
 With that enchanted Glasse ? See diuels there ?  
 Or (like a strumpet) learne to set my lookes  
 In an eternall Brake, or practise iuggling,  
 To keepe my face still fast, my hart still loose ;  
 Or beare (like Dames Schoolemistresses their Riddles)  
 Two Tongues, and be good only for a shift ;  
 Flatter great Lords, to put them still in minde  
 Why they were made Lords : or please humorous  
 Ladies<sup>6</sup>

With a good carriage, tell them idle Tales,  
 To make their Physicke worke ; spend a mans life  
 In fights and visitations, that will make  
 His eies as hollow as his Mistresse heart :  
 To doe none good, but those that haue no neede :  
 To gaine being forward, though you breake for haste  
 All the Commandements ere you breake your fast ?  
 But Beleeue backwards, make your Period  
 And Creedes last Article ; I beleue in God :  
 And (hearing villanies preacht) t'vnfold their Art  
 Learne to commit them, Tis a great mans Part.  
 Shall I learne this there ?

*Monf.* No, thou needst not learne,

5 What would you wish me doe? 1607.

6 portly Ladies. 1607.

Thou hast the Theorie, now goe there and practife.

*Buff.* I, in a thridbare fuit ; when men come there,

They must haue high Naps, and goe from thence bare :  
A man may drowne the parts of ten rich men  
In one poore fuit ; Braue Barks, and outward Gloffe  
Attract Court Loues,<sup>7</sup> be in parts ne're fo grosse.

*Monf.* Thou shalt haue Gloffe enough, and all things fit

T'enchafe in all shew, thy long smothered spirit :  
Be rul'd by me then. The rude Scythians  
Painted blinde Fortunes powerfull hands with wings,  
To shew her gifts come swift and suddenly,  
Which if her Favourite be not swift to take,  
He loses them foreuer. Then be wise :<sup>8</sup> *Exit Monf.*  
Stay but a while heere, and I'le send to thee.

*Manet Buff.*

*Buff.* What will he send ? some Crounes ? It is to fow them

Vpon my spirit, and make them spring a Croune  
Worth Millions of the feede Crounes he will send :  
Like to disparking noble Husbandmen,  
Hee'll put his Plow into me, Plow me up :  
But his unfweating thrift is policie,  
And learning-hating policie is ignorant  
To fit his feed-land foyl ; a smooth plain ground<sup>9</sup>  
Will neuer nourish any politicke feede ;  
I am for honest Actions, not for great :  
If I may bring vp a new fashion,  
And rise in Court for vertue ; speede his plow :  
The King hath knowne me long as well as hee,  
Yet could my Fortune neuer fit the length

---

7 Attract Court eies. 1607.

8 Then be rul'd. 1607.

9 For the above five lines there is only one in the edition of 1607 :—

But hee's no husband heere ; A smooth plaine ground.

Of both their vnderstandings till this houre.  
 There is a deepe nicke in times reflleffe wheele  
 For each mans good, when which nicke comes it  
 strikes ;

As Rhetoricke, yet workes not perfwasion,  
 But only is a meane to make it worke :  
 So no man rifeth by his reall merit,  
 But when it cries Clincke in his Raifers fpirit :  
 Many will fay, that cannot rife at all,  
 Mans firft houres rife, is firft fteppe to his fall.  
 Il'e venture that ; men that fall low muft die,  
 As well as men caft headlong from the skie.

*Ent. Maffe.*

Humor of Princes. Is this wretch indu'd  
 With any merit worth a thoufand Crounes ?  
 Will my Lord haue me be fo ill a Steward  
 Of his Reuenue, to difpofe a fumme  
 So great with fo fmall caufe as fhewes in him ?  
 I muft examine this : Is your name D'Ambois ?

*Buff.* Sir.

*Maff.* Is your name D'Ambois ?

*Buff.* Who haue wee heere ?

Serue you the Monfieur ?

*Maff.* How ?

*Buff.* Serue you the Monfieur ?

*Maff.* Sir, y'are very hot. I doe ferue the Monfieur ;  
 But in fuch place as giues me tha Command  
 Of all his other feruants : And becaufe  
 His Graces pleafure is, to giue your good  
 His Paffe through my Command ; Me thinks you  
 might

Vfe me with more refpect.<sup>10</sup>

*Table Chesbord & Tapers behind the Arras.*

*Buff.* Crie you mercie.

Now you haue opened my dull eies, I fee you ;  
 And would be glad to fee the good you fpeake of :

What might I call your name ?

*Maff.* Monsieur Maffe.

*Buff.* Monsieur Maffe ? Then good Monsieur  
Maffe,

Pray let me know you better,

*Maff.* Pray doe so,

That you may vse me better, For your selfe,  
By your no better outside, I would iudge you  
To be some Poet ; Haue you giuen my Lord  
Some Pamphlet ?

*Buff.* Pamphlet ?

*Maff.* Pamphlet fir, I say.

*Buff.* Did your great Masters goodnesse leaue the  
good<sup>11</sup>

That is to passe your charge, to my poore vse,  
To your discretion ?

*Maff.* Though he did not fir,

I hope tis no bad office to aske reason,  
How that his grace giues mee in charge, goes from me ?

*Buff.* That's very perfect fir.

*Maff.* Why very good fir ;

I pray then giue me leaue : If for no Pamphlet,  
May I not know what other merit in you,  
Makes his compunctiō willing to relieue you ?

*Buff.* No merit in the world fir.

*Maff.* That is strange.

Y'are a poore souldier, are you ?

*Buff.* That I am fir.

*Maff.* And haue Comanded ?

*Buff.* I, and gone without fir.

*Maff.* I see the man : A hundred Crounes will  
make him

Swagger, and drinke healths to his Graces bountie ;  
And sweare he could not be more bountifull.  
So ther's nine hundred Crouns, fast ; heere tall souldier,  
His grace hath sent you a whole hundred Crounes.

---

11 Did his wife excellencie leaue the good. 1607.

*Buff.* A hundred fir? naie doe his Highnes right;  
 I know his hand is larger, and perhaps  
 I may deserue more than my outside shewes;  
 I am a scholar, as I am a fouldier,  
 And I can Poetife; and (being well encourag'd)  
 May sing his Fame for giuing; yours for deliuering  
 (Like a most faithfull Steward) what he giues.

*Maff.* What shall your subiect be?

*Buff.* I care not much,  
 If to his bounteous Grace I sing the praise  
 Of faire great Noses, And to you of long ones.<sup>12</sup>  
 What Qualities haue you fir (beside your chaine  
 And veluet Iacket) Can your worship dance?

*Maff.* A merrie Fellow faith: It seemes my Lord  
 Will haue him for his Iester; And berlady  
 Such men are now no fooles, Tis a Knights place:  
 If I (to faue my Lord some Crounes) should vrge him  
 T'abate his Bountie, I should not be heard;  
 I would to heauen I were an errant Affe,  
 For then I should be sure to haue the Eares  
 Of these great men, where now their Iesters haue  
 them:

Tis good to please him, yet Ile take no notice  
 Of his preferment, but in policie  
 Will still be graue and serious, lest he thinke  
 I feare his wodden dagger: Heere fir Ambo,

*D'Amb.* How, Ambo fir?

*Maff.* I is not your name Ambo?

*D'Amb.* You call'd me lately *D'Amboys*, has your  
 Worship  
 So short a head?

*Maff.* I cry thee mercy *D'Amboys*.  
 A thousand Crounes I bring you from my Lord;

---

<sup>12</sup> If to his excellence I sing the praise  
 Of faire great Noses, And to your Deferts  
 The reuerend vertues of a faithfull Steward;—1607.



If you be thriftie and play the good husband, you may  
make

This a good standing liuing, Tis a Bountie,  
His Highnes might perhaps haue bestow'd better.

*D'Amb.* Goe, y'are a Rascall; hence, Away you  
Rogue.

*Maff.* What meane you sir?

*D'Amb.* Hence; prate no more;  
Or by thy villans blood thou prat'ft thy last:  
A Barbarous Groome, grudge at his masters Bountie:  
But since I know he would as much abhorre  
His hinde should argue what he giues his friend,  
Take that Sir, for your aptnesse to dispute. *Exit.*

*Maff.* These Crounes are sown in blood, blood be  
their fruit. *Exit.*

*Henry, Guife, Montfurry, Elenor, Tamyra,  
Beaupre, Pero, Charlotte,  
Pyra, Annable.*

*Henr.* Dutchesse of Guife, your Grace is much  
enricht,  
In the attendance of that English virgin,  
That will initiate her Prime of youth,  
(Dispos'd to Court conditions) vnder the hand  
Of your preferd instructions and Command,  
Rather than anie in the English Court,  
Whose Ladies are not matcht in Christendome,  
For gracefull and confirm'd behaiours;  
More than the Court, where they are bred is equall'd.

*Guif.* I like not their Court forme, it is too crest-  
falne;  
In all obseruance; making Demi-gods  
Of their great Nobles; and of their old Queene  
An euer-yoong, and most immortall Goddesse.

*Mont.* No question shee's the rarest Queene in  
Europe.

*Guif.* But what's that to her Immortality?

*Henr.* Affure you Cofen Guife, fo great a Courtier,  
 So full of maieftie and Roiall parts,  
 No Queene in Chriftendome may vaunt her felfe,<sup>13</sup>  
 Her Court approoues it, Thats a Court indeede ;  
 Not mixt with Clowneries vs'd in common houfes ;<sup>14</sup>  
 But, as Courts should be th' abstracts of their king-  
 domes,  
 In all the Beautie, State, and Worth they hold ;  
 So is hers, amplie, and by her inform'd.  
 The world is not contracted in a man,  
 With more proportion and expreffion  
 Than in her Court, her Kingdome : Our French Court  
 Is a meere mirror of confufion to it :  
 The King and fubiect, Lord and euerie flauē  
 Dance a continuall Haie ; Our Roomes of State,  
 Kept like our ftables ; No place more obferu'd  
 Than a rude Market place : And though our Cufrome  
 Keepe this affur'd confufion from our eyes,<sup>15</sup>  
 Tis nere the leffe effentiallie vnfightlie,  
 Which they would foone fee, would they change their  
 forme  
 To this of ours, and then compare them both ;  
 Which we muft not affect, becaufe in Kingdomes,  
 Where the Kings change doth breede the Subiects  
 terror,  
 Pure Innouation is more groffe than error.

*Mont.* No Question we fhall fee them imitate  
 (Though a farre off) the fashions of our Courts,  
 As they haue euer Ap't vs in attire ;  
 Neuer were men fo wearie of their Skins,  
 And apt to leape out of themfelues as they ;  
 Who when they trauell to bring foorth rare men,  
 Come home deliuered of a fine French fuit :

---

13 boast her felfe. 1607.

14 Rudenesse vs'd in common houfes. 1607.

15 Keepe this affur'd deformitie from our fight. 1607.

Their Braines lie with their Tailors, and get babies  
For their most compleat iffue ; Hee's fole heire<sup>16</sup>  
To all the morall vertues, that first greetes  
The light with a new fashon, which becomes them  
Like Apes, disfigur'd with the attires of men.

*Henr.* No Question they much wrong their reall  
worth,  
In affectation of outlandish Scumme ;  
But they haue faults, and wee more ; They foolish-  
proud,  
To jet in others plumes so haughtely ;<sup>17</sup>  
We proud, that they are proud of foolerie,  
Holding our worthes more compleat for their vaunts.

*Enter Monsieur, D'Ambois.*

*Monf.* Come mine owne sweet heart I will enter  
thee,  
Sir, I haue brought a Gentleman to court ;<sup>18</sup>  
And pray, you would vouchsafe to doe him grace.

*Henr.* D'Ambois, I thinke.

*D'Amb.* Thats still my name, my Lord, though I  
be something altered in attire.

*Henr.* I like your alteration, and must tell you,  
I haue expected th'offer of your seruice ;  
For we (in feare so make milde vertue proud)  
Vse not to seeke her out in any man.

*D'Amb.* Nor doth she vse to seeke out any man.  
He that will winne, must wooe her.<sup>19</sup>

---

16 Hee's first borne. 1607.

17 To be the Pictures of our vanitie. 1607.

18 Sir, I haue brought this Gentleman t' attend you. 1607.

19 He that will winne, must wooe her ; shee's not shamelesse.  
1607.



*Monf.* I vrg'd her modestie in him, my Lord, and gaue her those Rites, that he faies shee merits.

*Henr.* If you haue woo'd and won, then Brother weare him.

*Monf.* Th'art mine, sweet heart ; See here's the Guifes Duches. The Countesse of Mounsfurreaue ; Beaupres, come I'le enfeame thee ; Ladies, y'are too many to be in Counsell : I haue heere a friend, that I would gladlie enter in your Graces.

*D'Amb.* 'Save you Ladyes.

*Duch.* If you enter him in our Graces, my Lord me thinks by his blunt behaiour, he should come out of himselfe.

*Tam.* Has he neuer beene Courtier, my Lord ?

*Monf.* Neuer, my Ladie.

*Beaup.* And why did the Toy take him inth' head now ?

*D'Amb.* Tis leape yeere, Ladie, and therefore verie good to enter a Courtier.

*Henr.* Marke Duchesse of Guise, there is one is not bashfull.

*Duch.* No my Lord, he is much guilty of the bold extremity.

*Tam.* The man's a Courtier at first sight.

*D'Amb.* I can sing prickefong, Ladie, at first sight ; and why not be a Courtier as suddenly ?

*Beau.* Heere's a Courtier rotten before he be ripe.

*D'Amb.* Thinke mee not impudent, Ladie, I am yet no Courtier, I desire to be one, and would gladly take entrance (Madam) vnder your Princely Colours.

*Enter Barrifor, L'Anou, Pyrlot.*

*Duch.* Soft fir, you must rise by degrees, first being the fervant of some common Lady or Knights wife, then a little higher to a Lords wife : next a little higher to a Countesse ; yet a little higher to a Duchesse, and then turne the ladder.

*D'Amb.* Doe you alow a man then foure mistresses,

when the greatest Mistresse is allowed but three servants ?

*Duch.* Where find you that statute sir ?

*D'Amb.* Why be judged by the Groome-porters.

*Duchesse.* The Groome-porters ?

*D'Amb.* I Madam, must not they judge of all gamings i' th' Court ?

*Duchesse.* You talke like a gamester.

*Gui.* Sir, know you me ?

*D'Amb.* My Lord ?

*Gui.* I know not you : Whom doe you serue ?

*D'Amb.* Serue, my Lord ?

*Gui.* Go to Companion ; Your Courtship's too faucie.

*D'Amb.* Saucie ? Companion ? Tis the Guife, but yet those termes might haue bene spar'd of the Guiferd.

Companion ? Hee's iealous by this light : are you blinde of that side Duke ? Ile to her againe for that. Forth princely Mistresse, for the honour of Courtship. Another Riddle.

*Gui.* Cease your Courtshippe, or by heauen Ile cut your throat.

*D'Amb.* Cut my throat ? cut a whetstone ; good *Accius Næuius*, doe as much with your tongue as he did with a Rafor ; cut my throat ?

*Bar.* What new-come Gallant haue wee heere, that dares mate the Guife thus ?

*L'An.* Sfoote tis D'Ambois ; The Duke mistakes him (on my life) for some Knight of the new edition.

*D'Amb.* Cut my throat ? I would the King fear'd thy cutting of his throat no more than I feare thy cutting of mine.

*Gui.* Ile doe't by this hand.

*D'Amb.* That hand dares not doe't ; y'auē cut too many

Throates already Guife ; and Robb'd the Realme of Many thousand Soules, more precious than thine owne. Come Madam, talke on ; Sfoote, can you not talke ?

Talke on I fay. Another Riddle.<sup>20</sup>

*Pyr.* Heere's some strange diftemper.

*Bar.* Heere's a sudden tranfmigration with *D'Ambois*, out of the Knights ward, into the Duches bed.

*L'An.* See what a Metamorphofis a braue fuit can worke.

*Pyr.* Slight ftep to the Guife and difcouer him.

*Bar.* By no meanes, let the new fuit worke, wee'll fee the iffue.

*Gui.* Leauē your Courting.

*D'Amb.* I will not. I fay miftrefse, and I will ftand vnto it, that if a woman may haue three feruants, a man may haue threescore miftreffes.

*Gui.* Sirha, Ile haue you whipt out of the Court for this infolence.

*D'Amb.* Whipt? Such another fyllable out a th' prefence, if thou dar'ft for thy Dukedome.

*Gui.* Remember, Poultron.

*Monf.* Pray thee forbear.

*Buff.* Paffion of death! Were not the King heere; he fould ftrow the Chamber like a rufh.

*Monf.* But leauē Courting his wife then.

*Buff.* I will not: Ile Court her in defpight of him. Not Court her! Come Madam, talke on; Feare me nothing: Well maift thou driue thy mafter from the Court; but neuer *D'Ambois*.

*Monf.* His great heart will not downe, tis like the  
Sea

That partly by his owne internall heat,  
Partly the ftarr's dailie and nightly motion,  
Their heat and light,<sup>21</sup> and partly of the place,  
The diuers frames; but chiefly by the Moone,  
Bristled with farges, neuer will be wonne,  
(No, not when th'hearts of all thofe powers are burft)

<sup>20</sup> Talke on I fay, more Courtfhip, as you loue it. 1607.

<sup>21</sup> Ardor and light. 1697.

To make retreat into his fetled home,  
Till he be croun'd with his owne quiet fome.

*Henri.* You haue the mate. Another.

*Gui.* No more. *Flourish short.*

*Exit Guife, after him the King, Monf. whispering.*

*Bar.* Why heer's the Lion, skard with the throat of  
a dunghill Cocke ; a fellow that has newlie fhak'd off  
his shackles ; Now does he crow for that victorie.

*L'An.* Tis one of the best Iigges that euer was  
acted.

*Pyr.* Whom does the Guife fuppose him to be  
troe ?

*L'An.* Out of doubt, fome new denizond Lord ;  
and thinks that fuit newly drawne out a th' Mercers  
bookes.

*Bar.* I haue heard of a fellow, that by a fixt ima-  
gination looking vpon a Bulbaiting, had a vifible paire  
of hornes grew out of his forhead : and I beleeeue this  
Gallant ouerioied with the conceit of Monfieurs caft  
fuit, imagines himfelfe to be the Monsieur.

*L'An.* And why not ? as well as the Affe, ftalking  
in the Lions cafe, beare himfelfe like a Lion, braying  
all the huger beafts out of the Forrest ?

*Pyr.* Peace, he lookes this way.

*Bar.* Marrie let him looke fir, what will you fay  
now if the Guife be gone to fetch a blanquet for him ?

*L'An.* Faith I beleeeue it for his honour fake.

*Pyr.* But, if *D'Ambois* carrie it cleane ?

*Bar.* True, when he curuets in the blanquet.

*Pyr.* I marie fir.

*L'An.* Sfoote, fee how he ftares on's.

*Bar.* Lord bleffe vs, let's away.

*Buff.* Now fir, take your full view : how does the  
Obiect please ye ?

*Bar.* If you aske my opinion fir, I thinke your  
fuit fits as well as if't had beene made for you.

*Buff.* So fir, and was that the subiect of your ridiculous iolitie ?

*L'An.* What's that to you fir ?

*Buff.* Sir, I haue obseru'd all your fleepings ; and resolute your selues yee shall giue a strickt account for't.

*Enter Brisac, Melynell.*

*Bar.* O miraculous ieaousie!<sup>22</sup> Doe you thinke your selfe  
Such a singular subiect for laughter, that none can fall  
into

The matter of our merriment but you ?

*L'An.* This ieaousie of yours fir, confesses some close defect in your selfe, that wee neuer dream'd of.

*Pyr.* We held discourse of a perfum'd Affe, that being disguis'd with a Lions case, imagin'd himselfe a Lion : I hope that toucht not you.

*Buff.* So fir : Your descants doe maruellous well fit this ground, wee shall meete where your Buffonly laughers will cost yee the best blood in your bodies.

*Bar.* For lifes sake let's be gone ; hee'll kill's outright.

*Buff.* Goe at your pleasures, Ile be your Ghost to haunt you, and yee sleepe an't, hang mee.

*L'An.* Goe, goe fir, Court your mistresse.

*Pyr.* And be aduis'd : we shall haue odds against you.

*Buff.* Tush, valour stands not in number: Ile maintaine it, that one man may beat three boies.

*Bris.* Nay you shall haue no ods of him in number fir ; hee's a gentleman as good as the proudest of you, and yee shall not wrong him.

*Bar.* Not fir.

*Mely.* Not fir : Though he be not so rich, hee's a better man than the best of you ; And I will not endure it.



*L'An.* Not you fir ?

*Brif.* No fir, nor I.

*Buff.* I should thanke you for this kindneffe, if I thought these perfum'd muske-Cats (being out of this priuiledge) durst but once mew at vs.

*Bar.* Does your confident spirit doubt that fir ? Follow vs and trie.

*L'An.* Come fir, wee'll lead you a dance.

*Exeunt.*

*Finis Actus primi.*

Actus secundi Scena prima.

*Henry, Guise, Montfurry, and Attendants.*

*Henry.* **T**His desperate quarrell sprung out of their enuies

To *D'Ambois* sudden brauerie, and great spirit :

*Gui.* Neither is worth their enuie.

*Henr.* Lesse then either

Will make the Gall of Enuie ouerflow ;

She feedes on outcast entrailles like a Kite :

In which foule heape, if any ill lies hid,

She sticks her beake into it, shakes it vp,

And hurl's it all abroad, that all may view it.

Corruption is her Nutriment ; but touch her

With any precious ointment, and you kill her :

When she findes any filth in men, she feasts,

And with her blacke throat bruits it through the world ;

(Being found and healthfull) But if she but taste  
 The slenderest pittance of commended vertue,  
 She surfeits of it, and is like a flie,  
 That passeth all the bodies soundest parts,  
 And dwells vpon the fores ; or if her squint eie  
 Haue power to finde none there, she forges some :  
 She makes that crooked euer which is strait ;  
 Call's valour giddinesse, Iustice Tyrannie :  
 A wise man may shun her, she not her selfe ;  
 Whither soeuer she flies from her Harmes,  
 She beares her foe still claspt in her owne Armes :  
 And therefore couen Guise let vs auoid her.

*Enter Nuncius.*

What *Atlas*, or *Olympus* lifts his head  
 So farre past Couert, that with aire enough  
 My words may be inform'd ? And from his height  
 I may be seene, and heard through all the world ?  
 A tale so worthie, and so fraught with wonder,  
 Sticks in my iawes, and labours with euent.

*Henr.* Com'st thou from *D'Ambois* ?

*Nun.* From him, and the rest

His friends and enemies ; whose sterne fight I saw,  
 And heard their words before, and in the fray.

*Henr.* Relate at large what thou hast seene and  
 heard.

*Nun.* I saw fierce *D'Ambois*, and his two braue  
 friends

Enter the Field, and at their heeles their foes ;  
 Which were the famous souldiers ; *Barrisor*,  
*L'Anou*, and *Pyrrhot*, great in deedes of Armes :  
 All which arriu'd at the euenest peece of earth  
 The field affoorded ; The three Challengers  
 Turn'd head, drew all their rapiers, and stood ranckt :  
 When face to face the three Defendants met them,  
 Alike prepar'd, and resolute alike,  
 Like bonfires of Contributorie wood :  
 Euerie mans looke shew'd, Fed with eithers spirit,

As one had beene a mirror to another,  
Like formes of life and death, each tooke from other ;  
And so were life and death mixt at their heights,  
That you could see no feare of death, for life ;  
Nor loue of life, for death : But in their browes  
*Pyrrho's* Opinion in great letters shone :  
That life and death in all respects are one.

*Henr.* Past there no sort of words at their encounter ?

*Nun.* As *Hector*, twixt the Hosts of Greece and Troy.

(When Paris and the Spartane King should end  
The nine yeeres warre) held vp his brafen lance  
For signall, that both Hosts should cease from Armes,  
And heare him speake : So *Barrifor* (aduis'd)  
Aduanc'd his Naked Rapier twixt both sides,  
Ript vp the Quarrell, and compar'd six liues,  
Then laid in ballance with six idle words,  
Offer'd remission and contrition too ;  
Or else that he and *D'Ambois* might conclude  
The others dangers. *D'Ambois* lik'd the last ;  
But *Barrifors* friends (being equally engag'd  
In the maine Quarrell) neuer would expose  
His life alone, to that they all deseru'd.  
And (for the other offer of remission)  
*D'Ambois* (that like a Lawrell put in fire,  
Sparkl'd and spit) did much much more than scorne,  
That his wrong should incense him so like chaffe,  
To goe so soone out ; and like lighted paper,  
Approoue his spirit at once both fire and ashes :  
So drew they lots, and in them Fates appointed,  
That *Barrifor* should fight with fire *D'Ambois* ;  
*Pyrrhot* with *Melynell* ; with *Brisac L'Anou* :  
And then like flame and Powder they commixt,  
So spritely, that I wisht they had beene spirits,  
That the n'ere shutting wounds, they needes must  
open,  
Might as they open'd, shut and neuer kill :  
But *D'Ambois* sword (that lightned as it flew)



Shot like a pointed Comet at the face  
 Of manly *Barrisor* ; and there it stucke :  
 Thrice pluckt he at it, and thrice drew on thrusts,  
 From him, that of himselfe was free as fire ;  
 Who thrust still as he pluckt, yet (past beliefe !)  
 He with his subtle eie, hand, bodie, scap't ;  
 At last the deadly bitten point tuggd'd off,  
 On fell his yet vndaunted Foe so fiercely,  
 That (only made more horrid with his wound)  
 Great *D'Ambois* shrunke, and gaue a little ground ;  
 But soone return'd, redoubled in his danger,  
 And at the heart of *Barrisor* seal'd his anger :  
 Then, as in Arden I haue seene an Oke  
 Long shooke with tempests, and his loftie toppe  
 Bent to his roote, which being at length made loose  
 (Euen groaning with his weight) he gan to Nodde  
 This way and that : as loth his curled Browes  
 (Which he had oft wrapt in the skie with stormes)  
 Should stoope : and yet, his radicall fiuers burst,  
 Storme-like he fell, and hid the feare-cold Earth.  
 So fell stout *Barrisor*, that had stoode the shockes.  
 Of ten set Battles in your Highnesse warre,  
 Gainst the sole souldier of the world, Nauarre.

*Gui.* O pitious and horrid murther !

*Beau.* Such a life

Me thinkes had mettall in it to furuiue  
 An age of men.

*Henr.* Such, often soonest end.

Thy felt report cals on, wee long to know  
 On what euent the other haue arriu'd.

*Nun.* Sorrow and furie, like two opposite fumes,  
 Met in the vpper Region of a Cloud,  
 At the report made by this worthies fall,  
 Brake from the earth, and with them rose Reuenge,  
 Entring with fresh powers his two noble friends ;  
 And vnder that ods fell furcharg'd *Brisac*,  
 The friend of *D'Ambois*, before fierce *L'Anou* ;  
 Which *D'Ambois* seeing, as I once did see  
 In my yoong trauels through Armenia,

An angrie Vnicorne in his full carier  
Charge with too fwift a foot<sup>23</sup> a Ieweller,  
That watcht him for the Treasure of his browe ;  
And ere he could get shelter of a tree,  
Naile him with his rich Antler to the Earth :  
So *D'Ambois* ranne vpon reueng'd *L'Anou*,  
Who eying th' eager point borne in his face,  
And giuing backe, fell backe, and in his fall  
His foes vncurbed sword stopt in his heart :  
By which time all the life strings of the tw'other  
Were cut, and both fell as their spirits flew  
Vpwards : and still hunt Honour at the view.  
And now (of all the fix) sole *D'Ambois* stood  
Vntoucht, saue only with the others blood.

*Henr.* All flaine outright but hee ?

*Nun.* All flaine outright but he,  
Who kneeling in the warme life of his friends,  
(All freckled with the blood, his Rapier raind)  
He kist their pale cheekes, and bade both farewell ;  
And see the brauest man the French earth beares.

*Enter Monsieur, D'Amb. bare.*

*Buff.* Now is the time, y'are Princely vow'd my  
friend,  
Performe it Princely, and obtaine my pardon.

*Monf.* Elfe Heauen, forgieue not me : Come on  
braue friend.

If euer Nature held herselfe her owne,  
When the great Triall of a King and subiect  
Met in one blood, both from one bellie springing :  
Now prooue her vertue and her greatnesse One,  
Or make the t'one the greater with the t'other,  
(As true Kings should) and for your brothers loue,  
(Which is a speciall species of true vertue)  
Doe that you could not doe, not being a King.

*Henr.* Brother I know your fuit ; these wilfull  
murthers  
Are euer past our pardon.

*Monf.* Manly slaughter  
Should neuer beare th'account of wilfull murther ;  
It being a spice of iustice, where with life  
Offending past law, equall life is laid  
In equall ballance, to scourge that offence  
By law of reputation, which to men  
Exceedes all positieue law, and what that leaues  
To true mens valours (not prefixing rights  
Of fatisfaction, fuited to their wrongs)  
A free mans eminence may supplie and take.

*Henr.* This would make euerie man that thinks  
him wrongd,  
Or is offended, or in wrong or right,  
Lay on this violence, and all vaunt themfelues.  
Law-menders and suppliers though meere Butchers ;  
Should this fact (though of iustice) be forgiuen ?

*Monf.* O no, my Lord ; it would make Cowards  
feare  
To touch the reputations of true men,  
When only they are left to impe the law,  
Iustice will soone distinguish murtherous mindes  
From iust reuengers : Had my friend beene flaine,  
(His enemie furuiuing) he should die,  
Since he had added to a murther'd fame  
(Which was in his intent) a murdered man ;  
And this had worthily beene wilfull murther :  
But my friend only sau'd his fames deare life,  
Which is aboue life, taking th'vnder value,  
Which in the wrong it did, was forfeit to him ;  
And in this fact only preferues a man  
In his vprightnesse ; worthie to furuiue  
Millions of such as murther men, alieue.

*Henr.* Well brother, rise, and raise your friend  
withall  
From death to life : and *D'Ambois*, let your life  
(Refin'd by passing through this merited death)

Be purg'd from more such foule pollution ;  
Nor on your scape, nor valour more prefuming,  
To be againe so daring.<sup>24</sup>

*Buff.* My Lord,  
I loth as much a deede of vniust death,  
As law it felfe doth ; and to Tyrannife,  
Because I haue a little spirit to dare,  
And power to doe, as to be Tyranniz'd ;  
This is a grace that (on my knees redoubled)  
I craue to double this my short lifes gift ;  
And shall your royall bountie Centuple,  
That I may so make good what God and nature  
Haue giuen mee for my good : since I am free,  
(Offending no iust law) let no law make  
By any wrong it does, my life her slaue :  
When I am wrong'd and that law failes to right me,  
Let me be King my felfe (as man was made)  
And doe a iustice that exceeds the law :  
If my wrong passe the power of single valour  
To right and expiate ; then be you my King,  
And doe a Right, exceeding Law and Nature :  
Who to himselfe is law, no law doth neede,  
Offends no Law and is a King indeede.

*Henr.* Enioy what thou intreat'st we giue but  
ours.

*Buff.* What you haue giuen, my Lord, is euer  
yours.

*Exit Rex cum Beau.*

*Gui.* Who would<sup>25</sup> haue pardon'd such a murther ?  
*Exit.*

*Monf.* Now vanish horrors into Court attractions,

---

<sup>24</sup> To be againe so violent. 1607.

<sup>25</sup> Mort dieu, who would, &c. 1607.

For which let this balme make thee fresh and faire.<sup>26</sup>  
 And now forth with thy service to the Duchesse,  
 As my long love will to Montfurries Countesse.

*Exit.*

*D'Amb.* To whom my love hath long been vow'd  
 in heart,  
 Although in hand for shew I held the Duchesse.  
 And now through bloud and vengeance, deeds of  
 height,  
 And hard to be atchiev'd, tis fit I make  
 Attempt of her perfection, I need feare  
 No check in his Rivality, since her vertues  
 Are so renown'd, and hee of all Dames hated.

*Exit.*

*Montfur. Tamyra, Beaupre, Pero, Charlotte, Pyrha.*

*Mont.* He will haue pardon fure.

*Tam.* Twere pittie else:

For though his great spirit something ouerflow,  
 All faults are still borne, that from greatnesse grow:  
 But such a sudden Courtier saw I neuer.

*Beau.* He was too sudden, which indeede was  
 rudenesse.

*Tam.* True, for it argued his no due conceit  
 Both of the place, and greatnesse of the persons:  
 Nor of our sex: all which (we all being strangers  
 To his encounter) should haue made more maners  
 Deferue more welcome.

*Mont.* All this fault is found  
 Because he lou'd the Dutchesse and left you.

*Tam.* Ahlas, loue giue her ioy; I am so farre

<sup>26</sup> After this line the scene thus closes in the edition of 1607:—

*Buff.* How shall I quite your loue?

*Monf.* Be true to the end:

I haue obtain'd a Kingdome with my friend.

*Exit.*



From Enuie of her honour, that I sweare,  
Had he encounterd me with such proud sleight :  
I would haue put that proiect face of his  
To a more test, than did her Dutcheffhip.

*Be.* Why (by your leaue my Lord) Ile speake it  
heere,

(Although she be my ante) she scarce was modest,  
When she perceiued the Duke her husband take  
Those late exceptions to her seruants Courtship  
To entertaine him.

*Tam.* I, and stand him still.  
Letting her husband giue her seruant place :  
Though he did manly, she should be a woman.

*Enter Guife.*

D'Ambois is pardond : wher's a king ? where law ?  
See how it runnes, much like a turbulent sea ;  
Heere high, and glorious, as it did contend  
To wash the heauens, and make the stars more pure :  
And heere so low, it leaues the mud of hell  
To euery common view : come count Montfurry  
We must consult of this.

*Tam.* Stay not, sweet Lord.

*Mont.* Be pleased, Ile strait returne.

*Exit cum Guife.*

*Tamy.* Would that would please me.

*Beau.* Ile leaue you Madam to your passions.  
I see, ther's change of weather in your lookes.

*Exit cum suis.*

*Tamy.* I cannot cloake it : but ; as when a fume,  
Hot, drie and grosse : within the wombe of earth  
Or in her superficies begot :  
When extreame cold hath stroke it to her heart,  
The more it is comprest, the more it rageth ;  
Exceeds his prisons strength that should containe it,  
And then it toffeth Temples in the aire ;  
All barres made engines, to his insolent fury :

So, of a sudden, my licentious fancy  
 Riots within me : not my name and house  
 Nor my religion to this houre obseru'd  
 Can stand aboue it : I must vtter that  
 That will in parting breake more strings in me,  
 Than death when life parts : and that holy man  
 That, from my cradle, counfeld for my soule :  
 I now must make an agent for my bloud.

*Enter Monsieur.*

*Monf.* Yet, is my Mistresse gracious ?

*Tamy.* Yet vnanswered ?

*Monf.* <sup>27</sup>Pray thee regard thine owne good, if not  
 mine,

And cheere my Loue for that ; you do not know  
 What you may be by me, nor what without me ;  
 I may haue power t'aduance and pull downe any.

*Tamy.* Thats not my study : one way I am sure  
 You shall not pull downe me : my husbands height  
 Is crowne to all my hopes : and his retiring  
 To any meane state, shalbe my aspiring :  
 Mine honour's in mine owne hands, spite of kings.

*Monf.* Honour, whats that ? your second maiden-  
 head :

And what is that ? a word : the word is gone  
 The thing remaines : the rose is pluckt, the stalke  
 Abides : an easie losse where no lack's found :  
 Beleeue it ther's as small lacke in the losse,  
 As there is paine ith losing : archers euer  
 Haue two strings to a bow : and shall great *Cupid*  
 (Archer of archers both in men and women)  
 Be worfe provided than a common archer ?  
 A husband and a friend all wise wiues haue.

*Tamy.* Wife wiues they are that on such strings  
 depend,

---

<sup>27</sup> Here this Scene opens with the words—" *Enter Monsieur, Tamyra and Pero with a Booke,*" in the edition of 1641, from which the fifty-nine preceding lines are entirely omitted. *Ed.*

With a firme husband, ioyning a lose friend.<sup>28</sup>

*Monf.* Still you stand on your husband, so doe all  
The common sex of you, when yare encounterd  
With one ye cannot fancie : all men know  
You liue in court heere by your owne election.  
Frquenting all our solemne sports and triumphs,  
All the most youthfull companie of men :  
And wherefore doe you this? To please your hus-  
band?

Tis grosse and fulsome : if your husbands pleasure  
Be all your Obiect, and you aime at Honour,  
In liuing close to him, get you from Court,  
You may haue him at home ; these common Puttofs  
For common women serue : my honor ? husband ?  
Dames maritorious, ne're were meritorious :  
Speake plaine and say I do not like you Sir,  
Y'are an illfauor'd fellow in my eie,  
And I am answer'd.

*Tamy.* Then I pray be answer'd :  
For in good faith my Lord I do not like you  
In that fort you like.

*Monf.* Then haue at you heere:  
Take (with a politique hand) this rope of Pearle ;  
And though you be not amorous : yet be wife :  
Take me for wifdome ; he that you can loue  
Is neere the further from you.

*Tamy.* Now it comes  
So ill prepar'd, that I may take a poison,  
Vnder a medicine as good cheape as it :  
I will not haue it were it worth the world.

*Monf.* Horror of death : could I but please your  
eie,  
You would giue me the like, ere you would loose me :  
Honor and husband ?

*Tamy.* By this light my Lord

---

28 weighing a dissolute friend. 1607.



Y'are a vile fellow : and Ile tell the King  
 Your occupation of dishonouring Ladies  
 And of his Court : a Lady cannot liue  
 As she was borne ; and with that sort of pleasure  
 That fits her state : but she must be defam'd  
 With an infamous Lords detraction :  
 Who would endure the Court if these attempts,  
 Of open and profest lust must be borne ?  
 Whose there ? come on Dame, you are at your booke  
 When men are at your mistresse ; haue I taught you  
 Any such waiting womans qualitie ?

*Monf.* Farewell good husband. *Exit. Monf.*

*Mont.* Farewell wicked Lord.

*Enter Mont.*

*Mont.* Was not the Monsieur heere ?

*Tam.* Yes, to good purpose,  
 And your cause is as good to seeke him too  
 Aud haunt his company.

*Mont.* Why whats the matter ?

*Tam.* Matter of death, were I some husbands  
 wife :

I cannot liue at quiet in my chamber  
 For opportunities almost to rapes  
 Offerd me by him.

*Mont.* Pray thee beare with him :  
 Thou know'ft he is a Bachelor, and a Courtier,  
 I, and a Prince: and their prerogatiues  
 Are, to their lawes, as to their pardons are  
 Their reseruatiens, after Parliaments  
 One quits another : forme giues al their effence :  
 That Prince doth high in vertues reckoning stand  
 That will entreat a vice, and not command :  
 So far beare with him : should another man  
 Trust to his priuiledge, he should trust to death :  
 Take comfort then (my comfort) nay triumph,  
 And crown thy selfe, thon part'ft with victory :  
 My prefence is so only deare to thee,

That other mens appeare worfe than they be.  
For this night yet, beare with my forced absence :  
Thou know'st my bufineffe ; and with how much weight,  
My vow hath charged it.

*Tam.* True my Lord, and neuer  
My fruitlesse loue shall let your serious honour,  
Yet, sweet Lord, do not stay, you know my foule  
Is so long time without me, and I dead  
As you are absent.

*Mont.* By this kisse, receiue  
My soule for hostage, till I see my loue.

*Tam.* The morne shall let me see you :

*Mont.* With the sunne  
Ile visit thy more comfortable beauties.

*Tam.* This is my comfort, that the funne hath left  
The whole worlds beauty ere my funne leaues me.

*Mont.* Tis late night now indeed : farewell my  
light. *Exit.*

*Tam.* Farewell my light and life : But not in him,  
In mine owne dark love and light bent to another.  
Alas, that in the waue of our affections  
We should supplie it with a full diffembling,  
In which each yoongest maid is growne a mother,  
Frailtie is fruitfull, one finne gets another :  
Our loues like sparkles are that brightest shine,  
When they goe out ; most vice shewes most diuine :  
Goe maid, to bed, lend me your booke I pray :  
Not like your selfe, for forme, Ile this night trouble  
None of your seruices : Make fure the doores,  
And call your other fellowes to their rest.

*Per.* I will, yet I will watch to know why you  
watch. *Exit.*

*Tam.* Now all the peacefull regents of the night,  
Silently-gliding exhalations,  
Languishing windes, and murmuring fals of waters,  
Sadnesse of heart, and ominous securenesse,  
Enchantments, dead sleepes, all the friends of rest,  
That euer wrought vpon the life of man,  
Extend your vtmost strengths ; and this charm'd houre

Fix like the Center ; make the violent wheelles  
 Of Time and Fortune stand ; and Great Existens  
 (The Makers treasurie) now not seeme to bee,  
 To all but my approaching friends and mee :  
 They come, alas they come, feare, feare and hope  
 Of one thing, at one instant fight in mee :  
 I loue what most I loath, and cannot liue  
 Vnlesse I compasse that which holds my death :  
 For life's meere death loving one that loathes me,<sup>29</sup>  
 And he I loue, will loth me, when he sees  
 I flie my sex, my vertue, my Renowne,  
 To runne so madly on a man vnknowne.<sup>30</sup>  
 See, see a Vault is opening that was neuer  
 Knowne to my Lord and husband, nor to any  
 But him that brings the man I loue, and me ;  
 How shall I looke on him ? how shall I liue  
 And not confume in blushes, I will in ;  
 And cast my selfe off, as I ne're had beene.

*Exit.**Ascendit Frier and D'Ambois.*

*Frier.* Come worthiest sonne, I am past measure  
 glad,  
 That you (whose worth I haue approou'd so long)  
 Should be the Obiect of her fearefull loue ;  
 Since both your wit and spirit can adapt  
 Their full force to supplie her vtmost weakenesse :  
 You know her worths and vertues, for Report  
 Of all that know, is to a man a knowledge :  
 You know besides, that our affections storme,

29 For loue is hatefull without loue againe. 1607.

30 This Scene thus closes in the Edition of 1607 :—  
 See, see the gulfe is opening, that will swallow  
 Me and my fame for euer ; I will in,  
 And cast my selfe off, as I ne're had beene.

*Exit.*

Rais'd in our blood, no Reason can reforme.  
Though she seeke then their satisfaction,  
(Which she must needs, or rest vn-satisfied)  
Your iudgement will esteeme her peace thus wrought,  
Nothing lesse deare, then if your selfe had fought :  
And (with another colour, which my Art  
Shall teach you to lay on) your selfe must feeme  
The only agent, and the first Orbe Moue,  
In this our set, and cunning world of Loue.

*Buff.* Giue me the colour (my most honour'd  
Father)

And trust my cunning then to lay it on.

*Frier.* Tis this, good sonne ; Lord *Barrifor* (whom  
you flew)

Did loue her dearely, and with all fit meanes  
Hath vrg'd his acceptation, of all which  
She keepes one letter written in his blood :  
You must say thus then, That you heard from mee  
How much her selfe was toucht in conscience  
With a Report (which is in truth disperst)  
That your maine quarrell grew about her loue,  
Lord *Barrifor* imagining your Courtship  
Of the great Guises Duchesse in the Prefence,  
Was by you made to his elected mistresse :  
And so made me your meane now to resoue her,  
Chosing (by my direction) this nights depth,  
For the more cleere auoiding of all note,  
Of your presumed prefence, and with this  
(To cleere her hands of such a louers blood)  
She will so kindly thanke and entertaine you,  
(Me thinkes I see how) I, and ten to one,  
Shew you the confirmation in his blood,  
Lest you should thinke report and she did faine,  
That you shall so haue circumstantiall meanes,  
To come to the direct, which must be vsed :  
For the direct is crooked ; Loue comes flying ;  
The height of loue is still wonne with denying.

*D'Amb.* Thankes honoured Father.

*Frier.* She must neuer know

That you know anything of any loue  
 Sustain'd on her part : For learne this of mee ;  
 In any thing a woman does alone,  
 If she difsemble, she thinkes tis not done ;  
 If not difsemble, nor a little chide,  
 Giue her her wish, she is not fatisf'd ;  
 To haue a man thinke that she neuer seekes,  
 Does her more good than to haue all she likes :  
 This frailtie sticks in them beyond their sex ;  
 Which to reforme, reason is too perplex :  
 Urge reason to them, it will doe no good ;  
 Humour (that is the charriot of our foode  
 In euerie bodie) must in them be fed,  
 To carrie their affections by it bred.  
 Stand clofe.

*Enter Tamyra with a Book.*

*Tam.* Alas, I feare my strangeness will retire him.  
 If he goe backe, I die ; I must preuent it,  
 And cheare his onfet with my fight at least,  
 And thats the most ; though euerie step he takes  
 Goes to my heart, Ile rather die than feeme  
 Not to be strange to that I most esteeme.

*Frier.* Madam.

*Tamy.* Ah !

*Frier.* You will pardon me, I hope,  
 That, so beyond your expectation,  
 (And at a time for visitants so vnfit)  
 I (with my noble friend heere) visit you :  
 You know that my acceffe at any time  
 Hath euer beene admitted ; and that friend  
 That my care will presume to bring with mee,  
 Shall haue all circumstance of worth in him,  
 To merit as free welcome as my selfe.

*Tamy.* O father, but at this suspitious houre  
 You know how apt best men are to suspect vs,  
 In any cause, that makes suspitious shadow  
 No greater than the shadow of a haire :



And y'are to blame : what though my Lord and  
husband

Lie foorth to night ? and since I cannot sleepe  
When he is absent, I sit vp to night,  
Though all the doores are sure, & all our seruants  
As sure bound with their sleepes ; yet there is one  
That wakes aboue, whose eie no sleepe can binde :  
He sees through doores, and darkenesse, and our  
thoughts ;

And therefore as we should auoid with feare,  
To thinke amisse our selues before his searh ;  
So should we be as curious to shunne  
All cause that other thinke not ill of vs.

*D'Amb.* Madam, tis farre from that: I only  
heard

By this my honour'd father, that your conscience  
Made some deepe scruple with a false report ;  
That *Barrifors* blood should something touch your  
honour,<sup>31</sup>

Since he imagin'd I was courting you,  
When I was bold to change words with the Duchesse,  
And therefore made his quarrell, his long loue  
And service, as I heare, being deeply vowed  
To your perfections which my ready presence  
Prefum'd on with my father at this season,  
For the more care of your so curious honour  
Can well resolute your Conscience, is most false.

*Tam.* And is it therefore that you come good  
fir ?

Then craue I now your pardon and my fathers,  
And sweare your presence does me so much good,  
That all I haue, it bindes to your requitall :  
Indeede fir, tis most true that a report  
Is spread, alleaging that his loue to mee

---

31 Was something troubled with a false report ;  
That Barrifors blood should something touch your hand.



Was reason of your quarrell, and because  
 You shall not thinke I faine it for my glorie,  
 That he importun'd me for his Court seruice,  
 Ile shew you his owne hand, fet downe in blood  
 To that vaine purpose: Good Sir, then come in.  
 Father I thanke you now a thousand fold.

*Exit Tamira and D'Amb.*

*Fryar.* May it be worth it to you honour'd daughter.  
*Descendit Fryar.*

*Finis Actus secundi.*

Actus Tertij Scena Prima.

*Enter D'Ambois, Tamyra, with a Chaine of Pearle.*

*D'Amb.* Sweet Mistresse cease, your conscience is  
 too nice,  
 And bites too hotly of the Puritane spice.

*Tam.* O My deare seruant, in thy close embraces,  
 I haue fet open all the dores of danger  
 To my encompast honor, and my life:  
 Before I was secure against death and hell;  
 But now am subiect to the hartlesse feare,  
 Of euery shadow, and of euery breath,  
 And would change firmnesse with an aspen leafe:  
 So confident a spotlesse conscience is;  
 So weake a guilty: O the dangerous siege  
 Sin laies about vs? and the tyranny  
 He exercises when he hath expugn'd:  
 Like to the horror of a winters thunder,  
 Mixt with a gushing storme, that suffer nothing

To stirre abroad on earth, but their own rages ;  
Is sin, when it hath gathered head aboue vs :  
No rooffe, no shelter can secure vs so,  
But he will drowne our cheeks in feare or woe.

*D'Ambois.* Sin is a coward Madam, and insults  
But on our weaknesse, in his truest valour :  
And so our ignorance tames vs, that we let  
His shadowes fright vs : and like empty clouds  
In which our faulty apprehensions forge  
The formes of Dragons, Lions, Elephants,  
When they hold no proportion : the flie charmes  
Of the witch policy makes him, like a monster  
Kept onely to shew men for Servile money :  
That false hagge often paints him : in her cloth  
Ten times more monstrous than he is in troth :  
In three of vs, the secret of our meeting,  
Is onely guarded, and three friends as one  
Haue euer beene esteem'd : as our three powers  
That in our one foule, are, as one vnited :  
Why should we feare then ? for my selfe I sweare  
Sooner shall torture, be the Sire to pleasure,  
And health be grieuous to one long time sicke,  
Than the deare iewell of your fame in me,  
Be made an outcast to your infamy ;  
Nor shall my value (sacred to your vertues)  
Onely giue free course to it, from my selfe :  
But make it flie out of the mouths of kings  
In golden vapours, and with awfull wings.

*Tam.* It rests as all kings seales were set in thee.  
Now let us call my Father, whom I sweare  
I could extreably chide, but that I feare  
To make him so suspitious of my loue  
Of which (sweet seruant) doe not let him know  
For all the world.

*D'Amb.* Alas ! he will not think it ?

*Tam.* Come then—ho ? Father, ope, and take  
your friend.

*Ascendit Frier.*

*Frier.* Now honour'd daughter, is your doubt re-  
folu'd.

*Tam.* I Father, but you went away too soone.

*Fryer.* Too soone ?

*Tam.* Indeed you did, you should haue stayed ;  
Had not your worthy friend beene of your bringing,  
And that containes all lawes to temper me,  
Not all the fearefull danger that besieged us,  
Had aw'd my throat from exclamation.

*Fryer.* I know your serious disposition well.  
Come sonne the morne comes on.

*D'Amb.* Now honour'd Mistresse  
Till farther service call, all blisse supply you.

*Tamy.* And you this chaine of pearle, and my love  
onely.

*Descendit Frier and D'Amb.*

*Ta.* It is not I, but vrgent destiny,  
That (as great states men for their generall end  
In politique iustice, make poore men offend)  
Enforceth my offence to make it iust :  
What shall weake Dames doe, when th' whole worke  
of Nature  
Hath a strong finger in each one of vs ?  
Needs must that sweep away the filly cobweb  
Of our still-vndone labours ; that laies still  
Our powers to it : as to the line, the stone,  
Not to the stone, the line should be oppof'd ;  
We cannot keepe our constant course in vertue :  
What is alike at all parts ? euery day  
Differs from other : euery houre and minute :  
I, euery thought in our false clock of life,  
Oft times inuerts the whole circumference :  
We must be sometimes one, sometimes another :  
Our bodies are but thicke clouds to our foules ;  
Through which they cannot shine when they desire :  
When all the starres, and euen the sunne himselfe,  
Must stay the vapors times that he exhales

Before he can make good his beames to vs :  
O how can we, that are but motes to him,  
VVandring at randon in his orderd rayes,  
Disperfe our passions fumes, with our weake labors,  
That are more thick & black than all earths vapors ?

*Enter Mont.*

*Mon.* Good day, my loue: what vp and ready too!

*Tam.* Both, (my deare Lord) not all this night  
made I

My selfe vnready, or could sleepe a winke.

*Mont.* Ahlasfe, what troubled my true loue? my  
peace,

From being at peace within her better selfe ?

Or how could sleepe forbear to feize thine eyes<sup>32</sup>

VWhen he might challenge them as his iust prise ?

*Tam.* I am in no powre earthly, but in yours ;

To what end should I goe to bed my Lord,

That wholly mift the comfort of my bed ?

Or how should sleepe possesse my faculties,

VWanting the proper clofer of mine eies ?

*Mont.* Then will I neuer more sleepe night from  
thee :

All mine owne Bufineffe, all the Kings affaires

Shall take the day to serue them : Euerie night

Ile euer dedicate to thy delight.

*Tam.* Nay, good my Lord esteeme not my desires

Such doters on their humours, that my iudgement

Cannot subdue them to your worthier pleasure :

A wiues pleas'd husband must her obiect be

In all her acts, not her footh'd fantasie.

*Mont.* Then come my loue, Now pay those Rites  
to sleepe

Thy faire eies owe him : shall we now to bed ?

*Tam.* O no my Lord, your holy Frier saies,

All couplings in the day that touch the bed,  
 Adulterous are, euen in the married ;  
 Whose graue aud worthie doctrine, well I know,  
 Your faith in him will liberally allow.

*Mont.* Hee's a most learned and Religious man ;  
 Come to the Prefence then, and see great *D'Ambois*  
 (Fortunes proud mushrome shot vp in a night)  
 Stand like an *Atlas* vnder our Kings arme ;<sup>33</sup>  
 Which greatnesse with him Monsieur now enuies  
 As bitterly and deadly as the Guife.

*Tam.* What, he that was but yesterday his maker ?  
 His raifer and preferuer ?

*Mont.* Euen the same.  
 Each naturall agent workes but to this end,  
 To render that it works on, like it selfe ;  
 Which since the Monsieur in his act on *D'Ambois*,  
 Cannot to his ambitious end effect,  
 But that (quite opposite) the King hath power  
 (In his loue borne to *D'Ambois*) to conuert  
 The point of Monsieurs aime on his owne breast,  
 He turnes his outward loue to inward hate :  
 A Princes loue is like the lightnings fume,  
 Which no man can embrace, but must consume.

*Exeunt.*

*Henry, D'Ambois, Monsieur, Guife, Dutches Annabell,  
 Charlot, Attendants.*

*Henr.* Speake home my Buffy, thy impartiall  
 wordes  
 Are like braue Faulcons that dare trusse a Fowle  
 Much greater than themselues ; Flatterers are Kites  
 That checke at Sparrowes ;<sup>34</sup> thou shalt be my Eagle,  
 And beare my thunder vnderneath thy wings :

---

33 Stand like an Atlas vnderneath the King. 1607.

34 That checke at nothing. 1607.



Truths words like iewels hang in th' eares of Kings.

*Buff.* Would I might liue to see no Iewes hang  
there

In steede of iewels ; fycophants I meane,  
Who vse truth like the Diuell, his true Foe,  
Cast by the Angell to the pit of feares,  
And bound in chaines ; truth feldome decks Kings  
eares :

Slaue flatterie (like a Rippiers legs rowl'd vp  
In bootes of haie ropes) with Kings foothed guts  
Swadled and strappl'd, now liues only free.  
O tis a subtile knaue ; how like the plague  
Vnfelt, he strikes into the braine of man,<sup>35</sup>  
And rageth in his entrailes when he can,  
Worse than the poison of a red hair'd man.

*Henr.* Flie at him and his broode, I cast thee off,  
And once more giue thee surname of mine Eagle.

*Buff.* Ile make you sport enough then, let me haue  
My lucerns too (or dogges inur'd to hunt  
Beasts of most rapine) but to put them vp,  
And if I trusse not, let me not be trusted :  
Shew me a great man (by the peoples voice,  
Which is the voice of God) that by his greatnesse  
Bumbafts his priuate roofes, with publique riches ;  
That affects royaltie, rising from a clapdish ;  
That rules so much more by his suffering King,  
That he makes kings of his subordinate slaues :  
Himselfe and them graduate like woodmongers  
(Piling a stacke of billets) from the earth,  
Raifing each other into steeples heights ;  
Let him conuey this on the turning proppes  
Of Protean Law, and (his owne counsell keeping)  
Keepe all vpright ; let me but Hawlke at him,  
Ile play the Vulture, and so thumpe his liuer,  
That (like a huge vnlading Argofea)  
He shall confesse all, and you then may hang him.

---

35 into the braine of truth. 1607.



Shew me a Clergie man, that is in voice  
 A Larke of Heauen ; in heart a Mowle of earth ;  
 That hath good liuing, and a wicked life ;  
 A temperate looke, and a luxurious gut ;  
 Turning the rents of his superfluous Cures  
 Into your Phefants and your Partriches ;  
 Venting their Quinteffence as men read Hebrew :  
 Let me but hawlke at him, and, like the other,  
 He fhall confesse all, and you then may hang him.  
 Shew me a Lawyer that turnes facred law  
 (The equall rendrer of each man his owne,  
 The fcouge of Rapine and Extortion,  
 The Sanctuarie and impregnable defence  
 Of retir'd learning, and besieged vertue)<sup>36</sup>  
 Into a Harpye, that eats all but's owne,  
 Into the damned fins it punisheth ;  
 Into the Synagogue of theeues and Atheifts ;  
 Blood into gold, and iustice into lust :  
 Let me but hawlke at him, as at the rest,  
 He fhall confesse all, and you then may hang him.

*Enter Mont-Surrey, Tamira, and Pero.*

*Gui.* Where will you finde such game as you would  
 hawlke at ?

*Buff.* Ile hawlke about your house for one of them.

*Gui.* Come, y'are a glorious Ruffin, and runne  
 proud

Of the Kings headlong graces ; hold your breath,  
 Or by that poison'd vapour not the King  
 Shall backe your murtherous valour against me.

*Buff.* I would the King would make his prefence  
 free

But for one bout betwixt vs :<sup>37</sup> By the reuerence

---

36 oppressed vertue. 1607.

37 But for one charge betwixt vs. 1607.

Due to the sacred space twixt kings and subiects,  
Heere would I make thee cast that popular purple,  
In which thy proud soule fits and braues thy foueraigne.

*Monf.* Peace, peace, I pray thee peace.

*Buff.* Let him peace first that made the first warre.

*Monf.* Hee's the better man.

*Buff.* And therefore may doe worst?

*Monf.* He has more titles.

*Buff.* So *Hydra* had more heads.

*Monf.* Hee's greater knowne.

*Buff.* His greatnesse is the peoples, mine's mine  
owne.

*Monf.* Hee's noblie borne.

*Buff.* He is not, I am noble.

And nobleffe in his blood hath no gradation,  
But in his merit.

*Gui.* Th'art not nobly borne,  
But bastard to the Cardinall of Ambois.

*Buff.* Thou liest proud Guiferd; let me flie (my  
Lord.)

*Henr.* Not in my face; (my Eagle) violence flies  
The Sanctuaries of a Princes eies.

*Buff.* Still shall we chide? and some vpon this bit?  
Is the Guife only great in faction?  
Stands he not by himselfe? Prooues he th' Opinion  
That mens foules are without them? Be a Duke,  
And lead me to the field.

*Guif.* Come, follow me.

*Henr.* Stay them, stay *D'Ambois*; Cofen Guife, I  
wonder

Your honour'd disposition brookes so ill<sup>38</sup>  
A man so good, that only would vphold  
Man in his natiue nobleffe, from whose fall  
All our diffentions rise; that in himselfe  
(Without the outward patches of our frailtie,  
Riches and honour) knowes he comprehends

---

31 Your equall disposition brookes so ill. 1607.

Worth with the greatest : Kings had neuer borne  
 Such boundlesse Empire ouer other men,  
 Had all maintain'd the spirit and state of *D'Ambois* ;  
 Nor had the full impartiall hand of nature  
 That all things gaue in her originall,  
 Without these definite terms of Mine and Thine,  
 Beene turn'd vniustly to the hand of Fortune :  
 Had all preferu'd her in her prime, like *D'Ambois* ;  
 No enuie, no disfunction had dissolu'd,  
 Or pluck'd one sticke out of the golden fagot,  
 In which the world of *Saturne* bound our lifes,<sup>39</sup>  
 Had all beene held together with the nerues,  
 The genius and th' ingenuous soule of *D'Ambois*.  
 Let my hand therefore be the Hermean rodde  
 To part and reconcile, and so conferue you,  
 As my combin'd embracers and supporters.

*Buff.* Tis our Kings motion, and wee shall not  
 feeme  
 (To worst eies) womanish, though wee change thus  
 soone  
 Neuer so great grudge for his greater pleasure.

*Gui.* I feale to that, and so the manly freedome  
 That you so much professe, heereafter prooue not  
 A bold and glorious licence to depraue :  
 To mee his hand shall hold the Hermean vertue<sup>40</sup>  
 His grace affects, in which submissiue signe  
 On this his sacred right hand, I lay mine.

*Buff.* Tis well my Lord, and so your worthie great-  
 nesse  
 Decline not to the greater infolence,<sup>41</sup>  
 Nor make you thinke it a Prerogatiue,  
 To racke mens freedomes with the ruder wrongs ;

39 Or pluck'd out one sticke of the golden fagot,  
 In which the world of Saturne was compris'd. 1607.

40 To mee his hand shall prooue the Hermean rodde. 1607.

41 Engender not the greater infolence. 1607.

My hand (stucke full of lawrell, in true signe  
Tis wholly dedicate to righteous peace)  
In all submission kiffeth th'other side.

*Hen.* Thankes to ye both : and kindly I inuite ye  
Both to a banquet where weele sacrifice  
Full cups to confirmation of yours loues ;  
At which (faire Ladies) I entreat your pefence.  
And hope you Madam will take one carowfe  
For reconcilment of your Lord and feruant.

*Duches.* If I should faile my Lord, some other  
Lady  
Would be found there to doe that for my feruant.

*Monf.* Any of these here ?

*Duches.* Nay, I know not that.

*D'Amb.* Think your thoughts, like my Miftresse  
(honour'd Lady)

*Tamy.* I think not on you Sir, y'are one I know  
not.

*D'Amb.* Cry you mercy Madam,

*Montf.* Oh Sir, has she met you ?

*Exeunt Henry, D'Amb. Ladies.*

*Monf.* What had my bounty drunke when it raif'd  
him ?

*Gui.* Y'ave stucke vs vp a very worthy flag,<sup>42</sup>  
That takes more winde than we with all our failes.

*Monf.* O fo he fpreads and flourifhes.

*Gui.* He must downe,  
Vpstarts should neuer perch too neere a crowne.

*Monf.* Tis true my Lord ; and as this doting  
hand,

Euen out of earth, (like *Iuno*) struck this giant,  
So *Ioues* great ordinance shalbe heere implide  
To strike him vnder th' *Aetna* of his pride :  
To which worke lend your hands and let vs cast

---

42 a very proper flag. 1607.

Where we may fet snares for his ranging greatnes :<sup>43</sup>  
 I thinke it best, amongst our greatest women :  
 For there is no such trap to catch an vpstart  
 As a loose downfall ; for you know their fals<sup>44</sup>  
 Are th'ends of all mens rising : if great men  
 And wise ; make scapes to please aduantage  
 Tis with a woman : women that woorst may  
 Still hold mens candles : they direct and know  
 All things amisse in all men ; and their women  
 All things amisse in them : through whose charmd  
 mouthes

We may see all the close scapes of the Court :  
 When the most royall beast of chace the Hart  
 (Being old and cunning in his layres and haunts)  
 Can neuer be discovered to the bow  
 The peece or hound : yet where (behind some Queich)  
 He breaks his gall and rutteth with his hinde,<sup>45</sup>  
 The place is markt, and by his Venery  
 He still is taken. Shall we then attempt  
 The chiefest meane to that discovery heere,  
 And court our greatest Ladies chiefest women,<sup>46</sup>  
 With shews of loue, and liberall promises ?  
 Tis but our breath. If something giuen in hand,  
 Sharpen their hopes of more ; twilbe well venterd.

*Gui.* No doubt of that : and tis the cunningst  
 point<sup>47</sup>  
 Of our deuif'd inuestigation.

43 gadding greatnes. 1607.

44 and indeed their fals. 1607.

45 When the most royall beast of chace (being old  
 And cunning in his choice of layres and haunts)  
 Can neuer be discovered to the bow  
 The peece or hound : yet where his custome is  
 To beat his vault, and he ruts with his hinde. 1607.

46 greatest women. 1607.

47 an excellent point. 1607.



*Monf.* I have broken  
The yee to it already with the woman  
Of your chaste Lady, and conceive good hope.  
I shall wade thorow to some wished shore  
At our next meeting.

*Montf.* Nay, there's small hope there.

*Guise.* Take say of her my Lord, she comes most  
fitly.

*Monf.* Starting back ?<sup>48</sup>

*Enter Charlot, Anable, Pero.*

*Gui.* Y'are engag'd indeed.

*An.* Nay pray my Lord forbear.

*Mont.* What skittish, servant ?

*An.* No my Lord I am not so fit for your service :

*Char.* Pray pardon me now my Lord ? my Lady  
expects me.

*Gui.* He satisfies her expectation, as far as an vnkle  
may.

*Monf.* Well said : a spirit of Courtship of all hands:  
Now mine owne *Pero* : hast thou remembered mee  
For the discovery I entreated thee to make of  
Thy Mistress ? speak boldly, and be sure of all things  
I have sworn to thee.

*Pero.* Building on that assurance (my Lord) I may  
speak : and much the rather, because my Lady hath  
not trusted me with that I can tell you ; for now I  
cannot be said to betray her.

*Monf.* That's all one, so we reach our objects  
forth I beseech thee.

---

48 This passage reads thus in the edition of 1607 :—

*Monf.* I have already broke the ice, my Lord,  
With the most trusted woman of your Countesse,  
And hope I shall wade through to our discovery,

*Mont.* Take say of her my Lord, she comes most fitly  
And we will to the other.



*Per.* To tell you truth, my Lord, I haue made a strange discouery.

*Monf.* Excellent Pero thou reuiu'ft me : may I fincke quicke to perdition, if my tongue discouer it.

*Per.* Tis thus then : This laft night my Lord lay foorth : and I watching my Ladies fitting vp, stole vp at midnight from my pallat : and (hauing before made a hole both through the wall and arras to her inmoft chamber) I faw *D'Ambois* and hertelfe reading a letter.

*Monf.* *D'Ambois* ?

*Per.* Euen he my Lord.

*Monf.* Dost thou not dreame wench ?

*Per.* I sweare he is the man.

*Monf.* The diuell he is, and thy Lady his dam : Why this was the happiest shot ? that ever flew the iust plague of hypocrisie leuel'd it, Oh the infinite regions betwixt a womans tongue and her heart : is this our Goddesse of chastity ? I thought I could not be so sleighted : if shee had not her fraught besides ; and therefore plotted this with her woman, never dreaming of *D'Ambois*. Deare *Pero* I will aduance thee for euer : but tell mee now : Gods pretious it transformes me with admiration : sweet *Pero*, whom should she trust with his conueiance ? Or, all the doores being made fure, how should his conueiance bee made ?

*Per.* Nay my Lord, that amazes me : I cannot by any study so much as guesse at it.

*Monf.* Well, lets fauour our apprehensions with forbearing that a little : for if my heart were not hoopt with adamant, the concept of this would haue burst it : but hearke thee.

*Whispers.*

*Char.* I sweare to your Grace, all that I can coniecture touching my Lady your Neece, is a strong affection she beares to the English Mylor.

*Gui.* All quod you? tis enough I affure you, but tell me.<sup>49</sup>

*Mont.* I pray thee resolute me: the Duke will neuer imagine that I am busie about's wife: hath *D'Ambois* any priuy accessse to her?

*An.* No, my Lord, *D'Ambois* neglects her (as she takes it) and is therefore suspitious that either your Lady, or the Lady *Beaupre* hath closely entertained him.

*Mont.* Ber lady a likely suspition, and very neere the life; if she marks it; especially of my wife.

*Monf.* Come we'll disguise all, with seeming onely to haue courted; away drie palme: sh'as a liuer as hard as a bisket: a man may goe a whole voyage with her, and get nothing but tempests from her wind-pipe.

*Gui.* Heer's one: (I thinke) has swallowed a porcupine, she casts pricks from her tongue so.

*Mont.* And heer's a peacock seemes to haue deuoured one of the Alpes, she has so swelling a spirit, and is so cold of her kindnesse.

*Char.* We are no windfals my Lord; ye must gather vs with the ladder of matrimony, or we'll hang till we be rotten.

*Monf.* Indeed that's the way to make ye right openarfes. But ahlas ye haue no portions fit for such husbands as we wish you.

*Per.* Portions my Lord, yes and such portions as your principality cannot purchase.

*Monf.* What woman? what are those portions?

*Per.* Riddle my riddle my Lord.

*Monf.* I marry wench, I think thy portion is a right riddle, a man shall neuer finde it out: but lets heare it.

---

49 This speech of Guise and the previous one of Charlotte are omitted in the edition of 1641.--*Ed.*

*Per.* You shall my Lord.

What's that, that being most rar's most cheape ?

That when you sow, you neuer reape ?

That when it growes most, most you in it ?

And still you lose it when you win it :

That when tis commonest, tis dearest,

And when tis farthest off, 'tis neereft ?

*Monf.* Is this your great portion ?

*Per.* Euen this my Lord.

*Monf.* Beleeue me I cannot riddle it.

*Per.* No my Lord, tis my chastity, which you shall neither riddle nor fiddle.

*Monf.* Your chastity ? let me begin with the end of it ; how is a womans chastitie neereft a man, when tis furthest off ?

*Per.* Why my Lord, when you cannot get it, it goes toth' heart on you ; and that I thinke comes most neere you : and I am sure it shall bee farre enough off ; and so wee leaue you to our mercies.

*Exeunt Women.*

*Monf.* Farewell riddle.

*Gui.* Farewell Medlar.

*Mont.* Farewell winter plum.

*Monf.* Now my Lords, what fruit of our inquisition ? feele you nothing budding yet ? Speake good my Lord *Mountfurry*.

*Mont.* Nothing but this : *D'Ambois* is negligent in obferniug the Duchesse, and therefore she is suspicious that your Neece or my wife closely entertaines him.

*Monf.* Your wife, my Lord ? Thinke you that possible ?

*Mont.* Alas, I know she flies him like her last houre.

*Monf.* Her last houre ? why that comes vpon her the more she flies it : Does *D'Ambois* so thinke you ?

*Mont.* Thats not worth the answering : Tis miraculous to think<sup>60</sup> with what monsters womens imagina-

tions engrosse them when they are once enamour'd,  
and what wonders they will worke for their satisfaction.  
They will make a sheepe valiant, a Lion fearefull.

*Monf.* And an Asse confident, well my Lord,  
more will come forth shortly, get you to the banquet.

*Guife.* Come my Lord, I have the blind side of one  
of them. *Exit Guife cum Mont.*

*Mounf.* O the vnfounded Sea of womens bloods,  
That when tis calmeft, is most dangerous ;  
Not any wrinkle creaming in their faces,  
When in their hearts are *Scylla* and *Charibdis*,  
Which still are hid in dark and standing foggs,<sup>51</sup>  
Where neuer day shines, nothing euer growes,  
But weeds and poisons, that no states-man knowes ;  
Nor *Cerberus* euer saw the damned nookes  
Hid with the vailes of womens vertuous lookes :  
But what a cloud of fulphur have I drawne  
Up to my bosome in this dangerous secret ?  
Which if my haft (with any spark) should light  
Ere *D'Ambois* were engag'd in some fure plot  
I were blowne up ; He would be sure, my death.  
Would I had never knowne it, for before  
I shall perfwade th' importance to *Montfurry*,  
And make him with some studied stratagem,  
Train *D'Ambois* to his wreak, his maid may tell it,  
Or I (out of my fiery thirst to play  
With the fell Tyger, up in darknesse tyed,  
And give it some light) make it quite break loose.  
I feare it afore heaven, and will not see  
*D'Ambois* againe, till I have told *Montfurry*,  
And set a snare with him to free my feares :<sup>52</sup>

---

51 Which still are hid in monster formed cloudes. 1607.

52 In lieu of the above fifteen lines the following occur in the original edition :—

I will conceale all yet, and giue more time  
To *D'Ambois* triall, now vpon my hooke ;  
He awes my throat ; else like fybillas Caue  
It should breath oracles ;

Whose there ?

*Enter Maffe.*

*Maffe.* My Lord ?

*Monf.* Goe call the Count *Montfurry*,  
And make the dores fast, I will speak with none  
Till he come to me.

*Maffe.* Well my Lord.

*Exiturus.*

*Monf.* Or else

Send you some other, and see all the dores  
Made safe your selfe I pray, hast, fie about it.

*Maffe.* You'll speak with none but with the Count  
*Montfurry.*

*Mont.* With none but hee except it be the Guife.

*Maffe.* See even by this, there's one exception  
more,

Your Grace must be more firme in the command,  
Or else shall I as weakly execute.

The Guife shall speak with you ?

*Monf.* He shall I say.

*Maffe.* And Count *Montfurry.*

*Monf.* I, and Count *Montfurry.*

*Maffe.* Your Grace must pardon me, that I am  
bold

To urge the cleare and full sence of your pleasure ;  
Which when so euer I have knowne, I hope  
Your Grace will say, I hit it to a haire.

*Monf.* You have.

*Maffe.* I hope so, or I would be glad.—

*Monf.* I pray thee get thee gone, thou art so  
tedious

In the strickt forme of all thy services,  
That I had better haue one negligent.  
You hit my pleasure well, when *D'Ambois* hit you,  
Did you not, think you ?

*Maffe.* *D'Ambois* ? why my Lord ?

*Monf.* I pray thee talk no more, but shut the  
dores.

Doe what I charge thee.



*Maffe.* I will my Lord, and yet  
I would be glad the wrong I had of *D'Ambois*——

*Monf.* Precious! then it is a Fate that plagues me  
In this man's foolery, I may be murdered  
While he stands on protection of his folly.  
Auant about thy charge.

*Maffe.* I goe my Lord.  
I had my head broke in his faithfull service.  
I had no fuit the more, nor any thanks,  
And yet my teeth must still be hit with *D'Ambois*.  
*D'Ambois* my Lord shall know.

*Monf.* The devill and *D'Ambois.* *Exit Maffe.*  
How am I tortur'd with this trusty foole?  
Never was any curious in his place  
To doe things justly, but he was an Ass: :  
We cannot finde one trusty that is witty,  
And therefore beare their disproportion.  
Grant thou great starre, and angell of my life,  
A sure lease of it but for some few dayes,  
That I may cleare my bosome of the Snake  
I cherisht there, and I will then defie  
All check to it but Natures, and her Altars  
Shall crack with vessels crown'd with ev'ry liquor  
Drawn from her highest, and most bloudy humors.  
I feare him strangely, his advanced valour  
Is like a spirit rais'd without a circle,<sup>53</sup>  
Endangering him that ignorantly rais'd him,  
And for whose fury he hath learnt no limit.

*Enter Maffe hastily.*

*Maffe.* I cannot help it, what should I do more?  
As I was gathering a fit Guard to make  
My passage to the dores, and the dores sure,

---

53

I feare him strangely,  
And may resemble his advanced valour  
Vnto a spirit, &c.—1607.



The man of bloud is enter'd.

*Monf.* Rage of death,  
If I had told the secret, and he knew it,  
Thus had I bin endanger'd :—My fweet heart !  
How now, what leap'ft thou at ?

*Enter D'Ambois.*

*D'Amb.* O royall obiect.

*Monf.* Thou dream'ft awake : Obiect in th' emptie  
aire ?

*D'Amb.* Worthie the browes of Titan, worth his  
chaire.

*Monf.* Pray thee what mean'ft thou ?

*D'Amb.* See you not a Croune  
Empale the forehead of the great King Monfieur ?

*Monf.* O fie vpon thee.

*D'Amb.* Sir, that is the Subiect  
Of all thefe your retir'd and fole discourfes.

*Monf.* Wilt thou not leaue that wrongfull fuppo-  
fition ?

*D'Amb.*<sup>54</sup> Why wrongfull ? to fuppose the doubtleffe  
right

To the fucceffion worth the thinking on.

*Monf.* Well, leave thefe jefts, how I am over-joyed  
With thy wifh'd prefence, and how fit thou com'ft,  
For of mine honour I was fending for thee.

*D'Amb.* To what end ?

*Monf.* Onely for thy company,  
Which I have ftill in thought, but that's no payment  
On thy part made with perfonall appearance.  
Thy abfence fo long fuffered oftentimes  
Put me in fome little doubt thou do'ft not loue me

---

54 The ten lines which follow were added in 1641 : in the original edition *Monsieur* at once continues :

“This ftill hath made me doubt thou doft not loue me,  
Wilt thou doe one thing for me then fyncerelie ?”

Wilt thou doe one thing therefore now sincerely ?

*D' Amb.* I anything, but killing of the King.

*Monf.* Still in that discord, and ill taken note ?  
How most unfeasonable thou playest the Cucko,  
In this thy fall of friendship ?

*D' Amb.* Then doe not doubt,  
That there is any act within my nerves,  
But killing of the King that is not yours.

*Monf.* I will not then ; to prove which by my loue  
Shewne to thy vertues, and by all fruits else  
Already sprung from that still flourishing tree,  
With whatsoever may hereafter spring,<sup>55</sup>  
I charge thee vtter (euen with all the freedome  
Both of thy noble nature and thy friendship)  
The full and plaine state of me in thy thoughts.

*D' Amb.* What, vtter plainly what I thinke of you ?

*Monf.* Plaine as truth.

*D' Amb.* Why this fwims quite against the streame  
of greatnesse :

Great men would rather heare their flatteries,  
And if they be not made fooles, are not wise.

*Monf.* I am no such great foole, and therefore  
charge thee

Euen from the roote of thy free heart, display mee.

*D' Amb.* Since you affect in such serious termes,  
If your selfe first will tell me what you thinke  
As freely and as heartily of mee,  
Ile be as open in my thoughts of you.

*Monf.* A bargaine of mine honour ; and make this,  
That prooue wee in our full disfection  
Neuer so foule, liue still the founder friends.

---

<sup>55</sup> *D' Amb.* Come, doe not doubt me and command me all things.

*Monf.* I will not then, and now by all my loue  
Shewne to thy vertues, and by all fruits else  
Alreadie sprung from that affection,  
I charge thee, &c. — 1607.

*D'Amb.* What else Sir? come pay me home, ile  
bide it bravely.<sup>56</sup>

*Monf.* I will fweare. I thinke thee then a man,  
That dares as much as a wilde horfe or Tyger ;  
As headstrong and as bloodie ; and to feede  
The rauenous wolfe of thy most Caniball valour,  
(Rather than not employ it) thou would'ft turne  
Hackster to any whore, slaue to a Iew,  
Or English vsurer, to force possessions,  
And cut mens throates of morgaged estates ;  
Or thou would'ft tire thee like a Tinkers strumpet,  
And murder market folkes, quarrell with sheepe,  
And runne as mad as *Aiax* ; serue a Butcher,  
Doe any thing but killing of the King :  
That in thy valour th'art like other naturals,  
That haue strange gifts in nature, but no soule  
Diffus'd quite through, to make them of a peece,  
But stoppe at humours, that are more absurd,  
Childish and villanous than that hackster, whore,  
Slaue, cut-throat, Tinkers bitch, compar'd before :  
And in those humours would'ft enuie, betray,  
Slander, blaspheme, change each houre a religion ;  
Doe any thing, but killing of the King ;  
That in thy valour (which is still the dunghill,  
To which hath reference all filth in thy house)<sup>57</sup>  
Th'art more ridiculous and vaine-glorious  
Than any Mountibancke ; and impudent  
Than any painted bawde ; which, not to sooth  
And glorifie thee llke a *Jupiter Hammon*,  
Thou eat'ft thy heart in vineger ; and thy gall  
Turns all thy blood to poison, which is cause  
Of that Tode-poole that stands in thy complexion ;  
And makes thee (with a cold nnd earthie moisture,  
Which is the damme of putrifaction,

---

56      come begin, and speake me simply.—1607.

57 That in that valour (which is still my dunghill,  
To which I carrie all filth in thy house). 1607.

As plague to thy damn'd pride) rot as thou liu'ft ;  
To study calumnies and treacheries ;  
To thy friends slaughters, like a Scrich-owle fmg,  
And to all mischiefs, but to kill the King.

*D'Amb.* So : Haue you faid ?

*Monf.* How thinkest thou ? Doe I flatter ?  
Speake I not like a trustie friend to thee ?

*D'Amb.* That euer any man was blest withall ;  
So heere's for mee. I thinke you are (at worst)  
No diuell, since y'are like to be no king ;  
Of which, with any friend of yours Ile lay  
This poore Stilladoe heere, gainst all the starres,  
I, and gainst all your treacheries, which are more ;  
That you did neuer good, but to doe ill ;  
But ill of all forts, free and for it selfe :  
That (like a murdering peece, making lanes in armies  
The first man of a ranke, the whole ranke falling)  
If you haue wrong'd one man, you are so farre  
From making him amends, that all his race,  
Friends and associates fall into your chace :  
That y'are for periuries the verie prince  
Of all intelligencers ; and your voice  
Is like an Easterne winde, that where it flies,  
Knits nets of Catterpillars, with which you catch  
The prime of all the fruits the kingdome yeeldes.  
That your politicall head is the curst fount  
Of all the violence, rapine, crueltie,  
Tyrannie & Atheisme flowing through the realme.  
That y'auē a tongue so scandalous, twill cut  
A perfect Crystall ; and a breath that will  
Kill to that wall a spider ; you will iest  
With God, and your foule to the diuell tender  
For lust ; kisse horror, and with death engender.  
That your foule bodie is a Lernean fenne  
Of all the maladies breeding in all men.  
That you are vtterlie without a foule :  
And (for your life) the thred of that was spunne,  
When *Clotho* slept, and let her breathing rocke  
Fall in the durt ; and *Lachesis* still drawes it,

Dipping her twisting fingers in a boule  
 Defil'd, and crou'd with vertues forced foule.  
 And lastly (which I must for Gratitude  
 Euer remember) That of all my height  
 And dearest life, you are the onlie spring,  
 Only in royall hope to kill the king.

*Monf.* Why now I see thou lou'ft mee, come to  
 the banquet.

*Exeunt.*

*Finis Actus tertij.*

Actus Quarti Scena Prima.

*Henry, Monsieur with a Letter, Guise, Montfurry,  
 Buffy, Elynor, Tamyra, Beaupre, Pero, Charlotte,  
 Anable, Pyrha, with foure Pages.*

*Henr.* **L**adies, ye haue not done our banquet  
 right,  
 Nor lookt vpon it with those cheerefull raies  
 That lately turnd your breaths to fouds of gold ;  
 Your looks, me thinks, are not drawne out with  
 thoughts,  
 So cleere and free as heeretofore, but foule  
 As if the thicke complexions of men  
 Gouvernd within them.

*Buff.* Tis not like my Lord  
 That men in women rule ; but contrary,  
 For as the Moone (of all things God created)



Not only is the most appropriate image  
Or glasse to shew them how they wax and wane,  
But in her height and motion, likewise beares  
Imperiall influences that command  
In all their powers, and make them wax and wane ;  
So women, that (of all things made of nothing)  
Are the most perfect Idols of the Moone<sup>58</sup>  
(Or still-vnweand sweet Moon-calues with white faces)  
Not only are paternes of change to men :  
But as the tender Moon-shine of their beauties  
Cleeres, or is cloudy, make men glad or fad,  
So then they rule in men, not men in them.

*Monf.* But heere the Moones are chang'd (as the  
King notes)

And either men rule in them, or some power  
Beyond their voluntary faculty :<sup>59</sup>  
For nothing can recouer their lost faces.

*Montfur.* None can be alwaies one : our griefes  
and ioies  
Hold feuerall scepters in vs, and haue times  
For their divided empires :<sup>60</sup> which grieffe now, in them  
Doth proue as proper to his diadem.

*D'Amb.* And grief's a naturall sicknesse of the  
bloud,  
That time to part asks, as his comming had ;  
Onely sleight fooles grieu'd, suddently are glad ;  
A man may say t'a dead man, be reuiu'd,  
As well as to one sorrowfull, be not grieu'd.  
And therefore (Princely mistresse) in all warres  
Against these base foes that insult on weaknesse,  
And still fight houf'd, behinde the shielde of Nature,  
Of priuledge law,<sup>61</sup> treachery, or beastly need,

---

58 Are the most perfect images of the Moone. 1607.

59 Beyond their voluntary motions. 1607.

60 For their predominance. 1607.

61 Of tyrannous law. 1607.



Your seruant cannot helpe ; authority heere  
Goes with corruption ; something like some States,  
That back woorst men : valure to them must creepe  
That (to themfelues left) would feare him asleepe.

*Duches.* Ye all take that for granted, that doth rest  
Yet to be prou'd ; we all are as we were  
As merry, and as free in thought as euer.

*Gui.* And why then can ye not disclose your  
thoughts ?

*Tamy.* Me thinks the man hath answerd for vs  
well.

*Monf.* The man ? why Madam d'ee not know his  
name ?

*Tamy.* Man is a name of honour for a King :  
Additions take away from each chiefe thing :  
The Schoole of Modesty, not to learne, learns Dames:  
They fit in high formes there, that know mens names.

*Monf.* Harke sweet heart, hee's a bar fet to your  
valour :

It cannot enter heere : no, not to notice  
Of what your name is ; your great Eagles beake  
(Should you flie at her) had as good encounter  
An Albion cliffe, as her more craggy liuer.

*Buc.* Ile not attempt her Sir ; her fight and name  
(By which I only know her) doth deter me.

*Henr.* So do they all men else.

*Monf.* You would say so  
If you knew all.

*Tamy.* Knew all my Lord ? what meane you ?

*Monf.* All that I know Madam.

*Tamy.* That you know ? speake it.

*Monf.* No tis enough I feele it.

*Henr.* But me thinkes

Her Courtship is more pure than heeretofore :  
True Courtiers should be modest, but not nice :  
Bold, but not impudent : pleasure loue, not vice.

*Monf.* Sweet heart : come hither, what if one  
should make  
Horns at *Mountfurry* ? would it not strike him ieaalous

Through all the proofes of his chaste Ladies vertues ?

*D'Amb.* If he be wife, not.

*Monf.* What? not if I should name the Gardener,  
That I would have him think hath grafted him ?

*D'Amb.* So the large licence that your greatnesse  
ufes

To jest at all men, may be taught indeed  
To make a difference of the grounds you play on,  
Both in the men you scandall, and the matter.

*Monf.* As how? as how?

*D'Amb.* Perhaps led with a traine, where you may  
have

Your nose made lesse, and slit, your eyes thrust out.<sup>62</sup>

*Monf.* Peace, peace, I pray thee peace.

Who dares doe that? the brother of his King?

*Buc.* Were your King brother in you: all your  
powers

(Stretcht in the armes of great men and their bawds)  
Set clofe downe by you; all your stormie lawes  
Spouted with Lawyers mouths; and gushing bloud,  
Like to so many Torrents: all your glories:  
(Making you terrible, like enchanted flames  
Fed with bare cockescombes: and with crooked  
hammes)

All your prerogatiues, your shames and tortures:  
All daring heauen, and opening hell about you:  
Were I the man, ye wrong'd so and prouok'd:  
(Though ne're so much beneath you) like a box tree  
I would (out of the roughnesse of my root)  
Ramme hardnesse, in my lownesse, and like death  
Mounted on earthquakes, I would trot through all

---

62 *Monf.* Not if I nam'd the man

With whom I would make him suspitious

His wife hath armd his forehead?

*Buc.* So, you might

Haue your great nose made lesse indeed: and slit:

Your eies thrust out. 1607.

Honors and horrors : thorow fowle and faire,  
And from your whole strength tosse you into the aire.

*Monf.* Goe, th'art a diuell ; such another spirit  
Could not be stild, from all th'Armenian dragons.  
O my Loues glory : heire to all I haue :  
That's all I can say, and that all I sweare.  
If thou outliue me, as I know thou must,  
Or else hath nature no proportiond end  
To her great labors : she hath breath'd a minde  
Into thy entrailes, of desert to swell <sup>63</sup>  
Into another great *Augustus Cæsar* :  
Organes, and faculties fitted to her greatnesse :  
And should that perish like a common spirit,  
Nature's a Courtier and regards no merit.

*Henr.* Heer's nought but whispering with vs : like  
a calme  
Before a tempest, when the silent aire  
Laies her soft eare close to the earth to hearken  
For that she feares steales on to ravish her ;<sup>64</sup>  
Some fate doth ioine our eares to heare it comming.  
Come, my braue eagle, let's to Couert flie :  
I see Almighty Æther in the smoake  
Of all his cloudes descending : and the skie  
Hid in the dimme ostents of Tragedy.

*Exit Henr. with D'Amb. & Ladies.*

*Guif.* Now stirre the humour, and begin the  
brawle.

*Mont.* The King and *D'Ambois* now are growen  
all one.

*Monf.* Nay, they are two my Lord.

*Mont.* How's that ?

*Monf.* No more.

*Mont.* I must haue more my Lord.

63 she hath breath'd a spirit  
Into thy entrailes, of effect to swell. 1607.

64 For that she feares is comming to afflict her. 1607.

*Monf.* What more than two ?

*Mont.* How monstrous is this ?

*Monf.* Why ?

*Mont.* You make me Horns.

*Monf.* Not I, it is a worke, without my power,  
Married mens ensignes are not made with fingers :  
Of diuine Fabrique they are, Not mens hands ;  
Your wife, you know, is a meere *Cynthia*,  
And she must fashion hornes out of her Nature.

*Mont.* But doth she ? dare you charge her ? speak  
falsely Prince.

*Monf.* I must not speake my Lord : but if yow'le  
vse

The learning of a nobleman, and read  
Heer's something to those points : soft you must pawne  
Your honour hauing read it to returne it.

*Mont.* Not I, I pawne mine Honour, for a paper ?

*Monf.* You must not buie it vnder.

*Exeunt Guise and Monsieur.*

*Mont.* Keepe it then,  
And keepe fire in your bosome.

*Tam.* What saies he ?

*Mont.* You must make good the rest.

*Tam.* How fares my Lord ?

Takes my Loue any thing to heart he saies ?

*Mont.* Come y'are a.

*Tam.* What my Lord.

*Mont.* The plague of *Herod*  
Feast in his rotten entrailles.

*Tam.* Will you wreake  
Your angers iust cause giuen by him, on mee ?

*Mont.* By him ?

*Tamy.* By him my Lord, I haue admir'd  
You could all this time be at concord with him,  
That still hath plaid such discords on your honour.

*Mont.* Perhaps tis with some proud string of my  
wiues.

*Tam.* How's that, my Lord ?

*Mont.* Your tongue will still admire,  
Till my head be the miracle of the world.

*Tam.* O woe is mee.

*She seemes to found.*

*Pero.* What does your Lordship meane ?

Madam, be comforted ; my Lord but tries you.

Madam ? Helpe good my Lord, are you not mou'd ?

Doe your fet lookes print in your words, your  
thoughts ?

Sweet Lord, cleare up those eyes, unbend that masking  
forehead,

Whence is it you rush upon her with these Irish warres

More full of sound then hurt ? but it is enough,<sup>65</sup>

You haue shot home, your words are in her heart ;

She has not liu'd to beare a triall now.

*Mont.* Looke vp my loue, and by this kisse receiue

My soule amongst thy spirits for supplie

To thine, chac'd with my furie.

*Tam.* O my Lord,

I haue too long liu'd to heare this from you.

*Mont.* Twas from my troubled blood, and not from  
mee :

I know not how I fare ; a sudder night

Flowes through my entrailles, and a headlong Chaos

Murmurs within mee, which I must digest ;

And not drowne her in my confusions,

That was my liues ioy, being best inform'd :

Sweet, you must needs forgiue me, that my loue

(Like to a fire disdaining his suppression)

Rag'd being discourag'd ; my whole heart is wounded

When any least thought in you is but touch't,

And shall be till I know your former merits :

Your name and memorie altogether craue

In iust obliuion their eternall graue ;

65 Sweete Lord, cleere vp those eies, for shame of Noblesse :  
Merciless creature ; but it is enough. 1607.



And then you must heare from me, ther's no meane  
In any passion I shall feele for you :  
Loue is a rasor cleansing being well vs'd,  
But fetcheth blood still being the least abus'd :  
To tell you briefly all ; The man that left mee  
When you appear'd, did turne me worse than woman,  
And stab'd me to the heart thus, with his fingers.

*Tamy.* O happie woman ! Comes my staine from  
him ?

It is my beautie, and that innocence prooues,  
That slew *Chymæra*, rescu'd *Peleus*  
From all the sauage beasts in *Peleon* ;  
And rais'd the chaste Athenian prince from Hell :  
All suffering with me ; they for womens lusts,  
I for a mans ; that the Egean stable  
Of his foule sinne would emptie in my lappe ;  
How his guilt shunn'd me ? sacred innocence  
That where thou fear'ft, are dreadfull ; and his face  
Turn'd in flight from thee, that had thee in chace :  
Come, bring me to him : I will tell the serpent  
Euen to his venom'd teeth (from whose curst seed<sup>66</sup>  
A pitch field starts vp twixt my Lord and mee)  
That his throat lies, and he shall curse his fingers,  
For being so govern'd by his filthie foule.

*Mont.* I know not, if himselfe will vaunt t'haue  
beene

The princely author of the flauish sinne,  
Or any other ; he would haue resolu'd mee,  
Had you not come ; not by his word, but writing,  
Would I haue sworne to giue it him againe,  
And pawn'd mine honour to him for a paper.

*Tam.* See how he flies me still : Tis a foule heart  
That feares his owne hand : Good my Lord make  
haste

To see the dangerous paper : Papers hold  
Oft-times the formes, and copies of our soules,  
And (though the world despise them) are the prizes

---

66 Euen to his teeth (whence, in mine honors foile. 1607.



Of all our honors, make your honour then  
 A hostage for it, and with it conferre<sup>67</sup>  
 My neereſt woman heere, in all ſhe knowes ;  
 Who (if the funne or *Cerberus* could haue ſeene  
 Anie ſtaine in mee) might as much as they :  
 And *Pero*, heere I charge thee by my loue,  
 And all proofes of it, (which I might call bounties)  
 By all that thou haſt ſeene ſeeme good in mee,  
 And all the ill which thou ſhouldſt ſpit from thee,  
 By pity of the wound, this touch hath giuen mee,  
 Not as thy Miſtreſſe now, but a poore woman  
 (To death giuen ouer :) rid me of my paines,  
 Powre on thy powder: cleere thy breafte of me :  
 My Lord is only heere : heere ſpeake thy worſt,  
 Thy beſt will doe me miſchiefe ; If thou ſpar'ſt mee,  
 Neuer ſhine good thought on thy memorie :  
 Reſolue my Lord, and leaue me deſperate.

*Pero.* My Lord ? My Lord hath plaid a prodigals  
 part,

To breake his Stocke for nothing ; and an inſolent,  
 To cut a Gordian when he could not looſe it :  
 What violence is this, to put true fire  
 To a falſe traine ? To blow vp long crown'd peace  
 With ſudden outrage ? and beleeuue a man  
 Sworne to the ſhame of women, gainſt a woman,  
 Borne to their honours : but I will to him.

*Tam.* No, I will write (for I ſhall neuer more  
 Meet with the fugitiue) where I will deſie him,  
 Were he ten times the brother of my king.  
 To him my Lord, and ile to curſing him. *Exeunt.*

*Enter D'Ambois and Frier.*

*D'Amb.* I am ſuſpitiouſ my moſt honour'd Father,  
 By ſome of Monſieurs cunning paſſages,

67

Be not nice

For any trifle, ieweld with your honour,  
 To pawne your honor ; and with it conferre, &c. 1607.

That his still ranging and contentious nofethrils,  
To scent the haunts of mischief, have fo us'd  
The vicious vertue of his bufie fence,  
That he trails hotly of him, and will rowze him,  
Driving him all enrag'd, and foming on us,  
And therefore have entreated your deepe skill,  
In the command of good aeriall spirits,  
To affume these Magick rites, and call up one  
To know if any haue reveal'd unto him  
Any thing touching my deare Love and me.

*Frier.* Good sonne you have amaz'd me but to  
make

The least doubt of it, it concernes so neerely  
The faith and reverence of my name and order.  
Yet will I justifie upon my soule  
All I have done, if any spirit i' th earth or aire  
Can give you the resolve, doe not despaire.

*Musick : Tamira enters with Pero and her maid,  
bearing a letter.*

*Tam.* Away, deliuer it : O may my lines  
*Exit Pero.*

(Fild with the poison of a womans hate  
When he shall open them) shrinke vp his eies  
With torturous darkeness, such as stands in hell,  
Stucke full of inward horrors, neuer lighted ;  
With which are all things to be fear'd, affrighted ;  
Father ?

*Ascendit Buffy with Comolet.*

*D'Amb.* How is it with my honour'd mistresse ?

*Tam.* O seruant help, and saue me from the gripes  
Of shame and infamie. Our love is knowne,  
Your Monsieur hath a paper where is writ  
Some secreet tokens that decipher it.

*D'Amb.* What cold dull Northern brain, what  
foole but he<sup>68</sup>

Durst take into his Epimethean breast  
A box of such plagues as the danger yeeldes,  
Incurd in this discoverie? He had better  
Ventur'd his breast in the consuming reach  
Of the hot furfets cast out of the cloudes,  
Or stode the bullets that (to wreake the skie)  
The Cyclops ramme in *Ioues* artillerie.

*Frier.* Wee foone will take the darkeneffe from his  
face

That did that deede of darkeneffe; wee will know  
What now the Monsieur and your husband doe;  
What is contain'd within the secreet paper  
Offerd by Monsieur, and your loues euent:  
To which ends (honour'd daughter) at your motion,  
I haue put on these exorcising Rites,  
And, by my power of learned holineffe  
Vouchfast me from aboue, I will command  
Our resolution of a raised spirit.

*Tamy.* Good father raise him in some beauteous  
forme,

That with least terror I may brooke his fight.

*Com.* Stand fure together then, what ere ye see,  
And stirre not, as ye tender all our liues.

*He puts on his robes.*

*Occidentalium legionum spiritualium imperator (magnus ille Behemoth) veni, veni, comitatus cum Asaroth locotenente inuictō. Adiuro te per stygis inscrutabilia arcana, per ipsos irremeabiles anfractus auerni: adesto & Behemoth, tu cui peruia sunt Magnatum scrinia; veni, per Noctis & tenebrarum abdita profundissima; per labentia sydera; per ipsos motus horarum furtiuos, Hecatesq; altum silentium: Appare in forma spiritali, lucente splendida & amabili. Thunder. Ascendit.*

---

68 *D'Amb.* What insensate stocke,  
Or rude inanimate vapour without fashion,  
Durst &c. 1607.

*Beh.* What would the holy Frier ?

*Frier.* I would see  
What now the Monsieur and *Mountsurrie* doe ;  
And see the secret paper that the Monsieur  
Offer'd to Count *Montfurry*, longing much  
To know on what euent the secret loues  
Of these two honor'd persons shall arriue.

*Beh.* Why calledst thou me to this accursed light ?  
To these light purposes ? I am Emperor  
Of that inscrutable darkenesse, where are hid  
All deepest truths, and secrets neuer seene,  
All which I know, and command Legions  
Of knowing spirits that can doe more than these.  
Any of this my guard that circle mee  
In these blew fires, and out of whose dim fumes  
Vast murmurs vse to breake, and from their foundes  
Articulat voices ; can doe ten parts more  
Than open such sleight truths, as you require.

*Frier.* From the last nights black depth, I cald vp  
one  
Of the inferior ablest ministers,  
And he could not resolue me ; send one then  
Out of thine owne command, to fetch the paper  
That Monsieur hath to shew to Count *Montfurry*.

*Beh.* I will : *Cartophylax* : thou that properly  
Hast in thy power all papers so inscribde :  
Glide through all barres to it, and fetch that paper.

*Car.* I will. *a torch remoues.*

*Frier.* Till he returnes (great prince of darknesse)  
Tell me, if Monsieur and the Count *Montfurry*  
Are yet encounterd.

*Beh.* Both them and the Guife  
Are now together.

*Com.* Shew vs all their persons,  
And represent the place, with all their actions.

*Beh.* The spirit will strait returne : and then Ile  
shew thee :  
See he is come ; why broughtst thou not the paper ?

*Cart.* He hath preuented me, and got a spirit  
Raif'd by another, great in our command  
To take the guard of it before I came.

*Beh.* This is your slacknesse, not t'inuoke our  
powers  
When first your acts fet foorth to their effects ;  
Yet shall you see it, and themselues : behold  
They come heere & the Earle now holds the paper.

*Enter Monf. Gui. Mont. with a paper.*

*D'Amb.* May we not heare them ?

*Monf.* No, be still and see.

*D'Amb.* I will go fetch the paper.

*Frier.* Do not stir :

Ther's too much distance and too many lockes  
Twixt you & them : how neere so e're they seeme)  
For any man to interrupt their secrets.

*Tam.* O honored spirit : flie into the fancie  
Of my offended Lord : and do not let him  
Beleeue what there the wicked man hath written.

*Pre.* Perswasion hath already enterd him  
Beyond reflection ; peace till their departure.

*Monf.* There is a glasse of inke where you  
may see  
How to make ready black fac'd Tragedy :  
You now discern, I hope through all her paintings,  
Her gasping wrinkles, and fames sepulchres.

*Gui.* Thinke you he faines my Lord ? what hold  
you now ?

Doe we maligne your wife : or honour you ?

*Monf.* What stricken dumbe ? nay fie, Lord be not  
danted :

Your case is common : were it ne're so rare  
Beare it as rarely : now to laugh were manly :  
A woorthy man should imitate the weather  
That sings in tempests : and being cleere is silent.

*Gui.* Goe home my Lord, and force your wife to  
write



Such louing lines to *D'Ambois* as she vſde  
When ſhe deſir'd his preſence.

*Monſ.* Doe my Lord,  
And make her name her conceald meſſenger :  
That cloſe and moſt inennerable Pander  
That paſſeth all our ſtudies to exquire :  
By whom conuay the letter to her loue :  
And ſo you ſhall be ſure to haue him come  
Within the thirſty reach of your reuenge ;  
Before which, lodge an ambuſh in her chamber  
Behind the arras of your ſtoutest men  
All cloſe and ſoundly armd : and let them ſhare  
A ſpirit amongſt them, that would ſerue a thouſand.

*Enter Pero with a Letter.*

*Gui.* Yet ſtay a little : ſee ſhe ſends for you.

*Monſ.* Poore, louing lady, ſhe'le make all good yet,  
Thinke you not ſo my Lord ?

*Exit Mont. and ſtabs Pero.*

*Gui.* Ahlas poore ſoule.

*Monſ.* That was cruelly done y'faith.

*Per.* T'was nobly done.

And I forgiue his Lordſhip from my ſoule.

*Monſ.* Then much good doo't thee *Pero* : haſt a  
letter ?

*Per.* I hope it rather be a bitter volume  
Of worthy curſes for your periury.

*Gui.* To you my Lord.

*Monſ.* To me ? now out vpon her.

*Gui.* Let me ſee my Lord.

*Monſ.* You ſhall preſently : how fares my *Pero* ?

*Enter ſervant.*

Who's there ? take in this maid, ſh'as caught a clap :

And fetch my ſurgeon to her ; come my Lord,

We'l now peruſe our letter. *Exeunt Monſ. Guiſe.*

*Per.* Furies riſe *Lead her out.*

Out of the blacke lines, and torment his ſoule.



*Tam.* Hath my Lord slaine my woman ?

*Beh.* No, she liues.

*Com.* What shall become of vs ?

*Beh.* All I can fay

Being cald thus late, is briefe, and darkly this :  
If *D'Ambois* mistresse, stay not her white hand  
In his forst blood he shall remaine vntoucht :  
So father, shall your selfe, but by your selfe :  
To make this Augurie plainer : when the voice  
Of *D'Ambois* shall inuoke me I will rise  
Shining in greater light : and shew him all  
That will betide ye all ; meane time be wise,  
And curb his valour, with your policies<sup>69</sup>

*Descendit cum suis.*

*Buc.* Will he appeare to me, when I inuoke him ?

*Frier.* He will : be sure.

*Buff.* It must be shortly then :

For his darke words haue tied my thoughts on knots  
Till he diffolue, and free them.

*Tam.* In meane time

Deare seruant, till your powerfull voice reuoke him,  
Be sure to vse the policy he aduif'd :  
Lest fury in your too quicke knowledge taken  
Of our abuse, and your defence of me  
Accuse me more than any enemy :  
And Father, you must on my Lord impose  
Your holiest charges, and the churches power  
To temper his hot spirit and disperse  
The cruelty and the blood, I know his hand  
Will showre vpon our heads, if you put not  
Your finger to the storme, and hold it vp,  
As my deare seruant heere must do with Monsieur.

*Buf.* Ile sooth his plots : and strow my hate with  
smiles

Till all at once the close mines of my heart  
Rise at full date, and rush into his blood :

---

69 And let him curb his rage, with policy. 1607.

Ile bind his arme in filke, and rub his flesh,  
To make the vaine swell, that his foule may gush  
Into some kennell, where it longs to lie,  
And policy shalbe flanckt with policy.  
Yet shall the feeling center where wee meet  
Grone with the wait of my approaching feet :  
Ile make th'inspired threshals of his Court  
Sweat with the weather of my horrid steps  
Before I enter : yet will I appeare  
Like calme security, before a ruine ;  
A politician, must like lightening melt  
The very marrow, and not taint the skin :  
His waies must not be seene : the superficies  
Of the greene center must not taste his feet :  
When hell is plowd vp with his wounding tractes :  
And all his haruest reap't by hellish factes.     *Exeunt.*

*Finis Actus Quarti.*

### Actus Quinti Scena Prima

*Montfurry bare, vnbract't, pulling Tamyra in by the haire, Frier. One bearing light, a standish and paper, which jets a Table.*

*Tam.*     O Help me Father.  
                    *Frier.* Impious Earle forbear.  
Take violent hand from her, or by mine order  
The King shall force thee.

*Montf.* Tis not violent ; come you not willingly ?

*Tamy.* Yes good my Lord.

*Frier.* My Lord remember that your foule must  
seeke

Her peace, as well as your reuengefull bloud :  
You euer, to this houre haue prou'd your selfe  
A noble, zealous, and obedient sonne,  
T'our holy mother : be not an apostate :  
Your wiues offence serues not, (were it the woorst  
You can imagine, without greater proofes)

To feuer your eternall bonds, and harts ;  
 Much lesse to touch her with a bloody hand :  
 Nor is it manly (much lesse husbandly)  
 To expiate any frailty in your wife,  
 With churlish strokes, or beastly ods of strength :  
 The stony birth of clouds, will touch no lawrell :  
 Nor any sleeper ; your wife is your lawrell :  
 And sweetest sleeper ; do not touch her then  
 Be not more rude than the wild seed of vapor,  
 To her that is more gentle than that rude ;  
 In whom kind nature sufferd one offence  
 But to set of, her other excellence.

*Mont.* Good father leaue vs : interrupt to more  
 The course I must run for mine honour sake.  
 Relie on my loue to her, which her fault  
 Cannot extinguish ; will she but disclose  
 Who was the secret minister of her loue,<sup>70</sup>  
 And through what maze he feru'd it, we are friends.

*Frier.* It is a damn'd worke to pursue those secrets,  
 That would ope more sinne, and prooue springs of  
 slaughter ;  
 Nor is't a path for Christian feete to tread ;<sup>71</sup>  
 But out of all way to the health of soules,  
 A sinne impossible to be forgiuen :  
 Which he that dares commit ;

*Mont.* Good father cease : your terrors  
 Tempt not a man distracted ; I am apt  
 To outrages that I shall euer rue :  
 I will not passe the verge that boundes a Christian,  
 Nor breake the limits of a man nor husband.

*Frier.* Then God inspire you both with thoughts  
 and deedes  
 Worthie his high respect, and your owne soules.

*Tamy.* Father. *Frier.* I warrant thee my dearest  
 daughter

<sup>70</sup> hatefull minister. 1607.

<sup>71</sup> for Christian feete to touch. 1607.

He will not touch thee, think'ft thou him a Pagan ;  
His honor and his foule lies for thy safety. *Exit.*

*Mont.* Who fhall remooue the mountain from my  
brest  
Stand the opening furnace of my thoughts,<sup>72</sup>  
And fet fit outcries for a foule in hell ?

*Mont. turnes a key.*

For now it nothing fits my woes to speake,  
But thunder, or to take into my throat  
The trumpe of Heauen ; with whose determinate blafts  
The windes shall burft, and the devouring seas  
Be drunke vp in his foundes ; that my hot woes  
(Vented enough) I might conuert to vapour,  
Ascending from my infamie vnfeene ;  
Shorten the world, preuenting the laft breath  
That kills the liuing, and regenerates death.

*Tamy.* My Lord, my fault (as you may cenfure it  
With too ftrong arguments) is paff your pardon :  
But how the circumftances may excufe mee  
Heaven knowes, and your more temperate minde  
heereafter

May let my penitent miferies make you know.

*Mont.* Heereafter ? Tis a fuppos'd infinite,  
That from this point will rife eternally :  
Fame growes in going ; in the fcapes of vertue  
Excufes damne her : They be fires in Cities  
Enrag'd with thofe windes that leffe lights extinguish  
Come Syren, fing, and dafh againft my rockes  
Thy ruffin Gallie, rig'd with quench for luft :<sup>73</sup>  
Sing, and put all the nets into thy voice,  
With which thou drew'ft into thy flumpets lappe  
The fpawne of *Venus* ; and in which ye danc'd ;

---

72 *Mont.* Who fhall remooue the mountaine from my  
heart,

Ope the feuentimes-heat furnace of my thoughts. 1607.

73 Thy ruffin Gallie, laden for thy luft. 1607.

That, in thy laps fleede, I may digge his toombe,  
 And quit his manhoode with a womans fleight,  
 Who neuer is deceiu'd in her deceit.  
 Sing, (that is, write) and then take from mine eies  
 The mists that hide the most inscrutable Pandar  
 That euer lapt vp an adulterous vomit :  
 That I may see the diuell, and furuiue  
 To be a diuell, and then learne to wiue :  
 That I may hang him, and then cut him downe,  
 Then cut him vp, and with my soules beams search  
 The cranks and cauernes of his braine, and studie  
 The errant wildernesse of a womans face ;  
 Where men cannot get out, for all the Comets  
 That haue beene lighted at it ; though they know  
 That Adders lie a funning in their smiles,  
 That Basilisks drinke their poison from their eies,  
 And no way there to coast out to their hearts ;  
 Yet still they wander there, and are not stai'd  
 Till they be fetter'd, nor secure before  
 All cares deuoure them ; nor in humane Consort<sup>74</sup>  
 Till they embrace within their wiues two breasts  
 All Pelion and Cythæron with their beasts.  
 Why write you not ?

*Tam.* O good my Lord forbear  
 In wreake of great faults,<sup>75</sup> to engender greater,  
 And make my loues corruption generate murther.

*Mont.* It followes needefully as childe and parent ;  
 The chaine-shot of thy lust is yet aloft,  
 And it must murther ; tis thine owne deare twinne :  
 No man can adde height to a womans sinne.  
 Vice neuer doth her iust hate so prouoke,  
 As when she rageth vnder vertues cloake.  
 Write : For it must be ; by this ruthlesse steele  
 By this impartiall torture, and the death  
 Thy tyrannies haue inuented in my entrailes,

74 All cares distract them ; nor in human state. 1607.

75 In wreake of great sins. 1607.



To quicken life in dying, and hold vp  
The spirits in fainting, teaching to preferue  
Torments in ashes, that will euer last.  
Speake : Will you write ?

*Tam.* Sweete Lord enioine my sinne  
Some other penance than what makes it worfe :  
Hide in some gloomie dungeon my loth'd face,  
And let condemned murtherers let me downe  
(Stopping their noses) my abhorred foode.  
Hang me in chaines, and let me eat these armes  
That haue offended : Binde me face to face  
To some dead woman, taken from the Cart  
Of Execution, till death and time  
In graines of dust diffolue me ; Ile endure :  
Or any torture that your wraths inuention  
Can fright all pittie from the world withall :  
But to betray a friend with shew of friendship,  
That is too common, for the rare reuenge  
Your rage affecteth ; heere then are my breasts,  
Last night your pillowes ; heere my wretched armes,  
As late the wished confines of your life :  
Now breake them as you please, and all the boundes  
Of manhoode, nobleffe, and religion.

*Mont.* Where all these haue beene broken, they  
are kept,  
In doing their iustice there with any shew  
Of the like cruell cruelty : Thine armes haue lost  
Their priuiledge in lust, and in their torture  
Thus they must pay it. *Stabs her.*

*Tam.* O Lord.

*Mont.* Till thou writ'st  
Ile write in wounds (my wrongs fit characters)  
Thy right of sufferance. Write.

*Tam.* O kill me, kill me :  
Deare husband be not crueller than death ;  
You haue beheld some Gorgon : Feele, ô feele  
How you are turn'd to stone ; with my heart blood  
Diffolue your selfe againe, or you will grow  
Into the image of all Tyrannie.



*Mont.* As thou art of adulterie, I will still  
Prooue thee my parallel,<sup>76</sup> being most a monster :  
Thus I expresse thee yet. *Stabs her againe.*

*Tam.* And yet I liue.

*Mont.* I, for thy monstrous idoll is not done yet :  
This toole hath wrought enough : now Torture vse

*Ent. seruants.*

This other engine on th'habituate powers  
Of her thrice damn'd and whorish fortitude.  
Vse the most madding paines in her that euer  
Thy venoms sok'd through, making most of death ;  
That she may weigh her wrongs with them, and then  
Stand vengeance on thy steepest rocke, a victor.

*Tamy.* O who is turn'd into my Lord and husband?  
Husband? My Lord? None but my Lord and hus-  
band?

Heauen, I aske thee remission of my finnes,  
Not of my paines : husband, ô helpe me husband.

*Ascendit Frier with a sword drawne.*

*Frier.* What rape of honour and religion ?  
O wracke of nature. *Falls and dies.*

*Tam.* Poore man : ô my father,  
Father? looke vp ; ô let me downe my Lord,  
And I will write.

*Mont.* Author of prodigies !  
What new flame breakes out of the firmament,  
That turnes vp counfels neuer knowne before ?  
Now is it true, earth mooues, and heauen stands still ;  
Euen Heauen it selfe must see and suffer ill :  
The too huge bias of the world hath swai'd  
Her backe-part vpwards, and with that she braues  
This Hemisphere, that long her mouth hath mockt :

---

76 Prooue thee my like in ill. 1607.

The grauitie of her religious face,  
(Now growne too waighty with her facriledge  
And here discernd sophifticate enough)  
Turnes to th' Antipodes : and all the formes  
That her illufions haue impreft in her,  
Haue eaten through her backe : and now all fee,  
How ſhe is riueted with hypocrifie :  
Was this the way ? was he the meane betwixt you ?

*Tam.* He was, he was, kind worthy man<sup>77</sup> he  
was.

*Mout.* Write, write a word or two.

*Tamy.* I will, I will.

Ile write, but with my bloud that he may fee,  
Theſe lines come from my wounds and not from me.

*Writes.*

*Mont.* Well might he die for thought : me thinkes  
the frame

And ſhaken ioints of the whole world ſhould crack  
To ſee her parts ſo diſproportionate ;  
And that his generall beauty cannot ſtand  
Without theſe ſtaines in the particular man.  
Why wander I ſo farre ? heere heere was ſhe  
That was a whole world without ſpot to me :  
Though now a world of ſpots ; oh what a lightning  
Is mans delight in women ? what a bubble,  
He builds his ſtate, fame, life on, when he marries ?  
Since all earths pleaſures are ſo ſhort and ſmall,  
The way t'niroy it, is t'abiure it all :  
Enough : I muſt be meſſenger my ſelfe,  
Diſguiſ'd like this ſtrange creature : in, Ile after,  
To ſee what guilty light giues this caue eies,  
And to the world ſing new impieties. *Exeunt.*

*He puts the Frier in the vault and follows, She raps  
herſelf in the Arras.*

---

77 kind innocent man. 1607.

*Enter Monsieur and Guije.*

*Monf.* Now shall we see, that nature hath no end  
 In her great workes, responfiue to their worths,  
 That she that makes so many eies, and foules,  
 To see and foresee, is starke blinde herselfe :  
 And as illiterate men say Latine praiers  
 By roote of heart, and daily iteration ;<sup>78</sup>  
 Not knowing what they say : So nature laies  
 A deale<sup>79</sup> of stufte together, and by vse,  
 Or by the meere necessitie of matter,  
 Ends such a worke, fills it, or leaues it emptie,  
 Of strength, or vertue, error or cleere truth ;  
 Not knowing what she does ; but vsually  
 Giues that which she calls merit<sup>80</sup> to a man,  
 And beliefe must arriue him on huge riches,  
 Honour, and happinesse, that effects his ruine ;  
 Even as in ships of warre, whose lasts of powder  
 Are laid (men think) to make them last, and guards,  
 When a disorder'd sparke that powder taking,  
 Blowes vp with sudder violence and horror  
 Ships that kept emptie, had fail'd long with terror.

*Gui.* He that obserues, but like a worldly man,  
 That which doth oft succede, and by th'euent  
 Values the worth of things ; will thinke it true,  
 That nature workes at randome, iust with you :  
 But with as much proportion<sup>81</sup> she may make

78 The passage continues thus in the edition of 1607 :—  
 In whose hot zeale, a man would thinke they knew  
 What they ranne so away with, and were sure  
 To haue rewards proportion'd to their labours ;  
 Yet may implore their owne confusions  
 For any thing they know, which oftentimes  
 It fals out they incurre : So nature laies, &c.

79 A masse of stufte. 1607.

80 which wee call merit. 1607.

81 with as much decorum. 1607.

A thing that from the feete vp to the throat  
Hath all the wondrous fabrike man should haue,  
And leaue it headlesse for a perfect man,<sup>82</sup>  
As giue a full man valour, vertue, learning,  
Without an end more excellent than those,  
On whom she no such worthie part bestowes.

*Monf.* Yet shall you see it here, here will be  
one

Yoong, learned, valiant, vertuous, and full mand ;  
One on whom Nature spent so rich a hand,  
That, with an ominous eie, she wept to see  
So much confum'd her vertuous treasurie.  
Yet, as the windes sing through a hollow tree,  
And (since it lets them passe through) let's it stand  
But a tree solid (since it giues no way  
To their wilde rage) they rend vp by the roote :  
So this whole man  
(That will not wind with euery crooked way  
Trode by the ser vile world) shall reele and fall  
Before the frantick pufs of blinde born chance,<sup>83</sup>  
That pipes through emptie men, and makes them  
dance :

Not so the Sea raues on the Lybian sandes,  
Tumbling her billowes in each others necke :  
Not so the furies of the euxine Sea  
(Neere to the frostie Pole, where free *Bootes*  
From those darke-deepe waues turns his radiant  
Teame)

Swell being enrag'd, euen from their inmost drop,  
As Fortune swings about the restlesse state  
Of vertue, now throwne into all mens hate.

---

82 an absolute man. 1607.

83 So this full creature now shall reele and fall,  
Before the franticke pufs of purblinde chance. 1607.

*Enter Montfurry disguis'd with the murtherers.*

Away my Lord, you are perfectly disguis'd,  
Leave us to lodge your ambush.

*Montf.* Speed me vengeance. *Exit.*

*Monf.* Resolve my Masters, you shall meet with  
one

Will try what proofes your privy coats are made on :  
When he is entred, and you heare us stamp,  
Approach, and make all fure.

*Murth.* We vvill my Lord. *Exeunt.*

*D'Ambois with two Pages with Tapers.*

*D'Amb.* Sit vp to night, and watch, Ile speake with  
none  
But the old frier, who bring to me.

*Pa.* We will Sir. *Exeunt.*

*D'Amb.* What violent heat is this ? me thinks the  
fire  
Of twenty liues doth on a sudder flash  
Through all my faculties : the aire goes high  
In this clofe chamber, and the frighted earth

*Thunder.*

Trembles, and shrinkes beneath me : the whole house  
Nods with his shaken burthen ; bleffe me, heauen.

*Enter Vmb. Frier.*

*Vmb.* Note what I want, my sonne, and be fore-  
warnd :  
O there are bloody deeds past and to come,  
I cannot stay : a fate doth rauish me :  
Ile meet thee in the chamber of thy loue. *Exit.*

*D'Amb.* What difmall change is heere ? the good  
old Frier  
Is murtherd ; being made knowne to ferue my loue ;  
And now his restlesse spirit would fore-warne me



Of some plot dangerous, and imminent.  
Note what he wants? he wants his upper weed,  
He wants his life, and body: which of these  
Should be the want he meanes, and may supplie me  
With any fit forewarning? this strange vision,  
(Together with the darke prediction  
Vf'd by the Prince of darknesse that was raifd  
By this embodied shadowe) stir my thoughts  
With reminiscion of the Spirits promise;  
Who told me, that by any inuocation  
I should haue power to raise him; though it wanted  
The powerfull words, and decent rites of art;  
Neuer had my set braine such need of spirit,  
T'instruct and cheere it; now then, I will claime,  
Performance of his free and gentle vow,  
T'apppeare in greater light; and make more plain,  
His rugged oracle: I long to know  
How my deare mistresse fares; and be informd  
What hand she now holds on the troubled bloud  
Of her incensed Lord: me thought the Spirit,  
(When he had vtterd his perplext presage)  
Threw his chang'd countenance headlong into  
cloudes;  
His forehead bent, as it would hide his face;  
He knockt his chin against his darkned breast,  
And struck a churlish silence through his powrs;  
Terror of darknesse: O thou King of flames,  
That with thy Musique-footed horse dost strike  
The cleere light out of chrystall, on darke earth;  
And hurlst instructiue fire about the world:  
Wake, wake, the drowfie and enchanted night;  
That sleepes with dead eies in this heauy riddle:  
Or thou great Prince of shades where neuer sunne  
Stickes his far-darted beames: whose eies are made,  
To shine in darknesse:<sup>84</sup> and see euer best

---

84 To see in darknesse. 1607.



Where men are blindest :<sup>85</sup> open now the heart  
 Of thy abashed oracle : that for feare,  
 Of some ill it includes, would faine lie hid,  
 And rise thou with it in thy greater light.

*Thunders. Surgit Spiritus cum fuis.*

*Sp.* Thus to obserue my vow of apparition,  
 In greater light, and explicate thy fate :  
 I come ; and tell thee that if thou obey  
 The summons that thy mistresse next wil fend thee,  
 Her hand shalbe thy death.

*D'Amb.* When will she fend ?

*Sp.* Soone as I fet againe, where late I rose.

*D'Amb.* Is the old Frier slaine ?

*Sp.* No, and yet liues not.

*D'Amb.* Died he a naturall death ?

*Sp.* He did.

*D'Amb.* Who then,  
 Will my deare mistresse fend ?

*Sp.* I must not tell thee.

*D'Amb.* Who lets thee ?

*Sp.* Fate.

*D'Amb.* Who are fates ministers ?

*Sp.* The Guise and Monsieur.

*D'Amb.* A fit paire of sheeres  
 To cut the threds of kings, and kingly spirits,  
 And consorts fit to sound forth harmony,  
 Set to the fals of kingdomes : shall the hand  
 Of my kinde Mistresse kill me ? *Thunders.*

*Sp.* If thou yeeld,  
 To her next summons, y'are faire warnd : farewell.

*Exit.*

*D'Amb.* I must fare well, how euer : though I die  
 My death consenting with his augurie ;

Should not my powers obey, when she commands  
My motion must be rebell to my will :  
My will : to life, If when I have obey'd,  
Her hand should so reward me : they must arme it,  
Binde me or force it : or I lay my life  
She rather would convert it many times  
On her owne bosome, euen to many deaths :  
But were there danger of such violence,  
I know tis far from her intent to send :  
And who she should send is as far from thought  
Since he is dead, whose only meane she vs'd.

*Knocks.*

Whose there ? looke to the dore : and let him in,  
Though politicke Monsieur, or the violent Guife.

*Enter Montfurry like the Frier, with a letter written  
in blood.*

*Mont.* Haile to my worthy sonne.

*D'Amb.* O lying Spirit !

To say the Frier was dead ; Ile now beleeve  
Nothing of all his forg'd predictions.

My kinde and honour'd Father, well reviv'd,  
I have beene frighted with your death, and mine,  
And told my Mistresse hand should be my death  
If I obeyed this summons.

*Montf.* I belev'd your love had bin much clearer,  
then to give

Any such doubt a thought, for she is cleare,  
And having freed her husbands jealousy,  
(Of which her much abus'd hand here is wit-  
ness)

She prays for urgent cause your instant presence.

*D'Amb.* Why then your prince of spirits may be  
call'd

The prince of lyers.

*Montf.* Holy writ so calls him.<sup>86</sup>

*D'Amb.* What ? writ in bloud ?

*Mont.* I, tis the inke of louers.

*D'Amb.* O tis a facred witnesse of her loue.  
So much elixer of her bloud as this  
Dropt in the lightest dame, would make her firme  
As heat to fire : and like to all the signes,  
Commands the life confinde in all my vaines ;  
O how it multiplies my bloud with spirit,  
And makes me apt t'encounter death and hell :  
But, come kinde Father; you fetch me to heauen,  
And to that end your holy weed was giuen. *Exeunt.*

*Thunder.* *Intrat Vmbra Frier and discovers  
Tamyra.*

*Frier.* Up with these stupid thoughts, still loved  
daughter,  
And strike away this heartlesse trance of anguish.  
Be like the Sunne, and labour in eclipses,  
Look to the end of woes : oh can you fit  
Mustering the horrors of your servants slaughter  
Before your contemplation, and not study<sup>87</sup>

86 The four speeches that precede are limited in the original to two, which run as follows :—

*D'Amb.* O lying Spirit : welcome loued father  
How fares my dearest mistresse ?

*Mont.* Well, as euer  
Being well as euer thought on by her Lord :  
Whereof she sends this witnesse in her hand  
And praies, for vrgent cause, your speediest preface.

87 The above six lines were amplified from the following four which stand thus in the original edition :—

Reuiue those stupid thoughts, and sit not thus,  
Gathering the horrors of your seruants slaughter,  
(So vrg'd by your hand, and so imminent)  
Into an idle fancie ; but deuise

How to prevent it? watch when he shall rise,  
And with a sudden outcry of his murder,  
Blow his retreat before he be revenged.

*Tamyra.* O father, have my dumb woe wak'd  
your death?

When will our humane griefs be at their height?  
Man is a tree, that hath no top in cares;  
No root in comforts; all his power to live  
Is given to no end, but to have power to grieve.

*Frier.* It is the misery of our creation. Your true  
friend,  
Led by your husband, shadowed in my weed,  
Now enters the dark vault.

*Tamyra.* But my dearest Father,  
Why will not you appear to him your self,  
And see that none of these deceits annoy him.

*Frier.* My power is limited, alas I cannot,  
All that I can do—See the Cave opens.<sup>88</sup> *Exit.*

*D'Ambois at the Gulfe.*

*Tam.* Away, (my love) away, thou wilt be mur-  
ther'd.

*Enter Monsieur and Guise above.*

*D'Amb.* Murder'd? I know not what that Hebrew  
means:  
That word had ne'er been nam'd had all been  
*D'Ambois.*  
Murder'd? By heaven he is my murderer

---

<sup>88</sup> Instead of the three preceding speeches, the Friar's shadow thus speaks in the original:—

*Vmb.* 'Tis the just curse of our abus'd creation,  
Which we must suffer here, and scape hereafter:  
He hath the great mind that submits to all,  
He sees inevitable; he the small  
That carps at earth, and her foundation shaker,  
And rather than himselfe, will mend his maker.

That shewes me not a murtherer ; what such bugge  
 Abhorreth not the very sleepe of *D'Ambois* ?  
 Murther'd ? who dares giue all the roome I see  
 To *D'Ambois* reach ? or looke with any oddes  
 His fight ith' face, vpon whose hand fits death ;  
 Whose sword hath wings, and euerie feather pierceth ?  
 If I scape Monieurs Pothecharie Shops,  
 Foutir, for Guifes Shambles, 'twas ill plotted  
 They should have mall'd me here,  
 When I was rising, I am up and ready.  
 Let in my politique visitants, let them in,  
 Though entring like so many mouing armours,  
 Fate is more strong than arms, and flie than treason,  
 And I at all parts buckl'd in my Fate :

*Monf. Guife.* Why enter not the coward villains ?

*D'Amb.* Dare they not come ?

*Enter murtherers with Frier at the other dore.*

*Tam.* They come.

*Murth.* 1. Come all at once.

*Frier.* Backe coward murtherers, backe.

*Omn.* Defend vs heauen. *Exeunt all but the first.*

1. Come ye not on ?

*D'Amb.* No, flae, nor goest thou off.

Stand you so firme ? Will it not enter heere ?

You haue a face yet : so in thy lifes flame

I burne the first rites to my mistresse fame.

*Frier.* Breath thee braue sonne against the other  
 charge.

*D'Amb.* O is it true then that my fense first told  
 mee ?

Is my kinde father dead ?

*Tam.* He is my loue.

'Twas the Earle my husband in his weede that brought  
 thee.

*Buff.* That was a speeding sleight, and well refem-  
 bled.

Where is that angrie Earle my Lord ? Come forth

And shew your owne face in your owne affaire ;  
Take not into your noble veines the blood  
Of these base villans, nor the light reports  
Of blister'd tongues, for cleere and weightie truth :  
But me against the world, in pure defence  
Of your rare Ladie, to whose spotlesse name  
I stand heere as a bulwarke, and proiect  
A life to her renowne, that euer yet  
Hath beene vntainted euen in enuies eie,  
And where it would protect a sanctuarie.  
Braue Earle come forth, and keepe your scandall in :  
Tis not our fault if you enforce the spot.  
Nor the wreake yours if you performe it not.

*Enter Mont. with all the Murtherers.*

*Mont.* Cowards, a fiend or spirit beat ye off?  
They are your owne faint spirits that haue forg'd  
The fearefull shadowes that your eies deluded :  
The fiend was in you ; cast him out then thus.

*D'Ambois hath Montfurry downe.*

*Tam.* Fauour (my Lord) my loue, ô fauour him.

*Pistolls shot within.*

*D'Amb.* I will not touch him : Take your life, my  
Lord,

And be appeas'd : O then the coward fates  
Haue maim'd themselues, and euer lost their honour.

*Vmb.* What haue ye done slaues ? irreligious Lord ?

*Buff.* Forbeare them, father ; tis enough for me  
That Guise and Monsieur, death and destinie  
Come behinde *D'Ambois* : is my bodie then  
But penetrable flesh ? And must my minde  
Follow my blood ? Can my diuine part adde  
No aide to th'earthly in extremitie ?  
Then these diuines are but for forme, not fact :  
Man is of two sweet Courtly friends compact ;  
A mistresse and a seruant : let my death  
Define life nothing but a Courtiers breath.



Nothing is made of nought, of all things made,  
 Their abstract being a dream but of a shade.  
 Ile not complaine to earth yet, but to heauen,  
 And (like a man) looke vpwards euen in death.  
 And if *Vespasian* thought in majestie  
 An Emperour might die standing, why not I ?  
 Nay without help, in which I will exceed him ;  
 For he died splinted with his chamber Groomes.

*She offers to help him.*

Proppe me, true sword, as thou hast euer done :  
 The equall thought I beare of life and death,  
 Shall make me faint on no side ; I am vp  
 Heere like a Roman Statue ; I will stand  
 Till death hath made me marble : ô my fame  
 Liue in despight of murther ; take thy wings  
 And haste thee where the gray-eyd morne perfumes,  
 Her Rosie chariot with Sabæan spices,  
 Flie, where the euening from th'Iberean vales,  
 Takes on her swarthy shoulders, *Heccate*  
 Cround with a groue of oakes : flie where men feele  
 The curning axeltree : and those that suffer  
 Beneath the chariot of the Snowy Beare :  
 And tell them all that *D'Ambois* now is hafting  
 To the eternall dwellers ; that a thunder  
 Of all their sighes together (for their frailties  
 Beheld in me) may quit my worthlesse fall  
 With a fit volley for my funerall.

*Vmb.* Forgiue thy murtherers.

*Buff.* I forgiue them all :

And you my Lord, their fautor ; for true signe  
 Of which vnfaïn'd remission, take my sword ;  
 Take it, and only giue it motion,  
 And it shall finde the way to victorie  
 By his owne brightnesse, and th'inherent valour  
 My fight hath still'd into't, with charmes of spirit.  
 Now let me pray you, that my weighty bloud  
 Laid in one skale of your impertiall splene,  
 May sway the forfeit of my worthy loue

Waid in the other : and be reconcilde  
With all forgiueneffe to your matchleffe wife.

*Tam.* Forgiue thou me deare seruant, and this hand  
That lead thy life to this vnworthy end,  
Forgiue it, for the blond with which tis staine,  
In which I writ the summons of thy death :  
The forced summons, by this bleeding wound,  
By this heere in my bofome : and by this  
That makes me hold vp both my hands embrewd  
For thy deare pardon.

*Buf.* O, my heart is broken  
Fate, nor these murtherers, Monsieur, nor the Guife.  
Haue any glorie in my death, but this :  
This killing spectacle : this prodigie :  
My funne is turnd to blood in whose red beams  
Pindus and Offa (hid in drifts of fnow  
Laid on my heart and liuer ; from their vains)  
Melt like two hungrie torrents : eating rockes  
Into the Ocean of all humane life,  
And make it bitter, only with my bloud :  
O fraile condition of strength, valour ; vertue,  
In me (life warning fire vpon the top  
Of some steepe Beacon, on a steeper hill)  
Made to expresse it : like a falling starre  
Silently glanc't, that like a thunderbolt,  
Lookt to haue stucke and shooke the firmament.

*Moritur.*

*Frier.* My terrors are strook inward, and no more  
My pennance will allow they shall enforce  
Earthly afflictions but vpon my felfe :<sup>89</sup>  
Farewell braue reliques of a compleat man :  
Looke vp and see thy spirit made a star,  
Ioine flames with Hercules : and when thou setst  
Thy radiant forehead in the firmament,

---

89 The above three lines are omitted in the edition of 1641.

Make the vast chryftall, cracke with thy receipt,<sup>90</sup>  
 Spread to a world of fire ; and th'aged skie,  
 Chere with new sparkes of old humanity.

Son of the earth, whom my vnrested foule,  
 Rues t'haue begotten in the faith of heauen ;  
 (Since thy reuengefull Spirit hath reiected  
 The charitie it commands, and the remission  
 To ferue and worship, the blind rage of bloud)<sup>91</sup>  
 Affay to gratulate and pacifie,  
 The foule fled from this worthy by performing  
 The Christian reconcilement he befought  
 Betwixt thee and thy Lady, let her wounds  
 Manlesly digd in her, be easd and cur'd  
 With blame of thine owne teares : or be assur'd  
 Neuer to rest free from my haunt and horror.

*Mont.* See how she merits this : still fitting by  
 And mourning his fall, more than her owne fault.

*Vmb.* Remoue, deare daughter, and content thy  
 husband :

So piety wils thee, and thy seruants peace.

*Tamy.* O wretched piety, that art so distract  
 In thine owne constancy ; and in thy right  
 Must be vnrighteous : if I right my friend  
 I wrong my husband ; if his wrong I shunne,  
 The duty of my friend I leaue vndone ;  
 Ill plays on both sides ; heere and there, it rifeth ;  
 No place : no good so good, but ill comprifeth ;  
 My foule more scruple breeds, than my bloud, sinne,  
 Vertue imposeth more than any stepdame :<sup>92</sup>  
 O had I neuer married but for forme,  
 Neuer vowd faith but purposd to deceiue :  
 Neuer made conscience of any sinne,  
 But clok't it priuately and made it common :  
 Nor neuer honord beene, in blood, or mind,

---

90 Make the vast continent cracke. 1607.

91 The above three lines are omitted in the edition of 1641.

92 The above two lines are not in the edition of 1641.

Happy had I beene then, as others are  
Of the like licence ; I had then beene honord :  
Liu'd without enuy : custome had benumbd  
All sence of scruple, and all note of frailty :  
My fame had beene vntoucht, my heart vnbroken :  
But (shunning all) I strike on all offence,  
O husband ? deare friend ? O my conscience ?

*Monf.* Come let's away, my senses are not prooffe  
Against those plaints. *Exeunt Guise, Monf. D'Ambois*  
*is borne off.*

*Mont.* I must not yeeld to pity nor to loue  
So seruile and so traitorous : cease my bloud  
To wrastle with my honour, fame and iudgement :  
Away, forsake my house, forbear complaints  
Where thou hast bred them : heere all things full,  
Of their owne shame and sorrow, leaue my house.

*Tam.* Sweet Lord forgiue me, and I will be gone,  
And till these wounds, that neuer balme shall close  
Till death hath enterd at them (so I loue them  
(Being opened by your hands) by death be cur'd  
I neuer more will grieue you with my sight :  
Neuer endure that any rooffe shall part  
Mine eies and heauen : but to the open deserts  
(Like to hunted Tygres) I will flie :  
Eating my heart, shunning the steps of men,  
And looke on no side till I be arriu'd.

*Mont.* I do forgiue thee, and vpon my knees  
With hands (held vp to heauen) wish that mine honor  
Would suffer reconcilment to my loue :  
But since it will not, honor, neuer serue  
My Loue with flourishing obiect till it sterue :  
And as this Taper, though it vpwards looke,  
Downwards must needs consume, so let our loue ;  
As hauing lost his hony, the sweet taste  
Runs into fauor, and will needs retaine  
A spice of his first parents, till (like life)  
It fees and dies ; so let our loue : and lastly,  
As when the flame is sufferd to looke vp  
It keepes his luster : but, being thus turnd downe

(His naturall course of vsfull light inuerted)  
 His owne stufte puts it out : so let our loue,  
 Now turne from me, as heere I turne from thee,  
 And may both points of heauens strait axeltree  
 Conioine in one, before thy selfe and me.

*Exeunt severally.*

*Finis Actus Quinti & ultimi.*

## Epilogue.

*W*ith many hands you have seene D'Ambois  
 slaine,  
 Yet by your grace he may revive againe,  
 And every day grow stronger in his skill  
 To please, as we presume he is in will.  
 The best deserving Actors of the time  
 Had their ascents ; and by degrees did clime  
 To their full height, a place to studie due  
 To make him tread in their path lies in you ;  
 Hee'le not forget his Makers ; but still prove  
 His thankfulnesse as you encrease your love.

FINIS.

THE  
REVENGE

OF

*Bussy D'Ambois.*

A

TRAGEDIE.

*As it hath beene often presented at the  
private Play-houſe in the White-Fryers.*

---

Written

By GEORGE CHAPMAN, Gentleman.

---

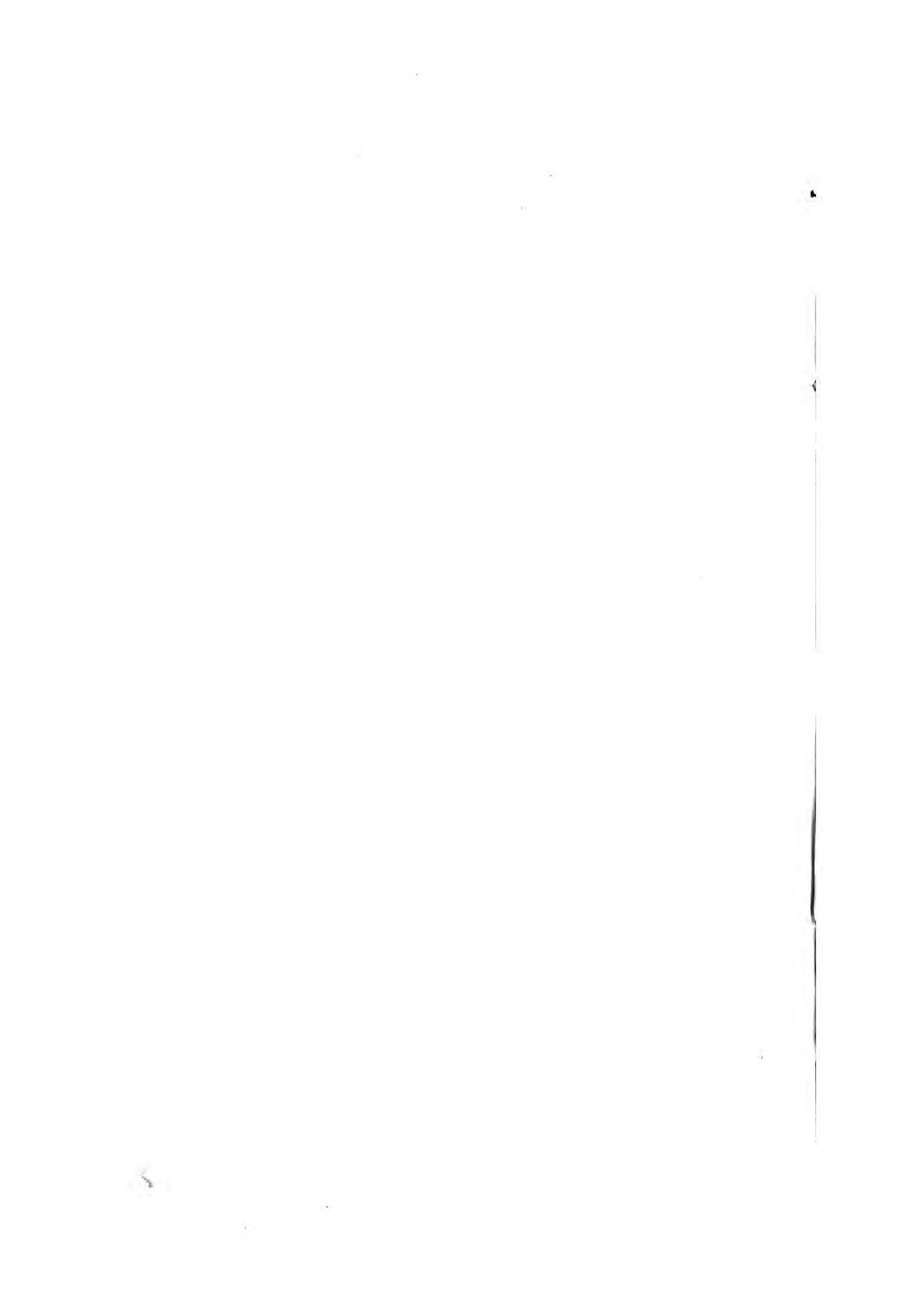


L O N D O N:

Printed by T. S. and are to be ſolde by IOHN HELME,  
at his Shop in S. Dunſtones Church-yard,  
in *Fleetſtreet.* 1 6 1 3.

G







TO THE RIGHT  
VERTVOVS, AND  
truely Noble Knight, S<sup>r</sup>.

*Thomas Howard, &c.*

*Sir,*

**S**Ince VVorkes of this kinde  
haue beene lately esteem-  
ed worthy the Patro-  
nage of some of our wor-  
thiest Nobles, I haue made  
no doubt to preferre this  
of mine to your vndoubted Vertue, and ex-  
ceeding true Nobleffe: as contayning mat-  
ter no lesse deseruing your reading, and ex-  
citation to Heroycall life, then any such  
late Dedication. Nor haue the greatest Prin-  
ces of Italie, and other Countries, conceiued  
it any least diminution to their greatnesse,

## THE EPISTLE

to haue their Names wing'd with these Tragick Plumes, and disperst by way of Patronage, through the most Noble Notices of Europe.

Howsoever therefore in the Scænicall presentation, it might meete with some maligners, yet considering, euen therein, it past with approbation of more worthy iudgements; the Ballance of their side (especially being held by your impartiall hand) I hope will to no graine abide the out-weighing. And for the autenticall truth of eyther person or action, who (worth the respecting) will expect it in a Poeme, whose subiect is not truth, but things like truth? Poore enuious soules they are that caull at truths want in these naturall fictions: materiall instruction, elegant and sententious excitation to Vertue, and deflection from her contrary; being the foule, lims, and limits of an autenticall Tragedie. But whatsoever merit of your full countenance and fauour suffers defect in this, I shall soone supply with some other of more generall account: wherein your right vertuous Name made

## DEDICATORIE.

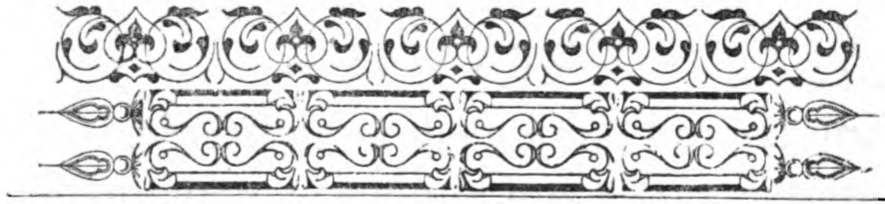
famous and preferued to posteritie, your future comfort and honour in your present acceptation, and loue of all vertuous and diuine expreffion; may be fo much paſt others of your Rancke encreaſt, as they are ſhort of your Iudiciall Ingenuitie, in their due eſtimation.

For, howſoeuer thoſe Ignoble and ſowre-brow'd VVorldlings are careleſſe of whatſoeuer future, or preſent opinion ſpreads of them; yet (with the moſt diuine Philoſopher, if Scripture did not confirme it) I make it matter of my Faith; that we truly retaine an intellectuall feeling of Good or Bad after this life; proportionably anſwerable to the loue or neglect we beare here to all Vertue, and truly-humane Inſtruction: In whoſe fauour and honour I wiſh you moſt eminent; And reſt euer.

*Your true Vertues*

*moſt true obſeruer,*

*Geo. Chapman.*



## The Actors names.

<b>H</b> <i>Enry</i> , the King.	<i>Soiffone</i> .
<i>Monsieur</i> , his Brother.	<i>Perricot</i> .
<i>Guise</i> . <i>D</i> .	The <i>Guard</i> .
<i>Renel</i> , a <i>Marqueffe</i> .	<i>Souldiers</i> .
<i>Mont fureau</i> , an <i>Earle</i> .	<i>Seruants</i> .
<i>Baligny</i> , Lord <i>Lieutenant</i> .	{ <i>Buffy</i> .
<i>Clermont</i> , <i>D' Ambois</i> .	{ <i>Monsieur</i> .
<i>Maillard</i> .	{ <i>Guise</i> .
<i>Challon</i> .	{ <i>Card. Guise</i> .
<i>Aumal</i> .	{ <i>Shattilion</i> .
<i>Espernone</i> .	

The ghost of

*Countesse* of *Cambray*.  
*Tamyra*, wife to *Mont fureau*.  
*Charlotte*, wife to *Baligny*.  
*Rioua*, a *Seruant*.



# THE REVENGE

OF

*Bussy D'Ambois.*

A

TRAGEDIE.

---

Actus primi Scæna prima.

---

Enter *Baligny, Renel.*

*Baligny.*



O what will this declining Kingdome  
turne  
Swindging in euery license, as in this  
Stupide permission of braue D'Ambois  
Murther ?  
Murther made paralell with Law ?  
Murther vs'd

To serue the Kingdome, giuen by fute to men  
For their aduancement ? suffered scarcrow-like  
To fright adulterie ? what will policie  
At length bring vnder his capacitie ?



104 *The Reuenge of Buffy D'Ambois.*

*Rene.* All things : for as when the high births of  
Kings  
Deliuerances, and Coronations,  
We celebrate with all the Cities Bels  
(Iangling together in vntun'd confufion :)  
All order'd Clockes are tyed vp : fo when Glory,  
Flatterie, and fsmooth applaufes of things ill,  
Vphold th'inordinate fwindge of downe-right power,  
Iuftice, and truth, that tell the bounded vfe,  
Vertuous, and well diftinguifht formes of Time,  
Are gag'd and tongue-tide, but wee haue obseru'd  
Rule in more regular motion : things moft lawfull  
Were once moft royall, Kings fought common good  
Mens manly liberties, though ne'er fo meane,  
And had their owne fwindge fo : more free, and more,  
But when pride enter'd them, and Rule by power,  
All browes that fmil'd beneath them, frown'd ; hearts  
grieu'd,  
By imitation ; vertue quite was vanifht,  
And all men studi'd felfe-loue, fraud, and vice,  
Then no man could be good but he was punifht :  
Tyrants being ftill more fearefull of the good  
Then of the bad ; their fubiefts vertues euer  
Manag'd with curbs, and dangers, and esteem'd  
As fhadowes, and detractions to their owne.

*Bal.* Now all is peace, no danger : now what  
followes ?  
Idleneffe rufts vs ; fince no vertuous labour  
Ends ought rewarded : Eafe, Securitie  
Now all the Palme weares, wee made warre before  
So to preuent warre, men with giuing gifts  
More then receiuing, made our Countrey ftrong ;  
Our matchleffe race of Souldiers then would fpend  
In publike warres, not priuate brawles, their fpirits ;  
In daring Enemies, arm'd with meaneft armes ;  
Not courting ftumpets, and confuming birth-rights  
In Apifhneffe, and enuy of attire.  
No labour then was harfh, no way fo deepe,  
No rocke fo fteepe, but if a Bird could fcale it,

Vp would our youth flie to. A Foe in armes  
Stirr'd vp a much more lust of his encounter,  
Then of a Mistresse neuer so be-painted :  
Ambition then, was onely scaling walles ;  
And ouer-topping turrets : Fame was wealth ;  
Best parts, best deedes, were best Nobilitie ;  
Honour with worth ; and wealth well got or none.  
Countries we wonne with as few men as Countries.  
Vertue subdu'd all.

*Ren.* Iust : and then our Nobles  
Lou'd vertue so, they prais'd and vs'd it to ;  
Had rather doe, then say ; their owne deedes hearing  
By others glorified, then be so barraine,  
That their parts onely flood in praising others.

*Bal.* Who could not doe, yet prais'd, and enui'd  
not ;  
Ciuille behauour flourish ; Bountie flow'd,  
Auarice to vpland Boores, flaues hang-men banisht.

*Ren.* Tis now quite otherwise ; but to note the  
cause  
Of all these foule digressions, and reuolts  
From our first natures, this tis in a word :  
Since good Arts faile, crafts and deceits are vs'd :  
Men ignorant are idle ; idle men  
Most practise what they most may doe with ease,  
Fashion, and fauour ; all their studies ayming  
At getting money, which no wise man euer  
Fed his desires with.

*Bal.* Yet now none are wise  
That thinke not heauens true foolish, weigh'd with that.  
Well thou most worthy to be greatest Guise,  
Make with thy greatnesse a new world arise.  
Such deprest Nobles (followers of his)  
As you, my selfe, my Lord will finde a time  
When to reuenge your wrongs.

*Ren.* I make no doubt :  
In meane time, I could wish, the wrong were righted  
Of your flaine Brother in law, braue Buffy D'Ambois.

*Bal.* That one accident was made my charge.

106 *The Reuenge of Buffy D'Ambois.*

My Brother Buffy's Sifter (now my wife)  
By no fuite would consent to fatisfie  
My loue of her, with marriage, till I vow'd,  
To vse my vtmost to reuenge my Brother :  
But Clermont D'Ambois (Buffy's second Brother)  
Had (since) his apparition, and excitement,  
To suffer none but his hand in his wreake,  
Which hee hath vow'd, and so will needes acquite  
Me of my vow, made to my wife, his Sifter,  
And vndertake himselfe Buffy's reuenge ;  
Yet loathing any way to giue it act,  
But in the noblest and most manly course.  
(If th'Earle dares take it) he resolues to fend  
A Challenge to him, and my selfe must beare it,  
To which deliuerie I can vse no meanes ;  
He is so barricado'd in his house,  
And arm'd with guard still.

*Ren.* That meanes lay on mee,  
Which I can strangely make. My last lands sale,  
By his great fuite, stands now on price with him,  
And hee (as you know) passing couetous,  
(With that blinde greedinesse that followes gaine)  
Will cast no danger, where her sweete feete tread.  
Besides, you know, his Lady by his fuite,  
(Wooing as freshly, as when first loue shot  
His faultlesse arrowes from her rosie eyes)  
Now liues with him againe, and shee, I know,  
Will ioyne with all helps, in her friends reuenge.

*Bal.* No doubt (my Lord) and therefore let me  
pray you  
To vse all speede ; for so on needels points  
My wifes heart stands with haste of the reuenge :  
Being (as you know) full of her brothers fire,  
That shee imagines I neglect my vow ;  
Keepes off her kinde embraces, and still askes ;  
When, when, will this reuenge come ? when perform'd  
Will this dull vow be ? And I vow to Heauen  
So sternely, and so past her sexe she vrges  
My vowes performance ; that I almost feare

*The Reuenge of Buffy D'Ambois.* 107

To see her, when I haue a while beene absent,  
Not showing her before I speake, the bloud  
She so much thirsts for, freckling hands and face.

*Ren.* Get you the Challenge writ, and looke from  
me,  
To heare your passage clear'd no long time after.

*Exit Ren.*

*Bal.* All restitution to your worthiest Lordship,  
Whose errand I must carrie to the King,  
As hauing sworne my seruice in the search  
Of all such Malecontents, and their designes,  
By seeming one affected with their faction,  
And discontented humours gainst the state :  
Nor doth my brother *Clermont* scape my counsaile  
Giuen to the King, about his Guisean greatnesse,  
Which (as I spice it) hath possessed the King  
(Knowing his daring spirit) of much danger :  
Charg'd in it to his person : though my conscience  
Dare sweare him cleare of any power to be  
Infected with the least dishonestie :  
Yet that sinceritie, wee Politicians  
Must say, growes out of enuie, since it cannot  
Aspire to policies greatnesse : and the more  
We worke on all respects of kinde, and vertue,  
The more our seruice to the King seemes great,  
In sparing no good that seemes bad to him :  
And the more bad, we make the most of good,  
The more our policie searcheth ; and our seruice  
Is wonder'd at for wisedome and sincerenesse.  
Tis easie to make good suspected still,  
Where good, and God, are made but cloakes for ill.  
See Monsieur taking now his leaue for Brabant,

*Enter Henry, Monsieur, Guise, Cler., Espernone,  
Foifson. Monsieur taking leaue of the King.*

The Guise, & his deare Minion, Clermont D'Ambois,  
Whispering together, not of state affaires

108 *The Reuenge of Buffy D'Ambois.*

I durst lay wagers, (though the Guife be now  
In chiefe heate of his faction) but of some thing,  
Sauouring of that which all men else despise,  
How to be truely noble, truely wise.

*Monf.* See how hee hangs upon the eare of Guife,  
Like to his Iewell.

*Efper.* Hee's now whisp'ring in  
Some doctrine of stabilitie, and freedome,  
Contempt of outward greatnesse, and the guifes  
That vulgar great ones make their pride and zeale,  
Being onely seruile traines, and sumptuous houses,  
High places, offices.

*Monf.* Contempt of these  
Does he read to the Guife? Tis passing needfull,  
And hee, I thinke, makes shew t'affect his doctrine.

*Efp.* Commends, admires it.

*Monf.* And pursues another,  
Tis fine hypocrisie, and cheape, and vulgar,  
Knowne for a couert practise, yet beleeu'd  
(By those abus'd foules, that they teach and gouerne)  
No more then Wiues adulteries, by their Husbands,  
They bearing it with so vnmou'd aspects,  
Hot comming from it; as twere not all,  
Or made by custome nothing. This fame D'Ambois  
Hath gotten such opinion of his vertues,  
(Holding all learning but an Art to liue well,)  
And showing hee hath learn'd it, in his life,  
Being thereby strong in his perfwading others;  
That this ambitious Guife, embracing him,  
Is thought t'mbrace his vertues.

*Efp.* Yet in some  
His vertues are held false for th'others vices:  
For tis more cunning held, and much more common,  
To suspect truth then falshood: and of both,  
Truth still fares worse; as hardly being beleeu'd,  
As tis vnvfuall, and rarely knowne.

*Monf.* Ile part engendring vertue. Men affirme  
Though this fame Clermont hath a D'Ambois spirit,  
And breathes his brothers valour; yet his temper



*The Reuenge of Buffy D'Ambois.* 109

Is so much past his, that you cannot moue him :  
Ile try that temper in him. Come, you two  
Deuoure each other with your vertues zeale,  
And leaue for other friends, no fragment of yee :  
I wonder Guise, you will thus rauish him  
Out of my bosome, that first gaue the life  
His manhood breathes, spirit, and meanes and luster.  
What doe men thinke of me, I pray thee Clermont ?  
Once giue me leaue (for tryall of that loue  
That from thy brother Buffy thou inherit'st)  
T'vnclasp thy bosome. *Cler.* As how fir ?

*Monf.* Be a true glasse to mee, in which I may  
Behold what thoughts the many headed-beast,  
And thou thy selfe breathes out concerning me,  
My ends, and new vpstarte state in Brabant,  
For which I now am bound, my higher aymes,  
Imagin'd here in France : speake man, and let  
Thy words be borne as naked as thy thoughts :  
O were braue Buffy liuing ! *Cler.* Liuing my Lord ?

*Monf.* Tis true, thou art his brother, but durst thou  
Haue brau'd the Guise : mauger his presence, courted  
His wedded Lady ; emptied euen the dregs  
Of his worst thoughts of mee, euen to my teeth ;  
Discern'd not me his rising soueraigne  
From any common groome : but let me heare  
My grossest faults, as grosse-full as they were.  
Durst thou doe this ?

*Cler.* I cannot tell : A man  
Does neuer know the goodnesse of his stomacke  
Till hee sees meate before him. Were I dar'd,  
Perhaps as he was, I durst doe like him.

*Monf.* Dare then to poure out here thy freest soule,  
Of what I am. *Cler.* Tis stale, he tolde you it.

*Monf.* He onely iested, spake of splene and enuie ;  
Thy soule more learn'd, is more ingenuous,  
Searching, iudiciall ; let me then from thee  
Heare what I am.

*Cler.* What but the sole support,  
And most expectant hope of all our France,



110 *The Reuenge of Buffy D'Ambois.*

The toward victor of the whole low Countryes?

*Monf.* Tush, thou wilt sing Encomions of my praife.  
Is this like D'Ambois? I must vex the Guife,  
Or neuer looke to heare free truth; tell me,  
For Buffy liues not: hee durst anger mee,  
Yet for my loue, would not haue fear'd to anger  
The King himselfe. Thou vnderstand't me, dost  
not?

*Cler.* I shall my Lord, with studie.

*Monf.* Dost vnderstand thy selfe? I pray thee tell  
me,

Dost neuer search thy thoughts, what my designe  
Might be to entertaine thee and thy brother?  
What turne I meant to serue with you?

*Cler.* Euen what you please to thinke.

*Monf.* But what thinkest thou?

Had I no end in't think't? *Cler.* I thinke you had.

*Monf.* When I tooke in such two as you two were,  
A ragged couple of decaid Commanders,  
When a French-crowne would plentifully serue  
To buy you both to any thing i'th' earth.

*Cler.* So it would you:

*Monf.* Nay bought you both out-right,  
You and your Trunkes: I feare me, I offend thee.

*Cler.* No not a iot.

*Monf.* The most renowned Souldier  
*Epaminondas* (as good Authors say)  
Had no more suites then backes, but you two shar'd  
But one suite twixt you both, when both your studies  
Were not what meate to dine with; if your Partridge,  
Your Snipe, your Wood-cocke, Larke, or your red  
Hering,

But where to begge it, whether at my house,  
Or at the Guifes (for you know you were  
Ambitious beggars,) or at some Cookes-shop,  
T'eternize the Cookes trust, and score it vp.  
Dost not offend thee? *Cler.* No sir. Pray pro-  
ceede.

*Monf.* As for thy Gentry, I dare boldly take

*The Reuenge of Buffy D'Ambois.* 111

Thy honourable othe : and yet some fay  
Thou and thy most renowned noble Brother,  
Came to the Court first in a Keele of Sea-coale ;  
Dost not offend thee ? *Cler.* Neuer doubt it, fir.

*Mons.* Why doe I loue thee then ? why haue I  
rak'd thee

Out of the dung-hill ? cast my cast Ward-robe on thee ?  
Brought thee to Court to, as I did thy Brother ?  
Made yee my fawcy bon companions ?  
Taught yee to call our greatest Noble men  
By the corruption of their names ; Iack, Tom ?  
Haue I blowne both for nothing to this bubble ?  
Though thou art learn'd ; thast no enchanting wit,  
Or were thy wit good, am I therefore bound  
To keepe thee for my Table ?

*Cler.* Well Sir, 'twere

A good Knights place. Many a proud dubb'd Gal-  
lant

Seekes out a poore Knights liuing from such Emrods.  
Or what vse else should I designe thee to ?  
Perhaps you'll answere me, to be my Pander.

*Cler.* Perhaps I shall.

*Monf.* Or did the flie Guise put thee  
Into my bosome, t'vndermine my proiects ?  
I feare thee not ; for though I be not sure  
I haue thy heart, I know thy braine-pan yet  
To be as emptie a dull piece of waincot  
As euer arm'd the scalpe of any Courtier ;  
A fellow onely that consists of sinewes ;  
Meere Swiffer, apt for any execution.

*Cler.* But killing of the King.

*Mon.* Right : now I see  
Thou vnderstand'ft thy selfe.

*Cler.* I, and you better.

You are a Kings sonne borne. *Monf.* Right.

*Cler.* And a Kings brother. *Monf.* True.

*Cler.* And might not any foole haue beene so too,  
As well as you ? *Monf.* A poxe vpon you.

*Cler.* You did no Princely deedes

112 *The Reuenge of Buffy D'Ambois.*

Ere you're borne (I take it) to deserue it ;  
Nor did you any since that I haue heard ;  
Nor will doe euer any, as all thinke.

*Monf.* The Diuell take him. Ile no more of him.

*Guife.* Nay : stay my Lord, and heare him answere  
you.

*Monf.* No more I fweare. Farewell. *Ex. Monf.*

*Guife.* No more : Ill fortune. *Esper. Soiff.*

I would haue giuen a million to haue heard  
His scoffes retorted : and the infolence  
Of his high birth and greatnesse (which were neuer  
Effects of his deserts, but of his fortune)  
Made shew to his dull eyes, beneath the worth  
That men aspire to by their knowing vertues,  
Without which Greatnesse is a shade, a bubble.

*Cler.* But what one great man dreames of that,  
but you ?

All take their births and birth-rights left to them  
(Acquir'd by others) for their owne worths purchase,  
When many a foole in both, is great as they :  
And who would thinke they could winne with their  
worths

Wealthy possessions, when wonne to their hands,  
They neyther can iudge iustly of their value,  
Nor know their vse ; and therefore they are puffed  
With such proud tumours as this Monsieur is :  
Enabled onely by the goods they haue,  
To scorne all goodnesse : none great, fill their fortunes,  
But as those men that make their houses greater,  
Their households being lesse, so Fortune raises  
Huge heapes of out-side in these mightie men,  
And giues them nothing in them.

*Guife.* True as truth :

And therefore they had rather drowne their substance  
In superfluities of bricke and stones ;  
(Like *Sisyphus*, aduancing of them euer,  
And euer pulling downe) then lay the cost  
Of any fluttish corner, on a man,  
Built with Gods finger, and enstil'd his Temple.

*The Reuenge of Buffy D'Ambois.* 113

*Bal.* Tis nobly faid, my Lord.

*Guise.* I would haue these things  
Brought vpon Stages, to let mightie Mifers  
See all their graue and serious miferies, plaid,  
As once they were in Athens, and olde Rome.

*Cler.* Nay, we must now haue nothing brought on  
Stages,  
But puppetry, and pide ridiculous Antickes :  
Men thither come, to laugh, and feede fool-fat,  
Checke at all goodnesse there, as being prophan'd :  
When wherefoeuer goodnesse comes, shee makes  
The place still sacred : though with other feete  
Neuer so much tis scandal'd, and polluted.  
Let me learne anything that fits a man,  
In any Stables showne, as well as Stages.

*Bal.* Why ? is not all the world esteem'd a Stage ?

*Cler.* Yes : and right worthily : and Stages too  
Haue a respect due to them : if but onely,  
For what the good Greeke Moralists sayes of them ;  
Is a man proud of greatnesse, or of riches ?  
Giue me an expert Actor ; Ile shew all,  
That can within his greatest glory fall.  
Is a man fraid with pouertie and lownesse ?  
Giue me an Actor, Ile shew euery eye  
What hee laments so, and so much doth flye,  
The best and worst of both : if but for this then,  
To make the proudest out-side that most fwels,  
With things without him, and aboue his worth,  
See how small cause hee has to be so blowne vp ;  
And the most poore man, to be grieu'd with poore-  
nesse,  
Both being so easily borne by expert Actors.  
The Stage and Actors are not so contemptfull,  
As euery innouating Puritane,  
And ignorant sweater out of zealous enuie,  
Would haue the world imagine. And besides,  
That all things haue beene likened to the mirth,  
Vs'd vpon Stages, and for Stages fitted.  
The splenatiue Philosopher that euer

114 *The Reuenge of Buffy D'Ambois.*

Laught at them all, were worthy the enflaging :  
All obiects, were they ne'er so full of teares,  
He so conceited, that he could distill thence  
Matter that still fed his ridiculous humour.  
Heard he a Lawyer, neuer so vehement pleading,  
Hee stood and laught. Heard hee a Tradef-man  
    fwearing  
Neuer so thriftily (selling of his wares ;) )  
He stood and laught. Heard hee an holy brother,  
For hollow ostentation at his prayers  
Ne'er so impetuouly ; hee stood and laught.  
Saw hee a great man neuer so insulting,  
Seuerely inflicting, grauely giuing lawes,  
Not for their good, but his ; hee stood and laught.  
Saw hee a youthfull widow  
Neuer so weeping, wringing of her hands,  
For her lost Lord, still the Philosopher laught :  
Now whether hee suppos'd all these presentments,  
Were onely maskeries, and wore false faces :  
Or else were simply vaine, I take no care,  
But still hee laught, how graue soere they were.

*Guife.* And might right well (my Clermont) and  
    for this

Vertuous digression, we vwill thanke the scoffes  
Of vicious Monsieur, But now for the maine point  
Of your late resolution for reuenge  
Of your flaine friend.

*Cler.* I haue here my Challenge,  
Which I will pray my Brother Baligny  
To beare the murtherous Earle.

*Bal.* I haue prepar'd  
Meanes for accesse to him, through all his Guard.

*Guife.* About it then, my worthy Baligny,  
And bring vs the successe. *Bal.* I will my Lord.

*Exeunt.*

*Tamyra Jola.*

*Tamy.* Reuenge, that euer red sitt'ft in the eyes



*The Reuenge of Buffy D'Ambois.* 115

Of iniur'd Ladies, till we crowne thy browes  
With bloody Lawrell ; and receiue from thee  
Iuftice for all our humors iniurie,  
Whofe wings none flye, that Wrath or Tyrannie  
Haue ruthleffe made, and bloody. Enter here,  
Enter, O enter : and, though length of time  
Neuer lets any fcape thy constant iuftice,  
Yet now preuent that length. Flye, flye, and here  
Fixe thy Steele foot-fteps: Here, O here, where ftill  
Earth (mou'd with pittie) yeelded and embrac'd  
My Loues faire figure, drawne in his deare bloud,  
And mark'd the place, to fhew thee where was done  
The cruell'ft murder that ere fled the Sunne.  
O Earth ! why keep'ft thou not as well his fpirit,  
To giue his forme life ? No, that was not earthly :  
That (rarefying the thinne and yeelding ayre)  
Flew fparkling vp into the Sphære of fire,  
Whence endleffe flames it fheds in my defire :  
Here be my daily pallet, here all nights  
That can be wrefte from thy riuals armes ;  
(O my deare Buffy) I will lye, and kiffe  
Spirit into thy bloud, or breathe out mine  
In fighes, and kifles, and fad tunes to thine. *She fings.*

*Enter Mont fur.*

*Mont.* Still on this hant ? Still fhall adulterous  
bloud  
Affect thy fpirits ? Thinke, for fhame, but this,  
This bloud that Cockatrice-like thus thou brood'ft  
To dry is to breede any quench to thine.  
And therefore now (if onely for thy luft  
A little couer'd with a vaile of fhame)  
Looke out for fresh life, rather then witch-like,  
Learne to kiffe horror, and with death engender.  
Strange croffe in nature, pureft virgine fhame  
Lies in the bloud, as luft lyes ; and together  
Many times mixe too : and in none more shamefull  
Then in the fhamefac't. Who can then diftinguifh



116 *The Reuenge of Buffy D'Ambois.*

Twixt their affections ; or tell when hee meetes  
With one not common ? Yet, as worthiest Poets  
Shunne common and plebeian formes of speech,  
Euery illiberall and affected phraze  
To clothe their matter : and together tye  
Matter and forme, with Art and decencie.  
So worthiest women should shunne vulgar guises,  
And though they cannot but flye out for change,  
Yet modestie, the matter of their liues,  
Be it adulterate, should be painted true  
With modest out-parts ; what they should doe still  
Grac'd with good show, though deedes be ne'er so ill.

*Tamy.* That is so farre from all yee seeke of vs,  
That (though your selues be common as the ayre)  
We must not take the ayre, wee must not fit  
Our actions to our owne affectons :  
But as Geometricians (you still say)  
Teach that no lines, nor superficies,  
Doe moue themselues, but still accompanie  
The motions of their bodies ; so poore wiues  
Must not pursue, nor haue their owne affections,  
But to their husbands earnest, and their iests,  
To their austerities of lookes, and laughters,  
(Though ne'er so foolish and iniurious)  
Like Parasites and slaues, fit their disposures.

*Mont.* I vsde thee as my soule, to moue and rule  
me.

*Tamy.* So said you, when you woo'd. So Souldiers  
tortur'd  
With tedious sieges of some wel-wall'd Towne,  
Propound conditions of most large contents,  
Freedome of Lawes, all former gouernment ;  
But hauing once set foote within the Wals,  
And got the reynes of power into their hands,  
Then doe they tyrannize at their owne rude swindges,  
Seaze all their goods, their liberties, and liues,  
And make aduantage, and their lusts, their lawes.

*Monf.* But loue me, and performe a Wifes part yet,  
(With all my loue before) I sweare forgiueneffe.

*The Reuenge of Buffy D'Ambois.* 117

*Tamy.* Forgiueneffe ! that grace you should feeke  
of mee :

Theſe tortur'd fingers and theſe ſtab'd-through armes  
Keepe that law in their vvounds, yet, vnobſeru'd,  
And euer ſhall. *Monf.* Remember their deferts.

*Tam.* Thoſe vvith faire warnings might haue bene  
reform'd,

Not theſe vnmanly rages. You haue heard  
The fiction of the North winde and the Sunne,  
Both vvorking on a Traueller, and contending  
Which had moſt power to take his cloake from him :  
Which when the Winde attempted, hee roar'd out  
Outragious blaſts at him to force it off,  
That vvrap't it cloſer on. When the calme Sunne  
(The Winde once leauing) charg'd him vvith ſtill  
beames,

Quiet, and feruent, and therein was conſtant,  
Which made him caſt off both his cloake and coate :  
Like vvhom ſhould men doe. If yee vvish your Wiues  
Should leaue diſlik'd things, feeke it not vvith rage ;  
For that enrages : vvhat yee giue, yee haue :  
But vſe calme warnings, and kinde manly meanes,  
And that in Wiues moſt prostitute will winne  
Not onely ſure amends ; but make vs Wiues  
Better then thoſe that ne'er led faultie liues.

*Enter a Souldier.*

*Sould.* My Lord.

*Monf.* How now ; vvould any ſpeake with me ?

*Sould.* I, Sir.

*Monf.* Peruerſe, and traiterous miſcreant :  
Where are your other fellowes of my Guard ?  
Haue I not told you, I will ſpeake with none,  
But Lord Renel ? *Sould.* And tis hee that ſlayes  
you.

*Monf.* O, is it he ? Tis well : attend him in.  
I muſt be vigilant : the Furies haunt mee.  
Doe you heare dame ?

118 *The Reuenge of Buffy D'Ambois.*

*Enter Renel, with the Souldier.*

*Ren.* Be true now, for your Ladies iniur'd sake,  
Whose bountie you haue so much cause to honour:  
For her respect is chiefe in this designe,  
And therefore serue it, call out of the vway  
All your confederate fellowes of his Guard,  
Till Monsieur Baligny be enter'd here.

*Sould.* Vpon your honour, my Lord shall be free  
From any hurt you say.

*Ren.* Free as my selfe. Watch then, and cleare  
his entrie.

*Ren.* I will not faile, my Lord. *Exit Souldier.*

*Ren.* God faue your Lordship.

*Monf.* My noblest Lord *Renel!* past all men wel-  
come.

Wife, vwelcome his Lordship. *Osculatur.*

*Ren.* I much ioy in your returne here.

*Tamy.* You doe more then I.

*Monf.* Shee's passionate still, to thinke we euer  
parted,

By my too sterne iniurious Ieloufie.

*Ren.* Tis well your Lordship will confesse your  
error

In so good time yet. *Enter Baligny with a Challenge.*

*Monf.* Death! Who haue wee here?

Ho! Guard! Villaines! *Bal.* Why exclaime you  
so.

*Monf.* Negligent Trayters! Murther, murther,  
murther.

*Bal.* Ye'are mad. Had mine entent beene so,  
like yours,

It had beene done ere this.

*Ren.* Sir, your intent,  
And action too, was rude to enter thus.

*Bal.* Y'are a decaid Lord to tell me of rudenesse,  
As much decaid in manners as in meanes.

*The Reuenge of Buffy D'Ambois.* 119

*Ren.* You talke of manners, that thus rudely  
thrust  
Vpon a man that's bufie with his Wife.  
*Bal.* And kept your Lordship then the dore. *Ren.*  
The dore ?  
*Mont.* Sweet Lord forbear. Show, fhow your  
purpcfe fir.  
To moue fuch bold feete into others roofes.  
*Bal.* This is my purpofe fir, from Clermont D'Am-  
bois  
I bring this Challenge.  
*Mon.* Challenge ! Ile touch none. *Bal.* Ile leaue  
it here then.  
*Ren.* Thou fhalt leaue thy life firft. *Mont.* Mur-  
ther, murther !  
*Ren.* Retire my Lord ; get off.  
Hold, or thy death fhall hold thee. Hence my Lord.  
*Bal.* There lye the Chalenge. *They all fight and*  
*Bal. driues in Mont. Exit Mont.*  
*Ren.* Was not this well handled ?  
*Bal.* Nobly my Lord. All thankes. *Exit Bal.*  
*Tamy.* Ile make him reade it. *Exit Tamy.*  
*Ren.* This was a fleight well maskt. O what is  
man,  
Vnleffe he be a Politician ! *Exit.*

*Finis Actus primi.*

---

Actus secundi Scæna prima.

---

*Henry, Baligny.*

*Hen.* **C**ome Baligny, we now are priuate: Say,  
What seruice bring'st thou? make it short;  
the Gulfe

(Whose friend thou seem'st) is now in Court, and  
neare,

And may obserue vs.

*Bal.* This fir, then in short.

The faction of the Guise (with which my policie,  
For seruice to your Highnesse seemes to ioyne)  
Growes ripe, and must be gather'd into hold;  
Of which my Brother Clermont being a part  
Exceeding capitall, deserues to haue  
A capitall eye on him. And (as you may  
With best aduantage, and your speediest charge,)  
Command his apprehension: which (because  
The Court, you know, is strong in his defence)  
Wee must aske Country swindge and open fields.  
And therefore I haue wrought him to goe downe  
To Cambray with me (of which Gouvernement  
Your Highnesse bountie made mee your Lieutenant)  
Where when I haue him, I will leaue my house,  
And faine some seruice out about the confines,  
When in the meane time, if you please to giue  
Command to my Lieutenant, by your Letters,  
To traîne him to some muster, where he may

*The Reuenge of Buffy D'Ambois.* 121

(Much to his honour) see for him, your forces  
Put into Battaile ; when hee comes, hee may  
With some clofe stratageme be apprehended :  
For otherwife your whole powers there will faile  
To worke his apprehension : and with that  
My hand needes neuer be discern'd therein.

*Hen.* Thankes honest Baligny.

*Bal.* Your Highnesse knowes  
I will be honest ; and betray for you  
Brother and Father : for, I know (my Lord)  
Treacherie for Kings is truest Loyaltie ;  
Nor is to beare the name of Treacherie,  
But graue, deepe Policie. All acts that seeme  
Ill in particular respects, are good  
As they respect your vniuersall Rule.  
As in the maine sway of the vniuerse  
The supream Rectors generall decrees,  
To guard the mightie Globes of Earth and Heauen,  
Since they make good that guard to preferuation  
Of both those in their order and first end,  
No mans particular (as hee thinkes) wrong  
Must hold him wrong'd : no, not though all mens  
    reasons,  
All Law, all conscience, concludes it wrong.  
Nor is comparifon a flatterer  
To liken you here to the King of kings ;  
Nor any mans particular offence  
Against the worlds sway ; to offence at yours  
In any subiect ; who as little may  
Grudge at their particular wrong ; if so it seeme  
For th'vniuersall right of your estate.  
As (being a Subiect of the Worlds whole sway  
As well as yours ; and being a righteous man  
To whom Heauen promises defence, and blessing,  
Brought to decay, disgrace, and quite defencelesse)  
Hee may complaine of Heauen for wrong to him.

*Hen.* Tis true : the Simile at all parts holds,  
As all good Subiects hold, that loue our fauour.

*Bal.* Which is our Heauen here ; and a miserie



122 *The Reuenge of Buffy D'Ambois.*

Incomparable, and most truely Hellish  
To liue depriu'd of our Kings grace and countenance,  
Without which best conditions are most curfed :  
Life of that nature, howfoeuer fhort,  
Is a most lingering, and tedious life ;  
Or rather no life, but a languishing,  
And an abuse of life.

*Hen.* Tis well conceited.

*Bal.* I thought it not amiffe to yeeld your High-  
neffe

A reason of my fpeeches ; left perhaps  
You might conceiue I flatter'd : which (I know)  
Of all ils vnder heauen you most abhorre.

*Hen.* Still thou art right, my vertuous Baligny,  
For which I thanke and loue thee. Thy aduife  
Ile not forget : Hafte to thy Gouvernement,  
And carry D'Ambois with thee. So farewell. *Exit.*

*Bal.* Your Maieftie fare euer like it felfe.

*Enter Guife.*

*Guife.* My fure Friend Baligny !

*Bal.* Nobleft of Princes !

*Guife.* How ftands the State of Cambray ?

*Bal.* Strong, my Lord,

And fit for feruice : for whose readineffe  
Your creature Clermont D'Ambois, and my felfe  
Ride fhortly downe.

*Guife.* That Clermont is my loue ;  
France neuer bred a nobler Gentleman  
For all parts : he exceeds his Brother Buffy.

*Bal.* I, my Lord ?

*Guife.* Farre : becaufe (befides his valour)  
Hee hath the crowne of man, and all his parts,  
Which Learning is ; and that fo true and vertuous,  
That it giues power to doe, as well as fay  
What euer fits a most accomplisht man ;  
Which Buffy, for his valours feafon, lackt ;  
And fo was rapt with outrage oftentimes

*The Reuenge of Buffy D'Ambois.* 123

Beyond Decorum ; where this absolute Clermont,  
Though (onely for his naturall zeale to right)  
Hee will be fiery, when hee fees it croft ;  
And in defence of it ; yet when he lifts  
Hee can containe that fire, as hid in Embers.

*Bal.* No question, hee's a true, learn'd, Gentleman.

*Guife.* He is as true as Tides, or any Starre  
Is in his motion : And for his rare learning,  
Hee is not (as all else are that seeke knowledge)  
Of taste so much depraue'd, that they had rather  
Delight, and satisfie themselues to drinke  
Of the streame troubled, wandring ne'er so farre  
From the cleare fount, then of the fount it selfe.  
In all ; Romes Brutus is reuiu'd in him,  
Whom hee of industry doth imitate.  
Or rather, as great Troys Euphorbus was  
After Pithagoras ; so is Brutus, Clermont.  
And (were not Brutus a Conspirator)

*Bal.* Conspirator, my Lord ? Doth that empaire  
him ?

Cæsar beganne to tyrannize ; and when vertue,  
Nor the religion of the Gods could serue  
To curbe the insolence of his proud Lawes,  
Brutus would be the Gods iust instrument.  
What said the Princeesse (sweet Antigone)  
In the graue Greeke Tragedian, when the question  
Twixt her and Creon is, for lawes of Kings ?  
Which when he vrges, shee replies on him ;  
Though his Lawes were a Kings, they were not Gods ;  
Nor would shee value Creons written Lawes  
With Gods vnwrit Edicts : since they last not  
This day and the next, but euery day and euer ;  
Where Kings Lawes alter euery day and houre,  
And in that change imply a bounded power.

*Guife.* Well, let vs leaue these vaine disputings  
what

Is to be done, and fall to doing something.  
When are you for your Gouvernement in Cambray ?

*Bal.* When you command, my Lord.

124 *The Revenge of Bussy D'Ambois.*

*Guife.* Nay, that's not fit.  
Continue your designements with the King,  
With all your seruice; onely if I fend  
Respect me as your friend, and loue my Clermont.

*Bal.* Your Highnesse knowes my vowes.

*Guife.* I, tis enough. *Exit Guife. Manet Bal.*

*Bal.* Thus must wee play on both sides, and thus  
harten

In any ill those men whose good wee hate.  
Kings may doe what they list: and for Kings,  
Subiects,

Eyther exempt from censure or exception: *Αυκχανου*  
For, as no mans worth can be iustly iudg'd *δε παντος,*  
But when he shines in some authoritie; *&c.*

So no authoritie should suffer censure *Impossibile est*  
But by a man of more authoritie. *viri cognoscere*  
Great vessels into lesse are emptied neuer, *mentem ac vo-*  
There's a redoundance past their continent *luntatem, pri-*  
euer. *usquam in Ma-*  
*gistratibus appa-*  
*ret.*

These *virtuosi* are the poorest creatures;  
For looke how Spinners weaue out of themselues  
Webs, whose strange matter none before can see; *Sopho. Antig.*  
So these, out of an vnseene good in vertue,  
Make arguments of right, and comfort, in her,  
That clothe them like the poore web of a Spinner.

*Enter Clermont.*

*Cler.* Now, to my Challenge. What's the place,  
the weapon?

*Bal.* Soft fir: let rfirst your Challenge be receiued.  
Hee would not touch, nor see it.

*Cler.* Possible!  
How did you then?

*Bal.* Left it, in his despight.  
But when hee saw mee enter so expectlesse,  
To heare his base exclames of murther, murther,  
Mad mee thinke Noblesse lost, in him quicke buried.

*Cler.* They are the breathing Sepulchres of  
Noblesse:

No trulier noble men, then Lions pictures  
Hung vp for signes, are Lions. Who knowes not, *Quo mollius*  
That Lyons the more soft kept, are more seruire ? *degunt, co*  
And looke how Lyons close kept, fed by hand, *seruilius.*  
Lose quite th'innatiue fire of spirit and greatnesse *Epict.*  
That Lyons free breathe, forraging for prey ;  
And grow so grosse, that mastifes, curs, and mungrils  
Haue spirit to cow them : So our soft French Nobles  
Chain'd vp in ease and numbd securitie,  
Their spirits shrunke vp like their couetous fists,  
And neuer opened but Domitian-like,  
And all his base, obsequious minions  
When they were catching, though it were but flies.  
Besotted with their pezzants loue of gaine,  
Rusting at home, and on each other preying,  
Are for their greatnesse but the greater flaues,  
And none is noble but who scrapes and faues.

*Bal.* Tis base, tis base ; and yet they thinke them  
high.

*Cler.* So Children mounted on their hobby-horse,  
Thinke they are riding, when with wanton toile  
They beare what should beare them. A man may well  
Compare them to those foolish great-spleen'd Cammels,  
That to their high heads, beg'd of Ioue hornes higher;  
Whose most vncomely, and ridiculous pride  
When hee had fatisfied, they could not vse,  
But where they went vpright before, they floopt,  
And bore their heads much lower for their hornes. *Simil.*  
As these high men doe, low in all true grace,  
Their height being priuiledge to all things base.  
And as the foolish Poet that still writ  
All his most selfe-lou'd verse in paper royall,  
Of Partchment rul'd with Lead, smooth'd with the  
Pumice,  
Bound richly vp, and strung with Crimfon strings ;  
Neuer so blest as when hee writ and read  
The Ape-lou'd issue of his braine ; and neuer  
But ioying in himselfe ; admiring euer :  
Yet in his workes behold him, and hee show'd

126 *The Revenge of Buffy D'Ambois.*

Like to a ditcher. So these painted men,  
All fet on out-side, looke vpon within,  
And not a pezzants entrailles you shall finde  
More foule and mezel'd, nor more steru'd of minde.

*Bal.* That makes their bodies fat. I faine would  
know

How many millions of our other Nobles  
Would make one Guife. There is a true tenth Worthy,  
Who (did not one act onely blemish him.)

*Cler.* One act? what one?

*Bal.* One, that (though yeeres past done)  
Sticks by him still, and will distaine him euer.

*Cler.* Good Heauen! wherein? what one act can  
you name

Suppos'd his staine, that Ile not proue his luster?

*Bal.* To fatisfie you, twas the Maffacre.

*Cler.* The Maffacre? I thought twas some such  
blemish.

*Bal.* O it was hainous.

*Cler.* To a brutish sence,

But not a manly reason. Wee so tender  
The vile part in vs, that the part diuine  
We see in hell, and shrinke not. Who was first  
Head of that Maffacre?

*Bal.* The Guife.

*Cler.* Tis nothing so.

Who was in fault for all the slaughters made  
In Ilion, and about it? Were the Greekes?  
Was it not Paris rauishing the Queene  
Of Lacædemon? Breach of shame and faith?  
And all the lawes of Hospitalitie?  
This is the Beastly slaughter made of men,  
When Truth is ouer-throwne, his Lawes corrupted;  
When foules are smother'd in the flatter'd flesh,  
Slaine bodies are no more then Oxen flaine.

*Bal.* Differ not men from Oxen?

*Cler.* Who fayer so?

But see wherein; In the vnderstanding rules  
Of their opinions, liues, and actions;



*The Revenge of Buffy D'Ambois.* 127

In their communities of faith and reason.  
Was not the Wolfe that nourisht *Romulus*  
More humane then the men that did expose him ?

*Bal.* That makes against you.

*Cler.* Not fir, if you note  
That by that deede, the actions difference make  
Twixt men and beasts, and not their names nor  
formes.

Had faith, nor shame, all hospitable rights  
Beene broke by Troy, Greece had not made that  
slaughter.

Had that beene sau'd (saves a Philosopher)  
The Iliads and Odyffes had beene lost,  
Had Faith and true Religion beene prefer'd,  
Religious Guife had neuer massacerd,

*Bal.* Well fir, I cannot when I meete with you  
But thus digresse a little, for my learning,  
From any other businesse I entend.  
But now the voyage, we resolu'd for Cambray,  
I told the Guife beginnes ; and wee must haste.  
And till the Lord *Renel* hath found some meane  
(Conspiring with the Countesse) to make sure  
Your sworne wreake on her Husband (though this  
fail'd)

In my so braue Command, wee'll spend the time,  
Sometimes in training out in Skirmishes,  
And Battailes, all our Troopes and Companies ;  
And sometimes breathe your braue Scotch running  
horse,

That great Guife gaue you, that all th'horfe in France  
Farre ouer-runnes at euey race and hunting  
Both of the Hare and Deere. You shall be honor'd  
Like the great Guife himfelfe, aboue the King.  
And (can you but appease your great-spleen'd Sister,  
For our delaid wreake of your Brothers slaughter)  
At all parts you'll be welcom'd to your wonder.

*Cler.* Ile see my Lord the Guife againe before  
Wee take our iourney.

*Bal.* O fir, by all meanes,



128 *The Revenge of Buffy D'Ambois.*

You cannot be too carefull of his loue,  
That euer takes occasion to be raising  
Your virtues, past the reaches of this age,  
And rankes you with the best of th'ancient Romanes.

*Cler.* That praife at no part moues mee, but the  
worth  
Of all hee can giue others spher'd in him.

*Bal.* Hee yet is thought to entertaine strange  
aymes.

*Cler.* He may be well; yet not as you thinke  
strange.

His strange Aymes are to croffe the common Cuf-  
tome

Of Seruile Nobles; in which hee's so rauisht,  
That quite the Earth he leaues, and vp hee leapes,  
On Atlas shoulders, and from thence lookes downe,  
Viewing how farre off other high ones creepe:  
Rich, poore of reason, wander; All pale looking,  
And trembling but to thinke of their fure deaths,  
Their liues so base are, and so rancke their breaths.  
Which I teach Guife to heighten, and make sweet  
With lifes deare odors, a good minde and name;  
For which, hee onely loues me, and deferues  
My loue and life, which through all deaths I vow:  
Resoluing this (what euer change can be)  
Thou hast created, thou hast ruinde mee. *Exit.*

*Finis Actus secundi.*

---

Actus tertij Scæna prima.

---

*A march of Captaines ouer the Stage.*

*Maillard, Chalon, Aumall following with Souldiers.*

*Mail.* **T**Hese Troopes and companies come in  
with wings :  
So many men, so arm'd, so gallant Horfe,  
I thinke no other Gouernment in France  
So soone could bring together. With such men  
Me thinkes a man might passe th'insulting Pillars  
Of Bacchus and Alcides.

*Chal.* I much wonder  
Our Lord Lieutenant brought his brother downe  
To feast and honour him, and yet now leaues him  
At such an instance.

*Mail.* Twas the Kings command :  
For whom he must leaue Brother, Wife, friend, all  
things.

*Aum.* The confines of his Gouernment, whose  
view  
Is the pretext of his Command, hath neede  
Of no such sodaine expedition.

*Mail.* Wee must not argue that. The Kings Com-  
mand  
Is neede and right enough : and that he serues,  
(As all true Subiects should) without di sputing.

130 *The Reuenge of Buffy D'Ambois.*

*Chal.* But knowes not hee of your Command to  
take

His Brother Clermont ?

*Mail.* No : the Kings will is  
Expreffely to conceale his apprehenfion  
From my Lord Gouvernour. Obferu'd yee not ?  
Againe perufe the Letters. Both you are  
Made my affiftants, and haue right and trust  
In all the waightie secrets like my felfe.

*Aum.* Tis ftrange a man that had, through his life  
paff,  
So fure a foote in vertue and true knowledge,  
As Clermont D'Ambois, fhould be now found  
tripping,  
And taken vp thus, fo to make his fall  
More fteepe and head-long.

*Mail.* It is Vertues fortune,  
To keepe her low, and in her proper place,  
Height hath no roome for her : But as a man  
That hath a fruitfull wife, and euery yeere  
A childe by her, hath euery yeere a month,  
To breathe himfelfe : where hee that gets no childe  
Hath not a nights reft (if he will doe well.)  
So, let one marry this fame barraine Vertue,  
She neuer lets him reft : where fruitfull vice  
Spares her rich drudge, giues him in labour breath ;  
Feedes him with bane, and makes him fat with death.

*Chal.* I fee that good liues neuer can fecure  
Men from bad liuers. Worft men will haue beft  
As ill as they, or heauen to hell they'll wrefte.

*Aum.* There was a merit for this, in the fault  
That Buffy made, for which he (doing pennance)  
Proues that thefe foule adulterous guiltes will runne  
Through the whole bloud, which not the cleare can  
fhunne.

*Mail.* Ile therefore take heede of the baffarding  
Whole innocent races ; tis a fearefull thing.  
And as I am true Batcheler, I fweare,  
To touch no woman (to the coupling ends)

*The Reuenge of Buffy D'Ambois.* 131

Vnlesse it be mine owne wife or my friends.  
I may make bold with him.

*Aum.* Tis safe and common.

The more your friend dares trust, the more deceiue  
him.

And as through dewie vapors the Sunnes forme  
Makes the gay Rainebow, girdle to a storme,  
So in hearts hollow, Friendship (euen the Sunne  
To all good growing in societie)  
Makes his so glorious and diuine name hold  
Collours for all the ill that can be told.

*Mail.* Harke, our last Troopes are come.

*Trumpets within.*

*Chal.* Harke, our last foote. *Drums beate.*

*Mail.* Come, let vs put all quickly into battaile,  
And send for Clermont, in whose honour, all  
This martiall preparation wee pretend.

*Chal.* Wee must bethinke vs, ere wee apprehend  
him,

(Besides our maine strength) of some stratageme  
To make good our feure Command on him ;  
As well to saue blood, as to make him sure :  
For if hee come on his Scotch horse, all France  
Put at the heeles of him, will faile to take him.

*Mail.* What thinke you if wee should disguise a  
brace

Of our best Souldiers in faire Lackies coates,  
And send them for him, running by his side,  
Till they haue brought him in some ambuscado  
We close may lodge for him ; and sodainely  
Lay sure hand on him, plucking him from horse.

*Aum.* It must be sure and strong hand : for if  
once

Hee fees the touch of such a stratageme,  
Tis not the choifest brace of all our Bands  
Can manacle, or quench his fiery hands.

*Mail.* When they haue feaz'd him, the ambush  
shal make in.

132 *The Reuenge of Buffy D'Ambois.*

*Aum.* Doe as you please; his blamelesse spirit  
deferues

(I dare engage my life) of all this, nothing.

*Chal.* Why should all this stirre be then?

*Aum.* Who knowes not

The bumbast politie thrusts into his Gyant,  
To make his wisedome seeme of size as huge,  
And all for sleight encounter of a shade,  
So hee be toucht, hee would haue hainous made?

*Mail.* It may be once so; but so euer, neuer;  
Ambition is abroad, on foote, on horse;  
Faction chokes euery corner, streete, the Court,  
Whose faction tis you know: and who is held  
The fautors right hand: how high his aymes reach,  
Nought but a Crowne can measure. This must fall  
Past shadowes waights; and is most capitall.

*Chal.* No question; for since hee is come to Cam-  
bray

The malecontent, decaid Marqueffe Renel,  
Is come, and new arriu'd; and make partaker  
Of all the entertaining Showes and Feasts  
That welcom'd Clermont to the braue Virago  
His manly Sister. Such wee are esteem'd  
As are our comforts. Marqueffe malecontent  
Comes where hee knowes his vaine hath safest vent.

*Mail.* Let him come at his will, and goe as free,  
Let vs ply Clermont, our whole charge is hee. *Exit.*

*Enter a Gentleman Vsher before Clermont: Renel,  
Charlotte, with two women attendants, with others:  
Showes hauing past within.*

*Char.* This for your Lordships welcome into Cam-  
bray.

*Ren.* Noblest of Ladies, tis beyond all power  
(Were my estate at first full) in my meanes  
To quit or merit.

*Cler.* You come something latter  
From Court my Lord then I: And since newes there

*The Reuenge of Buffy D'Ambois.* 133

Is euery day encreasing with th'affaires,  
Must I not aske now, what the newes is there ?  
Where the Court lyes ? what stirre ? change ? what  
auife

From England, Italie.

*Rin.* You must doe so,  
If you'll be cald a Gentleman well quallified,  
And weare your time and wits in those discourfes.

*Cler.* The Locrian Princes therefore were braue  
Rubers ;

For whofoeuer there came new from Countrie,  
And in the Citie askt, what newes ? was punisht :  
Since commonly fuch braines are most delighted  
With innouations, Gossips tales, and mischiefes :  
But as of Lyons it is said and Eagles,  
That when they goe, they draw their feeres and tal-  
lons

Clofe vp, to shunne rebating of their sharpnesse :  
So our wits sharpnesse, which wee should employ  
In noblest knowledge, wee should neuer waste  
In vile and vulgar admirations.

*Ren.* Tis right : but who, faue onely you, performes  
it,  
And your great brother ? Madame, where is he ?

*Char.* Gone a day since, into the Countries con-  
fines,  
To see their strength, and readinesse for seruice.

*Ren.* Tis well : his fauour with the King hath made  
him  
Most worthily great, and liue right royally.

*Cler.* I : Would hee would not doe so. Honour  
neuer  
Should be esteem'd with wife men, as the price  
And value of their virtuous Seruices,  
But as their signe or Badge : for that bewrayes  
More glory in the outward grace of goodnesse,  
Then in the good it selfe ; and then tis said :  
Who more ioy takes, that men his good aduance,  
Then in the good it selfe, does it by chance.



134 *The Reuenge of Buffy D'Ambois.*

*Char.* My brother fpeakes all principle ; what  
man  
Is mou'd with your foule ? or hath fuch a thought  
In any rate of goodneffe ?

*Cler.* Tis their fault.  
We haue examples of it, cleare and many.  
Demetrius Phalerius, an Orator,  
And (which not oft meete) a Philofopher,  
So great in Athens grew, that he erected  
Three hundred Statues of him ; of all which,  
No ruft, nor length of time corrupted one ;  
But in his life time, all were ouerthrowne.  
And Demades (that paff Demofthenes  
For all extemporall Orations)  
Erected many Statues, which (he liuing)  
Were broke, and melted into Chamber-pots.  
Many fuch ends haue fallen on fuch proud honours,  
No more becaufe the men on whom they fell  
Grew infolent and left their vertues ftate ;  
Then for their hugeneffe, that procur'd their hate :  
And therefore little pompe in men moft great,  
Makes mightily and ftongly to the guard  
Of what they winne by chance, or iuft reward.  
Great and immodest braueries againe,  
Like Statues, much too high made for their bafes,  
Are ouerturn'd as foone, as giuen their places.

*Enter a Meffenger with a Letter.*

*Meffen.* Here is a Letter fir deliuer'd mee,  
Now at the fore-gate by a Gentleman.

*Cler.* What Gentleman ?

*Meff.* Hee would not tell his name ;  
Hee faid, hee had not time enough to tell it,  
And fay the little reft hee had to fay.

*Cler.* That was a merry faying ; he tooke meafure  
Of his deare time like a moft thriftie husband.

*Char.* What newes ?

*Cler.* Strange ones, and fit for a Nouation ;

Waightie, vnheard of, mischieuous enough.

*Ren.* Heauen shield : what are they ?

*Cler.* Read them, good my Lord.

*Ren.* You are betraid into this Countrie. Mon-  
strous !

*Char.* How's that ?

*Cler.* Read on.

*Ren.* Maillard, you brothers Lieutenant, that yef-  
terday inuited you to see his Mufters ; hath Letters  
and ftrickt Charge from the King to apprehend you.

*Char.* To apprehend him ?

*Ren.* Your Brother absents himfelfe of purpofe.

*Cler.* That's a found one.

*Char.* That's a lye.

*Ren.* Get on your Scotch horfe, and retire to your  
ftrength ; you know where it is, and there it expects  
you : Beleeue this as your beft friend had fworne it.  
Fare-well if you will. Anonymos. What's that ?

*Cler.* Without a name.

*Charl.* And all his notice too, without all truth.

*Cler.* So I conceiue it Sifter : ile not wrong

My well knowne Brother for Anonymos,

*Charl.* Some foole hath put this tricke on you, yet  
more

T'vncouer your defect of fpirit and valour.

Firft showne in lingring my deare Brothers wreake.

See what it is to giue the enuious World

Aduantage to diminifh eminent virtue.

Send him a Challenge ? Take a noble courfe

To wreake a murther, done fo like a villaine ?

*Cler.* Shall we reuenge a villanie with villanie ?

*Char.* Is it not equall ?

*Cler.* Shall wee equall be

With villaines ?

Is that your reafon ?

*Char.* Cowardife euermore

Flyes to the shield of Reafon.

*Cler.* Nought that is

136 *The Reuenge of Buffy D'Ambois.*

Approu'd by Reason, can be Cowardife.

*Charl.* Dispute when you should fight. Wrong  
wreakleffe sleeping,  
Makes men dye honorleffe : One borne, another  
Leapes on our shoulders.

*Cler.* Wee must wreake our wrongs  
So, as wee take not more.

*Char.* One wreakt in time  
Preuents all other. Then shines vertue most  
When time is found for facts ; and found, not lost.

*Cler.* No time occurses to Kings, much lesse to  
Vertue ;  
Nor can we call it Vertue that proceedes  
From vicious Fury. I repent that euer  
(By any instigation in th'appearance  
My Brothers spirit made; as I imagin'd)  
That e'er I yeilded to reuenge his murther.  
All worthy men should euer bring their bloud  
To beare all ill, not to be wreakt with good :  
Doe ill for no ill : Neuer priuate cause  
Should take on it the part of publike Lawes.

*Char.* A D'Ambois beare in wrong so tame a  
spirit !

*Ren.* Madame, be fure there will be time enough  
For all the vengeance your great spirit can wish.  
The course yet taken is allow'd by all,  
Which being noble, and refus'd by th'Earle,  
Now makes him worthy of your worst aduantage :  
And I haue cast a proiect with the Countesse  
To watch a time when all his wariest Guards  
Shall not exempt him. Therefore giue him breath ;  
Sure Death delaid is a redoubled Death.

*Cler.* Good Sister trouble not your selfe with this :  
Take other Ladyes care ; practife your face.  
There's the chaste Matron, Madame Perigot,  
Dwels not farre hence, Ile ride and fend her to you,  
Shee did liue by retailing mayden-heads  
In her minoritie : but now shee deales  
In whole-sale altogether for the Court.

I tell you, shee's the onely fashion-monger,  
For your complexion, poudring of your haire,  
Shadowes, Rebatoes, Wires, Tyres, and such trickes,  
That Cambray, or I thinke, the Court affords :  
She shall attend you Sister, and with these  
Womanly practises emply your spirit ;  
This other suites you not, nor fits the fashion.  
Though shee be deare, lay't on, spare for no cost,  
Ladies in these haue all their bounties lost.

*Ren.* Madame, you see, his spirit will not checke  
At any single danger ; when it stands  
Thus merrily firme against an host of men,  
Threaten'd to be armes for his surprise.

*Char.* That's a meere Bugge-beare, an impossible  
mocke.

If hee, and him I bound by nuptiall faith  
Had not beene dull and droffie in performing  
Wreake of the deare bloud of my matchlesse Brother,  
What Prince ? what King ? which of the desperat'st  
Ruffings,

Outlawes in Acden, durst haue tempted thus  
One of our bloud and name, be't true or false.

*Cler.* This is not caus'd by that : twill be as sure  
As yet it is not, though this should be true.

*Char.* True ? tis past thought false.

*Cler.* I suppose the worst,  
Which farre I am from thinking ; and despise  
The Armie now in battaile that should act it.

*Cler.* I would not let my bloud vp to that thought,  
But it should cost the dearest bloud in France.

*Cler.* Sweet Sister, [*osculatur*] farre be both off as  
the fact

Of my fain'd apprehension.

*Char.* I Would once  
Strip off my shame with my attire, and trie  
If a poore woman, votist of reuenge  
Would not performe, it with a president  
To all you bungling foggy-spirited men ;  
But for our birth-rights honour, doe not mention

138 *The Reuenge of Bussy D'Ambois.*

One syllable of any word may goe  
To the begetting of an act so tender,  
And full of sulphure as this Letters truth :  
It comprehends so blacke a circumstance  
Not to be nam'd ; that but to forme one thought,  
It is or can be so ; would make me mad :  
Come my Lord, you and I will fight this dreame  
Out at the Cheffe.

*Ren.* Most gladly, worthiest Ladie.

*Exit Char. and Ren.*

*Enter a Messenger.*

*Mess.* Sir, my Lord Gouvernours Lieutenant prayes  
Accesse to you.

*Cler.* Himselfe alone ?

*Mess.* Alone, sir.

*Cler..* Attend him in. [*Exit Mess.*] Now comes  
this plot to tryall,  
I shall descerne (if it be true as rare)  
Some sparkes will flye from his dissembling eyes.  
He found his depth.

*Enter Maillard with the Messenger.*

*Maill.* Honour, and all things noble.

*Cler.* As much to you good Captaine. What's  
th' affaire.

*Maill.* Sir, the poore honour we can adde to all  
Your studied welcome to this martiall place,  
In presentation of what strength consists  
My Lord your Brothers Gouvernment is readie.  
I haue made all his Troopes and Companies  
Aduance, and put themfelues randg'd in Battailia,  
That you may see, both how well arm'd they are ;  
How strong is euery Troope and Companie ;  
How ready, and how well prepar'd for seruice,

*Cler.* And must they take mee ?

*Maill.* Take you, sir ? O Heauen !



*The Reuenge of Bussy D'Ambois.* 139

*Mess.* Beleeue it fir, his count'nance chang'd in turning.

*Mail.* What doe you meane fir ?

*Cler.* If you haue charg'd them,  
You being charg'd your selfe, to apprehend mee,  
Turne not your face : throw not your lookes about so.

*Mail.* Pardon me fir. You amaze me to conceiue  
From whence our wils to honour you, should turne  
To such dishonour of my Lord your Brother.  
Dare I, without him, vndertake your taking ?

*Cler.* Why not ? by your direct charge from the  
King ?

*Mail.* By my charge from the King ? would he so  
much

Disgrace my Lord, his owne Lieutenant here,  
To giue me his Command without his forfait ?

*Cler.* Acts that are done by Kings, are not askt  
why.

Ile not dispute the case, but I will search you.

*Mail.* Search mee ? for what ?

*Cler.* For Letters.

*Mail.* I befeech you,  
Doe not admit one thought of such a shame  
To a Commander.

*Cler.* Goe to : I must doo't.  
Stand and be searcht ; you know mee.

*Mail.* You forget  
What tis to be a Captaine, and your selfe.

*Cler.* Stand, or I vow to heauen, Ile make you  
lie

Neuer to rife morc.

*Mail.* If a man be mad  
Reason must beare him.

*Cler.* So coy to be searcht ?

*Mail.* Sdeath fir, vse a Captaine like a Carrier.

*Cler.* Come, be not furious ; when I haue done  
You shall make such a Carrier of me  
If't be your pleasure : you're my friend I know,  
And so am bold with you.



140 *The Reuenge of Buffy D'Ambois.*

*Mail.* You'll nothing finde  
Where nothing is.

*Cler.* Swear you haue nothing.

*Mail.* Nothing you seeke, I sweare, I befeech you,  
Know I desir'd this out of great affection,  
To th'end my Lord may know out of your witnesse,  
His Forces are not in so bad estate  
As hee esteem'd them lately in your hearing :  
For which he would not trust me with the Confines ;  
But went himselfe to witnesse their estate.

*Cler.* I heard him make that reason, and am sorie  
I had no thought of it before I made  
Thus bold with you ; since tis such Ruberb to you.  
Ile therefore searck no more. If you are charg'd  
(By Letters from the King, or otherwise)  
To apprehend me ; neuer spice it more  
With forc'd tearmes of your loue, but say : I yeeld ;  
Holde ; take my sword ; here ; I forgiue thee freely ;  
Take ; doe thine office.

*Mail.* Sfoote, you make m'a hang-man :  
By all my faith to you, there's no such thing.

*Cler.* Your faith to mee ?

*Mail.* My faith to God : All's one,  
Who hath no faith to men, to God hath none.

*Cler.* In that sence I accept your othe, and thanke  
you.

I gaue my word to goe, and I will goe. *Exit Cler.*

*Mail.* Ile watch you whither. *Exit Mail.*

*Meff.* If hee goes, hee proues  
How vaine are mens fore knowledges of things,  
When heauen strikes blinde their powers of note and  
vse ;

And makes their way to ruine seeme more right,  
Then that which safetie opens to their fight.  
Caffandra's prophecie had no more profit  
With Troyes blinde Citizens, when shee fore-tolde  
Troyes ruine : which succeeding, made her vse  
This sacred Inclamation ; God (said thee)  
Would haue me vtter things vncredited :

*The Reuenge of Bussy D'Ambois.* 141

For which now they approue what I prefag'd ;  
They count me wife, that faid before I rag'd.

*Enter Challon with two Souldiers.*

*Chal.* Come Souldiers : you are downe-wards fit  
for lackies ;  
Giue me your Pieces, and take you these Coates,  
To make you compleate foot men ; in whose formes  
You must be compleate Souldiers : you two onely  
Stand for our Armie.

1. That were much.

*Chal.* Tis true,  
You two must doe, or enter, what our Armie  
Is now in field for.

2. I see then our guerdon  
Must be the deede it felse, twill be such honour.

*Chal.* What fight Souldiers most for ?

1. Honour onely.

*Chal.* Yet here are crownes beside.

*Ambo.* We thanke you Captaine.

2. Now fir, how show wee ?

*Chal.* As you should at all parts.

Goe now to Clermont D'Ambois, and informe him,  
Two Battailes are fet ready in his honour,  
And stay his prefence onely for their signall,  
When they shall ioyne : and that t'attend him hither,  
Like one wee so much honour, wee haue sent him

1 Vs two in person.

*Chal.* Well fir, say it so.

And hauing brought him to the field, when I  
Fall in with him, saluting, get you both  
Of one side of his horse, and plucke him downe,  
And I with th'ambush laid, will second you.

1 Nay, we shall lay on hands of too much strength  
To neede your secondings.

2 I hope, we shall.

Two are enough to encounter Hercules.

142 *The Reuenge of Buffy D'Ambois.*

*Chal.* Tis well faid worthy Souldiers : haft, and  
haft him.

*Enter Clermont, Maillard clofe following him.*

*Cler.* My Scotch horfe to their Armie.

*Mail.* Pleafe you fir ?

*Cler.* Sdeath you're paffing diligent.

*Mail.* Of my foule

Tis onely in my loue to honour you  
With what would grace the King : but fince I fee  
You ftill fustaine a iealous eye on mee,  
Ile goe before.

*Cler.* Tis well ; Ile come ; my hand.

*Mail.* Your hand fir ? Come, your word, your  
choife be vs'd. *Exit.*

*Clermont folus.*

*Cler.* I had an auerfation to this voyage,  
When firft my Brother mou'd it ; and haue found  
That native power in me was neuer vaine ;  
Yet now neglected it, I wonder much  
At my inconstancie in thefe decrees,  
I euery houre fet downe to guide my life.  
When Homer made Achilles passionate,  
Wrathfull, reuengefull, and infatiate  
In his affections ; what man will denie,  
He did compofe it all of industrie,  
To let men fee, that men of moft renowne,  
Strong'ft, nobleft, faireft, if they fet not downe  
Decrees within them, for difpofing thefe,  
Of Iudgement, Refolution, Vprightneffe,  
And certaine knowledge, of their vfe and ends  
Mifhap and miferie no leffe extends  
To their detruktion ; with all that they pris'd,  
Then to the pooreft, and the moft despis'd.

*The Reuenge of Buffy D'Ambois.* 143

*Enter Renel.*

*Ren.* Why, how now friend? retir'd? take heede  
you proue not  
Dismaid with this strange fortune: all obserue you.  
Your gouernment's as much markt as the Kings.  
What said a friend to Pompey?

*Cler.* What?

*Ren.* The people  
Will neuer know, vnlesse in death thou trie,  
That thou know'st how to beare aduersitie.

*Cler.* I shall approue how vile I value feare  
Of death at all times: but to be too rash,  
Without both will and care to shunne the worst,  
(It being in power to doe, well and with cheere)  
Is stupid negligence, and worse then feare.

*Ren.* Suppose this true now.

*Cler.* No, I cannot doo't.  
My sifter truely said; there hung a taile  
Of circumstance so blacke on that supposure,  
That to sustaine it thus, abhorr'd our mettall.  
And I can shunne it too, in spight of all:  
Not going to field: and there too, being so mounted  
As I will, since I goe.

*Ren.* You will then goe?

*Cler.* I am engag'd both in my word, and hand;  
But this is it, that makes me thus retir'd,  
To call my selfe t'account, how this affaire  
Is to be manag'd if the worst should chance:  
With which I note, how dangerous it is,  
For any man to prease beyond the place,  
To which his birth, or meanes, or knowledge ties  
him,

For my part, though of noble birth my birth-right  
Had little left it, and I know tis better  
To liue with little; and to keepe within  
A mans owne strength still, and in mans true end,  
Then runne a mixt course. Good and bad hold neuer  
Any thing common: you can neuer finde

144 *The Reuenge of Buffy D'Ambois.*

Things outward care, but you neglect your minde.  
 God hath the whole world perfect made and free ;  
 His parts to th' vse of th'all ; men then that are  
 Parts of that all, must as the generall sway  
 Of that importeth, willingly obey  
 In euery thing without their power to change.  
 Hee that vnpleas'd to hold his place, will range,  
 Can in no other be contain'd that's fit,  
 And so resisting th'All, is crusht with it.  
 But he that knowing how diuine a Frame  
 The whole world is : and of it all, can name  
 (Without selfe-flatterie) no part so diuine,  
 As hee himselfe ; and therefore will confine  
 Freely, his whole powers, in his proper part,  
 Goes on most God-like. Hee that striues i'nuert  
 The Vniuersals course with his poore way,  
 Not onely dust-like shivers with the sway,  
 But crossing God in his great worke ; all earth  
 Beares not so curfed, and so damn'd a birth.

*Ren.* Goe, on ; Ile take no care what comes of  
 you ;

Heauen will not see it ill, how ere it show :  
 But the pretext to see these Battailes rang'd  
 Is much your honour.

*Cler.* As the world esteemes it.

But to decide that ; you make me remember  
 An accident of high and noble note,  
 And fits the subiect of my late discourse,  
 Of holding on our free and proper way.  
 I ouer-tooke, comming from Italie,  
 In Germanie, a great and famous Earle  
 Of England ; the most goodly fashion'd man  
 I euer saw : from head to foote in forme  
 Rare, and most absolute ; hee had a face  
 Like one of the most ancient honour'd Romanes,  
 From whence his noblest Familie was deriu'd ;  
 He was beside of spirit passing great,  
 Valiant, and learn'd, and liberall as the Sunne,  
 Spoke and writ sweetly, or of learned subiects,



Or of the discipline of publike weales ;  
And t'was the Earle of Oxford : and being offer'd  
At that time, by Duke Caffimere, the view  
Of his right royall Armie then in field ;  
Refus'd it, and no foote was mou'd, to stirre  
Out of his owne free fore-determin'd course :  
I wondring at it, askt for it his reason,  
It being an offer so much for his honour.  
Hee, all acknowledging, said, t'was not fit  
To take those honours that one cannot quit.

*Ren.* Twas answer'd like the man you haue describ'd.

*Cler.* And yet he cast it onely in the way,  
To stay and serue the world. Nor did it fit  
His owne true estimate how much it waigh'd,  
For hee despis'd it ; and esteem'd it freer  
To keepe his owne way straight, and swore that hee  
Had rather make away his whole estate  
In things that crost the vulgar, then he would  
Be frozen vp, stiffe, like a fir Iohn Smith  
(His Countrey-man) in common Nobles fashions ;  
Affecting, as the end of Noblesse were  
Those seruile obseruations.

*Ren.* It was strange.

*Cler.* O tis a vexing sight to see a man  
Out of his way, stalke, proud as hee were in ;  
Out of his way to be officious,  
Obseruant, wary, serious, and graue,  
Fearefull, and passionate, insulting, raging,  
Labour with iron Flailes, to thresh downe feathers  
Flitting in ayre.

*Ren.* What one considers this,  
Of all that are thus out ? or once endeuours,  
Erring to enter, on mans Right-hand path ?

*Cler.* These are too graue for braue wits : giue them  
toyes,  
Labour bestow'd on these is harsh and thriftlesse.  
If you would Confull be (sayes one) of Rome,  
You must be watching, starting out of sleepes ;



146 *The Reuenge of Buffy D'Ambois.*

Euery way whisking ; gloryfying Plebeians,  
Kiffing Patricians hands, Rot at their dores ;  
Speake and doe basely ; euery day bestow  
Gifts and obseruance vpon one or other :  
And what's th'euent of all ? Twelue Rods before thee,  
Three or foure times fit for the whole Tribunall.  
Exhibite Circean Games ; make publike feasts,  
And for these idle outward things (fayes he)  
Would'ft thou lay on such cost, toile, spend thy spirits.  
And to be voide of perturbation  
For constancie : sleepe when thou would'ft haue sleepe,  
Wake when thou would'ft wake, feare nought, vexe for  
nought,

No paines wilt thou bestow ? no cost ? no thought ?

*Ren.* What should I say ? as good confort with  
you,

As with an Angell : I could heare you euer.

*Cler.* Well ; in, my Lord, and spend time with my  
Sister ;

And keepe her from the Field with all endeauour ;  
The Souldiers loue her so ; and shee so madly  
Would take my apprehension, if it chance,  
That bloud would flow in riuers.

*Ren.* Heauen forbid ;

And all with houour your arriual speede. *Exit.*

*Enter Messenger with two Souldiers like Lackies.*

*Mess.* Here are two Lackies sir, haue message to  
you.

*Cler.* What is your message ? and from whom, my  
friends ?

1 From the Lieutenant Colonell, and the Cap-  
taines,

Who sent vs to informe you, that the Battailes  
Stand ready rang'd, expecting but your presence,  
To be their honor'd signall when to ioyne,  
Ane we are charg'd to runne by, and attend you.

*Cler.* I come. I pray you see my running horse

*The Reuenge of Buffy D'Ambois.* 147

Brought to the backe-gate to mee.

*Meff.* Instantly. *Exit Meff.*

*Cler.* Chance what can chance mee ; well or ill is  
equall

In my acceptance, since I ioy in neyther ;  
But goe with fway of all the world together.  
In all successes, Fortune and the day  
To mee alike are ; I am fixt, be shee  
Neuer so fickle ; and will there repose,  
Farre past the reach of any Dye she throwes.

*Ex. cum Pedissj.*

*Finis Actus tertij.*

---

Actus quarti Scæna prima.

---

*Alarum within : Excursions ouer thee Stage.*

*The Lackies running, Maillard following them.*

*Mail.* Villaines, not hold him when ye had him  
downe.

1 Who can hold lightning ? Sdeath a man as well  
Might catch a Canon Bullet in his mouth,  
And spit it in your hands, as take and hold him.

*Mail.* Purfue ; enclose him ; stand, or fall on him,

148 *The Reuenge of Bussy D'Ambois.*

And yee may take him. Sdeath, they make him guards.  
*Exit.*

*Alarum still, and enter Chalon.*

*Chal.* Stand Cowards, stand, strike, send your bullets at him.

1 Wee came to entertaine him fir, for honour.

2 Did ye not fay so? *Chal.* Slaues, hee is a traitor;

Command the horse troopes to ouer-runne the traitor.  
*Exit.*

*Showts within. Alarum still, and Chambers shot off.  
Then enter Aumall.*

*Aum.* What spirit breathes thus, in this more then man,

Turnes flesh to ayre poffest, and in a storme,  
Teares men about the field like Autumne leaues?  
He turnd wilde lightning in the Lackies hands,  
Who, though their fodaine violent twitch vnhorst him,  
Yet when he bore himselfe, their faucie fingers  
Flew as too hot off, as hee had beene fire.  
The ambush then made in, through all whose force,  
Hee draue as if a fierce and fire-giuen Canon  
Had spit his iron vomit out amongst them.  
The Battailes then, in two halfe-moones enclos'd him,  
In which he shew'd, as if he were the light,  
And they but earth, who wondring what hee was;  
Shruncke their steele hornes, and gaue him glorious  
passe:

And as a great shot from a towne besieg'd,  
At foes before it, flyes forth blacke and roring,  
But they too farre, and that with waight opprest,  
(As if disdaining earth) doth onely grafe,  
Strike earth, and vp againe into the ayre;  
Againe sinkes to it, and againe doth rise,  
And keepes such strength that when it softliest moues,

*The Reuenge of Buffy D'Ambois.* 149

It piece-meale shiuers any let it proues :  
So flew braue Clermont forth, till breath forfooke him,  
His spirits conuulsions made him bound againe,  
Past all their reaches ; till all motion spent,  
His fixt eyes cast a blaze of such disdaine,  
All stood and star'd, and vntouch'd let him lie,  
As something sacred fallen out of the skie.

*A cry within.*

O now some rude hand hath laid hold on him !

*Enter Maillard, Chalon leading Clermont, Captaines  
and Souldiers following.*

See, prifoner led, with his bands honour'd more,  
Then all the freedome he enioy'd before.

*Mail.* At length wee haue you fir.

*Cler.* You haue much ioy too,  
I made you sport yet, but I pray you tell mee,  
Are not you periur'd ?

*Mail.* No : I swore for the King.

*Cler.* Yet periurie I hope is periurie.

*Mail.* But thus forswearing is not periurie  
You are no Politician : not a fault,  
How foule foeuer, done for priuate ends,  
Is fault in vs sworne to the publike good :  
Wee neuer can be of the damned crew,  
Wee may impolitique our selues (as t'were)  
Into the Kingdomes body politique,  
Whereof indeede we're members : you misse terme's.

*Cler.* The things are yet the same.

*Mail.* Tis nothing so : the propertie is alter'd :  
Y'are no Lawyer. Or say that othe and othe  
Are still the same in number, yet their species  
Differ extreamely, as for flat example,  
When politique widowes trye men for their turne,  
Before they wed them, they are harlots then,  
But when they wed them, they are honest women :  
So, priuate men, when they forweare, betray,  
Are periur'd treachers, but being publique once,

150 *The Reuenge of Buffy D'Ambois.*

That is, fworne, married to the publique good.

*Cler.* Are married women publique ?

*Mail.* Publique good ;

For marriage makes them, being the publique good,  
And could not be without them. So I say

Men publique, that is, being fworne or married  
To the good publique, being one body made  
With the Realmes body politique, are no more  
Priuate, nor can be periur'd, though forfworne,  
More then a widow married, for the a $\text{c}$ t

Of generation is for that an harlot,

Because for that shee was so, being vnmarried :

An argument *a paribus*. *Chal.* Tis a shrow'd one.

*Cler.* Who hath no faith to men, to God hath  
none :

Retaine you that Sir ? who said so ? *Mail.* Twas I.

*Cler.* Thy owne tongue damne thine infidelitie.

But Captaines all you know me nobly borne,  
Vse yee t'assault such men as I with Lackyes.

*Chal.* They are no Lackyes fir, but Souldiers,  
Disguis'd in Lackyes coates.

*i* Sir, wee haue seene the enimie.

*Cler.* Auant yee Rascols, hence.

*Mail.* Now leaue your coates.

*Cler.* Let me not see them more.

*Aum.* I grieue that vertue liues so vndistinguisht  
From vice in any ill, and though the crowne  
Of Soueraigne Law ; shee should be yet her foot-stoole,  
Subiect to censure, all the shame and paine  
Of all her rigor.

*Cler.* Yet false policie  
Would couer all, being like offenders hid,  
That (after notice taken where they hide)  
The more they crouch and stirre, the more are spide.

*Aum.* I vvonder how this chanc'd you.

*Cler.* Some informer,  
Bloud-hound to mischiefe, vs her to the Hangman,  
Thirstie of honour for some huge state a $\text{c}$ t,  
Perceiuing me great vvith the vvorthy Guife :



*The Reuenge of Buffy D'Ambois.* 151

And he (I know not vvhy) held dangerous,  
Made me the desperate organe of his danger,  
Onely vvith that poore colour : tis the common  
And more then vvhore-like tricke of treacherie,  
And vermine bred to rapine, and to ruine :  
For vvhich this fault is ftill to be accus'd,  
Since good acts faile, crafts and deceits are vs'd.  
If it be other neuer pittie mee.

*Aum.* Sir, vve are glad, beleeeue it, and haue hope  
The King vvill fo conceit it.

*Cler.* At his pleasure.

In meane time, vvhat's your vvill Lord Lieutenant ?

*Mail.* To leaue your owne horfe, and to mount the  
trumpets.

*Cler.* It shall be done : this heauily preuents  
My purpos'd recreation in these parts ;  
Which now I thinke on : let mee begge you fir,  
To lend me some one Captaine of your Troopes,  
To beare the message of my haplesse seruice,  
And miserie, to my most noble mistresse,  
Countesse of Cambray : to whose house this night  
I promise my repaire, and know most truely,  
With all the ceremonies of her fauour,  
She sure expects mee. *Mail.* Thinke you now on  
that ?

*Cler.* On that, fir ? I, and that so worthily,  
That if the King, in spight of your great seruice,  
Would fend me instant promise of enlargement,  
Condition I would set this message by,  
I would not take it, but had rather die.

*Aum.* Your message shall be done fir : I my felfe  
Will be for you a messenger of ill.

*Cler.* I thanke you fir, and doubt not yet to liue  
To quite your kindnesse.

*Aum.* Meane space vse your spirit  
And knowledge for the chearfull patience  
Of this so strange and fodaine consequence.

*Cler.* Good fir, beleeeue that no perticular torture  
Can force me from my glad obedience



152 *The Revenge of Buffy D'Ambois.*

To any thing the high and generall cause,  
To match with his whole Fabricke, hath ordainde,  
And know yee all (though farre from all your aymes,  
Yet worth them all, and all mens endlesse studies)  
That in this one thing, all the discipline  
Of manners, and of manhood is contain'd ;  
A man to ioyne himfelfe with th'Vniuerse,  
In his maine fway, and make (in all things fit)  
One with that all, and goe on, round as it ;  
Not plucking from the whole his wretched part,  
And into straites, or into nought reuert,  
Wishing the compleate Vniuerse might be  
Subiect to fuch a ragge of it as hee :  
But to confider great neceffitie  
All things as well refract, as voluntarie  
Reduceth to the prime ceftiall caufe,  
Which he that yeelds to with a mans applaufe,  
And cheeke, by cheeke, goes ; croffing it, no breath,  
But like Gods Image, followes to the death,  
That man is truly wife, and euery thing,  
(Each caufe, and euery part diftinguifhing)  
In Nature, with enough Art vnderftands,  
And that full glory merits at all hands,  
That doth the whole world at all parts adorne,  
And appertaines to one ceftiall borne.

*Exeunt omnes.*

*Enter Baligny, Renel.*

*Bal.* So foule a scandall neuer man fustain'd,  
Which caus'd by'th King, is rude and tyrannous :  
Giue me a place, and my Lieutenant make  
The filler of it.

*Ren.* I fhould neuer looke  
For better of him ; neuer trust a man,  
For any Iuftice, that is rapt with pleafure :  
To order armes well, that makes fmockes his enfignes,  
And his whole Gouvernements fayles: you heard of  
late,

*The Reuenge of Buffy D'Ambois.* 153

Hee had the foure and twenty wayes of Venerie  
Done all before him.

*Bal.* Twas abhorr'd and beaftly.

*Ren.* Tis more then natures mightie hand can  
doe

To make one humane and a Letcher too.  
Looke how a Wolfe doth like a Dogge appeare,  
So, like a friend is an Adulterer,  
Voluptuaries, and these belly-gods ;  
No more true men are, then fo many Toads.  
A good man happy, is a common good ;  
Vile men aduanc'd liue of the common bloud.

*Bal.* Giue and then take like children.

*Ren.* Bounties are  
As foone repented as they happen rare.

*Bal.* What should Kings doe, and men of eminent  
places ;

But as they gather, fow gifts to the Graces ?  
And where they haue giuen, rather giue againe,  
(Being giuen for vertue) then like Babes and fooles,  
Take and repent Gifts ; why are wealth and power ?

*Rcn.* Power and wealth moue to tyranny, not  
bountie ;

The Merchant for his wealth is fwolne in minde,  
When yet the chiefe Lord of it is the Winde.

*Bal.* That may fo chance to our State-Merchants  
too :

Something performed, that hath not farre to goe.

*Rcn.* That's the maine point, my Lord ; infift on  
that.

*Bal.* But doth this fire rage further ? hath it taken  
The tender tynder of my wifes fere bloud ?  
Is shee fo passionate ?

*Ren.* So wilde, fo mad,  
Shee cannot liue, and this vnwreakt sustaine.  
The woes are bloody that in women raigne.  
The Sicile gulfe keepes feare in leffe degree ;  
There is no Tyger, not more tame then shee.

*Bal.* There is no looking home then ?

154 *The Reuenge of Buffy D'Ambois.*

*Ren.* Home ? Medea  
With all her hearbs, charmes, thunders, lightnings,  
Made not her prefence, and blacke hants more dread-  
full.

*Bal.* Come, to the King, if he reforme not all,  
Marke the euent, none stand where that muft fall.

*Exeunt.*

*Enter Counteffe, Rioua, and an Vsher.*

*Vsh.* Madame, a Captaine come from Clermont  
D'Ambois  
Defires acceffe to you.

*Count.* And not himfelfe ? *Vsh.* No, Madame.

*Count.* That's not vvell. Attend him in. *Exit. Vsh.*  
The laft houre of his promife now runne out  
And he breake ? fome brack's in the frame of nature  
That forceth his breach.

*Enter Vsher and Aumal.*

*Aum.* Saue your Ladifhip.

*Coun.* All welcome. Come you from my worthy  
feruant ?

*Aum.* I, Madame, and conferre fuch newes from  
him.

*Coun.* Such newes ? vvhat newes ?

*Aum.* Newes that I wifh fome other had the  
charge of.

*Coun.* O vvhat charge ? vvhat newes ?

*Aum.* Your Ladifhip muft vfe fome patience  
Or elfe I cannot doe him that defire,  
He vrg'd vvith fuch affection to your Graces.

*Coun.* Doe it ; for heauens loue doe it, if you ferue  
His kinde defires, I vvill haue patience.

Is hee in health ? *Aum.* He is.

*Count.* Why, that's the ground  
Of all the good eftate wee hold in earth ;  
All our ill built vpon that, is no more

*The Reuenge of Bussy D'Ambois.* 155

Then wee may beare, and should; expresse it all.

*Aum.* Madame, tis onely this; his libertie.

*Coun.* His libertie ! Without that health is nothing.  
Why liue I, but to aske in doubt of that,  
Is that bereft him ? *Aum.* You'll againe preuent me.

*Coun.* No more, I sweare, I must heare, and together

Come all my miserie. Ile hold though I burst.

*Aum.* Then madame, thus it fares ; he was enuited  
By vway of honour to him, to take view  
Of all the Powers his brother Baligny  
Hath in his gouernment ; vvhich rang'd in battailes,  
Mailiard, Lieutenant to the Gouvernour,  
Hauing receiu'd strickt Letters from the King,  
To traine him to the musters, and betray him,  
To their supprise, which, with Chalon in chiefe,  
And other Captaines (all the field put hard  
By his incredible valour for his scape)  
They haplesly and guiltlesly perform'd,  
And to Bastile hee's now led prisoner.

*Count.* What change is here ? how are my hopes  
preuented ?

O my most faithfull seruant ; thou betraid ?  
Will Kings make treason lawfull ? Is Societie  
(To keepe which onely Kings vvere first ordain'd)  
Lesse broke in breaking faith twixt friend and friend,  
Then twixt the King and Subiect ? let them feare,  
Kings Presidents in licence lacke no danger.  
Kings are compar'd to Gods, and should be like them,  
Full in all right, in nought superfluous ;  
Nor nothing straining past right, for their right :  
Raigne iustly, and raigne safely. Policie  
Is but a Guard corrupted, and a way  
Venter'd in Defarts, vwithout guide or path.  
Kings punish Subiects errors vvith their owne.  
Kings are like Archers, and their Subiects, shafts :  
For as when Archers let their arrowes flye,  
They call to them, and bid them flye or fall,  
As if twere in the free power of the shaft

156 *The Reuenge of Buffy D'Ambois.*

To flye or fall, vwhen onely tis the strength,  
Straight shooting, compasse giuen it by the Archer,  
That makes it hit or misse ; and doing eyther,  
Hee's to be prais'd or blam'd, and not the shaft :  
So Kings to Subiects crying, doe, doe not this ;  
Must to them by their owne examples strength,  
The straightnesse of their acts, and equall compasse,  
Giue Subiects power t'obey them in the like ;  
Not shoote them forth with faultie ayme and strength,  
And lay the fault in them for flying amisse,

*Aum.* But for your seruant, I dare sweare him  
guiltlesse.

*Count.* Hee would not for his Kingdome traitor  
be ;

His Lawes are not so true to him, as he.  
O knew I how to free him, by way forc'd  
Through all their armie, I would flye, and doe it :  
And had I, of my courage and resolue,  
But tenne such more, they should not all retaine him ;  
But I will neuer die, before I giue  
Maillard an hundred slashes with a sword,  
Chalon an hundred breaches with a Pistoll.  
They could not all haue taken Clermont D'Ambois,  
Without their treacherie ; he had bought his bands  
out

With their slaue blouds : but he was credulous ;  
Hee would beleue, since he would be beleeu'd ;  
Your noblest natures are most credulous.  
Who giues no trust, all trust is apt to breake ;  
Hate like hell mouth, who thinke not what they  
speake.

*Aum.* Well, Madame, I must tender my attend-  
ance

On him againe. Will't please you to returne  
No seruice to him by me ?

*Count.* Fetch me straight  
My little Cabinet. [*Exit Ancil.*] Tis little tell him,  
And much too little for his matchlesse loue :  
But as in him the worths of many men



*The Revenge of Bussy D'Ambois.* 157

Are close contracted ; [*Intr. Ancil.*] so in this are  
Jewels

Worth many Cabinets. Here, with this (good fir)  
Commend my kindest service to my servant,  
Thanke him, with all my comforts ; and, in them  
With all my life for them : all sent from him  
In his remembrance of mee, and true loue :  
And looke you tell him, tell him how I lye

*She kneeles downe at his feete.*

Prostrate at feet of his accurst misfortune,  
Pouring my teares out, which shall euer fall,  
Till I haue pour'd for him out eyes and all.

*Aum.* O Madame, this will kill him : comfort you  
With full assurance of his quicke acquittall ;  
Be not so passionate : rise, cease your teares.

*Coun.* Then must my life cease. Teares are all the  
vent

My life hath to scape death : Teares please me better,  
Then all lifes comforts, being the naturall feede  
Of heartie sorrow. As a tree fruit beares, *Hee raises*  
So doth an vndiffembled sorrow, teares. *her, and leades*  
*her out. Exe.*

*Vsh.* This might haue beene before, and sau'd  
much charge. *Exit.*

*Enter Henry, Guise, Baligny, Esp. Soiffon.*  
*Pericot with pen, incke, and paper.*

*Guise.* Now fir, I hope you're much abus'd Eyes  
see

In my word for my Clermont, what a villaine  
Hee was that whisper'd in your iealous eare  
His owne blacke treason in fuggesting Clermonts :  
Colour'd with nothing but being great with mee,  
Signe then this writ for his deliuerie,  
Your hand was neuer vrg'd with worthier boldnesse :  
Come, pray fir, signe it : why should Kings be praid  
To acts of Iustice ? tis a reuerence  
Makes them despis'd, and shoves they sticke and tyre



158 *The Reuenge of Bussy D'Ambois.*

In what their free powers should be hot as fire.

*Hen.* Well, take your will fir, Ile haue mine ere  
long. *Auerfus.*

But wherein is this Clermont such a rare one ?

*Guise.* In his most gentle, and vnwearied minde,  
Rightly to vertue fram'd; in very nature ;  
In his most firme inexorable spirit,  
To be remou'd from any thing hee chufeth  
For worthinesse ; or beare the leſt perſwaſion  
To what is baſe, or fitteth not his obieſt ;  
In his contempt of riches and of greatneſſe ;  
In eſtimation of th'Idolatrours vulgar ;  
His ſcorne of all things ſeruile and ignoble,  
Though they could gaine him neuer ſuch aduance-  
ment ;  
His liberall kinde of ſpeaking what is truth,  
In ſpight of temporifing ; the great riſing,  
and learning of his foule, ſo much the more  
Againſt ill fortune, as ſhee ſet her ſelfe  
Sharpe againſt him, or would preſent moſt hard,  
To ſhunne the malice of her deadlieſt charge ;  
His deteſtation of his ſpeciall friends,  
When he perceiu'd their tyrannous will to doe,  
Or their abieſtion baſely to ſuſtaine  
Any iniuſtice that they could reuenge ;  
The flexibilitie of his moſt anger,  
Euen in the maine careere and fury of it,  
Wnen any obieſt of deſertfull pittie  
Offers it ſelfe to him ; his ſweet diſpoſure  
As much abhorring to behold, as doe  
Any vnnaturall and bloody aſtion ;  
His iuſt contempt of Ieſters, Paraſites,  
Seruile obſeruers, and polluted tongues :  
In ſhort, this Senecall man is found in him,  
Hee may with heauens immortall powers compare,  
To whom the day and fortune equall are,  
Come faire or foule, what euer chance can fall,  
Fixt in himſelfe, hee ſtill is one to all.

*The Reuenge of Buffy D'Ambois.* 159

*Hen.* Showes he to others thus? *Omnes.* To all that know him.

*Hen.* And apprehend I this man for a traitor?

*Guife.* These are your Macheuilian Villaines,  
Your bastard Teucers, that their mischiefes done,  
Runne to your shield for shelter: Caucusses,  
That cut their too large murtherous theueries,  
To their dens length still: woe be to that state  
Where treacherie guards, and ruine makes men great.

*Hen.* Goe, take my Letters for him, and release him.

*Om.* Thankes to your Highnesse, euer liue your  
Highnesse. *Exeunt.*

*Bal.* Better a man were buried quicke, then liue  
A propertie for state, and spoile, to thriue. *Exit.*

*Enter Clermont, Mail. Chal. with Souldiers.*

*Mail.* Wee ioy you take a chance so ill, so well.

*Cler.* Who euer saw me differ in acceptance  
Of eyther fortune?

*Chal.* What, loue bad, like good?  
How should one learne that?

*Cler.* To loue nothing outward,  
Or not within our owne powers to command;  
And so being sure of euery thing we loue,  
Who cares to lose the rest: if any man  
Would neyther liue nor dye in his free choise,  
But as hee sees necessitie will haue it,  
(Which if hee would resist, he striues in vaine)  
What can come neere him, that hee doth not well,  
And if in worst euent, his will be done;  
How can the best be better? all is one.

*Mail.* Me thinkes tis prettie.

*Cler.* Put no difference  
If you haue this, or not this; but as children  
Playing at coites, euer regard their game,  
And care not for their coites; so let a man  
The things themselues that touch him not esteeme,  
But his free power in well disposing them.

160 *The Reuenge of Buffy D'Ambois.*

*Chal.* Prettie from toyes.

*Cler.* Me thinkes this double disticke  
Seemes prettily too, to stay superfluous longings :  
Not to haue want, what riches doth exceede ?  
Not to be subiect, what superiour thing ?  
He that to nought aspires, doth nothing neede ;  
Who breakes no Law is subiect to no King.

*Mail.* This goes to mine eare well I promise you.

*Chal.* O, but tis passing hard to stay one thus.

*Cler.* Tis so ; rancke custome raps men so beyond  
it,

And as tis hard, so well mens dores to barre  
To keepe the cat out, and th'adulterer ;  
So tis as hard to curbe affections so,  
Wee let in nought to make them ouer-flow.  
And as of Homers verses, many Critickes  
On those stand, of which times old moth hath eaten,  
The first or last feete, and the perfect parts,  
of his vnmached Poeme sinke beneath,  
With vpriht gasping, and floath dull as death :  
So the vnprofitable things of life,  
And those we cannot compasse, we affect ;  
All that doth profit, and wee haue, neglect,  
Like couetous, and basely getting men,  
That gathering much, vse neuer vwhat they keepe ;  
But for the least they loofe, extreame vveepe,

*Mail.* This prettie talking and our horses walking  
Downe this steepe hill, spends time with equall profit.

*Cler.* Tis well bestow'd on ye, meate and men  
ficke

Agree like this, and you : and yet euen this  
Is th'end of all skill, power, wealth, all that is.

*Chal.* I long to heare fir, how your Mistresse  
takes this.

*Enter Aumal with a Cabinet.*

*Mail.* Wee soone shall know it : see Aumall  
return'd.

*The Reuenge of Buffy D'Ambois.* 161

*Aum.* Ease to your bands fir.

*Cler.* Welcome worthy friend.

*Chal.* How tooke his noblest Mistresse your sad  
message ?

*Aum.* As great rich men take sodaine pouertie.  
I neuer witness'd a more noble loue,  
Nor a more ruthfull sorrow : I well wisht  
Some other had beene master of my message.

*Mail.* Y'are happy fir, in all things, but this one,  
Of your vnhappy apprehension.

*Cler.* This is to mee, compar'd with her much  
mone,  
As one teare is to her whole passion.

*Aum.* Sir, shee commends her kindest seruice to you,  
And this rich Cabinet.

*Chal.* O happy man.  
This may enough hold to redeeme your bands.

*Cler.* These clouds I doubt not, will be soone  
blowne ouer.

*Enter Baligny with his discharge : Renel, and others.*

*Aum.* Your hope is iust and happy, see fir both  
In both the looks of these.

*Bal.* Here's a discharge  
For this your prisoner, my good Lord Lieutenant.

*Mail.* Alas, fir, I vsurpe that stile enforc't,  
And hope you know it was not my aspiring.

*Bal.* Well fir, my wrong aspir'd past all mens  
hopes.

*Mail.* I sorrow for it fir.

*Ren.* You see fir there  
Your prisoners discharge autenticall.

*Mail.* It is fir, and I yeeld it him with gladnesse.

*Bal.* Brother, I brought you downe to much good  
purpose.

*Cler.* Repeate not that fir : the amends makes all :

*Ren.* I ioy in it, my best and worthiest friend,  
O y'haue a princely fautor of the Guife.

162 *The Reuenge of Bussy D'Ambois.*

*Bal.* I thinke I did my part to.

*Ren.* Well, fir; all

Is in the issue vvell: and (vvorthiest Friend)  
Here's from your friend the Guife; here from the  
Countesse,

Your Brothers Mistresse, the contents vvhereof  
I know, and must prepare you now to please  
Th'vnrested spirit of your slaughtered brother,  
If it be true, as you imagin'd once,  
His apparition show'd it; the complot  
Is now laid sure betwixt vs; therefore haste  
Both to your great friend (vvho hath some vse  
vvaightie

For your repaire to him) and to the Countesse,  
Whose satisfaction is no lesse important.

*Cler.* I see all, and vvill haste as it importeth.  
And good friend, since I must delay a little  
My wisht attendance on my noblest Mistresse,  
Excuse me to her, with returne of this,  
And endlesse protestation of my seruice;  
And now become as glad a messenger,  
As you were late a vvofull.

*Aum.* Happy change,  
I euer vvill salute thee with my seruice. *Exit.*

*Bal.* Yet more newes Brother; the late iesting  
Monfieur  
Makes now your Brothers dying prophesie equall  
At all parts, being dead as he prefag'd.

*Ren.* Heauen shield the Guife from seconding that  
truth,  
With what he likewise prophesied on him.

*Cler.* It hath enough, twas grac'd with truth in  
one,  
To'th other falshood and confusion.  
Leade to'th Court fir.

*Bal.* You Ile leade no more,  
It was to ominous and foule before. *Exeunt.*

*Finis Actus quarti.*



---

Actus quinti Scæna prima

---

*Afcendit Vmbra Buffi.*

*Vmb.* **V**P from the Chaos of eternall night,  
(To vvhich the whole digestion of the  
world  
Is now returning) once more I ascend,  
And bide the cold dampe of this piercing ayre,  
To vrge the iustice, whose almightie word  
Measures the bloody acts of impious men,  
With equall pennance, who in th'act it selfe  
Includes th'infliction, which like chained shot  
Batter together still ; though (as the thunder  
Seemes, by mens duller hearing then their fight,  
To breake a great time after lightning forth,  
Yet both at one time teare the labouring cloud,)  
So men thinke pennance of their ils is flow,  
Though th'ill and pennance still together goe.  
Reforme yee ignorant men, your manlesse liues  
Whose lawes yee thinke are nothing but your lusts ;  
When leauing but for supposition sake,  
The body of felicitie (Religion)  
Set in the midst of Christendome, and her head  
Cleft to her bosome ; one halfe one vway fwaying  
Another th'other : all the Christian world  
And all her lawes, vvhose obseruation,  
Stands vpon faith, aboue the power of reason :



164 *The Reuenge of Buffy D'Ambois.*

Leauing (I fay) all theſe, this might ſuffice,  
To fray yee from your vicious ſwindge in ill,  
And fet you more on fire to doe more good:  
That ſince the vvorlde (as vvvhich of you denies)  
Stands by proportion, all may thence conlude,  
That all the ioynts and nerues ſuſtaining nature,  
As well may breake, and yet the vvorlde abide,  
As any one good vnrewarded die,  
Or any one ill ſcape his penaltie.

*The Ghost ſtands cloſe.*

*Enter Guiſe, Clermont.*

*Gui.* Thus (friend) thou ſeeſt how all good men  
would thriue,  
Did not the good thou prompt'ſt me with preuent,  
The iealous ill purſuing them in others.  
But now thy dangers are diſpatcht, note mine :  
Haſt thou not heard of that admired voyce,  
That at the Barricadoes ſpake to mee,  
(No perſon ſeene) Let's leade (my Lord) to Reimes ?

*Cler.* Nor could you learne the perſon ?

*Guiſe.* By no meanes.

*Cler.* Twas but your fancie then a waking dreame :  
For as in ſleepe, which bindes both th'outward ſenſes,  
And the ſenſe common to ; th'imaging power  
(Stird vp by formes hid in the memories ſtore,  
Or by the vapours of o'er-flowing humours  
In bodies full and foule ; and mixt vvith ſpirits,)  
Faines many ſtrange, miraculous images,  
In which act, it ſo painfully applyes  
It ſelfe to thoſe formes, that the common ſenſe  
It actuates with his motion ; and thereby  
Thoſe fictions true ſeeme, and haue reall act :  
So, in the ſtrength of our conceits, awake,  
The cauſe alike, doth of like fictions make.

*Guiſe.* Be what it vvill, twas a preſage of ſome-  
thing  
Waightie and ſecret, vvvhich th'aduertiſements

*The Reuenge of Buffy D'Ambois.* 165

I haue receiu'd from all parts, both vvithout,  
And in this Kingdome, as from Rome and Spaine  
Soccaine and Sauoye, giues me caufe to thinke,  
All vvriting that our plots Catastrophe,  
For propagation of the Catholique caufe,  
Will bloody proue, diffoluing all our counfailes :

*Cler.* Retyre then from them all.

*Guife.* I must not doe so.

The Arch-Bishop of Lyons tels me plaine  
I shall be faid then to abandon France  
In so important an occasion :

And that mine enemies (their profit making  
Of my faint absence) foone would let that fall,  
That all my paines did to this height exhale.

*Cler.* Let all fall that would rise vnlawfully :  
Make not your forward spirit in vertues right,  
A property for vice, by thrusting on  
Further then all your powers can fetch you off.  
It is enough, your will is infinite  
To all things vertuous and religious,  
Which within limits kept, may without danger  
Let vertue some good from your Graces gather,  
Auarice of all is euer nothings father.

*Vmb.* Danger (the spurre of all great mindes) is  
euer

The curbe to your tame spirits ; you respect not  
(With all your holinesse of life and learning)  
More then the present, like illiterate vulgars,  
Your minde (you say) kept in your fleshes bounds,  
Shows that mans will must rul'd be by his power :  
When (by true doctrine) you are taught to liue  
Rather without the body, then within ;  
And rather to your God still then your selfe :  
To liue to him, is to doe all things fitting  
His Image, in which, like himselfe we liue ;  
To be his Image, is to doe those things,  
That make vs deathlesse, which by death is onely ;  
Doing those deedes that fit eternitie,  
And those deedes are the perfecting that Iustice,

166 *The Reuenge of Buffy D'Ambois.*

That makes the world last, which proportion is  
Of punishment and wreake for euery wrong,  
As well as for right a reward as strong :  
Away then, vse the meanes thou hast to right  
The wrong I suffer'd. What corrupted Law  
Leaues vnperform'd in Kings, doe thou supply,  
And be aboute them all in dignitie. *Exit.*

*Guife.* Why stand'st thou still thus, and applyest  
thine eares,  
And eyes to nothing ?

*Cler.* Saw you nothing here ?

*Guife.* Thou dream'st, awake now ; what was here  
to see ?

*Cler.* My Brothers spirit, vrging his reuenge.

*Guife.* Thy Brothers spirit ! pray thee mocke me  
not.

*Cler.* No, by my loue and seruice.

*Guife.* Would he rise,  
And not be thundring threates against the Guife ?

*Cler.* You make amends for enmitie to him,  
With tenne parts more loue, and desert of mee ;  
And as you make your hate to him, no let  
Of any loue to mee ; no more beares hee  
(Since you to me supply it) hate to you.  
Which reason and which Iustice is perform'd  
In Spirits tenne parts more then fleshy men.  
To whose fore-sights our acts and thoughts lie open :  
And therefore since hee saw the treacherie  
Late practis'd by my brother Baligny,  
Hee would not honor his hand with the iustice  
(As hee esteemes it) of his blouds reuenge,  
To which my Sifter needes would haue him sworne,  
Before she would consent to marry him.

*Guife.* O Baligny, who would beleeeue there were  
A man, that (onely since his lookes are rais'd  
Vpwards, and haue but sacred heauen in fight)  
Could beare a minde so more then diuellish ?  
As for the painted glory of the countenance,  
Flitting in Kings, doth good for nought esteeme,

*The Reuenge of Buffy D' Ambois.* 167

And the more ill hee does, the better seeme.

*Cler.* Wee easily may beleue it, since we see  
In this worlds practise few men better be.  
Iustice to liue doth nought but Iustice neede,  
But Policie must still on mischief feede.  
Vntruth for all his ends, truths name doth sue in ;  
None safely liue, but those that study ruine.  
A good man happy, is a common good ;  
Ill men aduanc'd liue of the common bloud.

*Guise.* But this thy brothers spirit startles mee,  
These spirits feld or neuer hanting men,  
But some mishap enfues.

*Cler.* Enfue what can :  
Tyrants may kill, but neuer hurt a man ;  
All to his good makes, spight of death and hell.

*Enter Aumall.*

*Aum.* All the desert of good, renoune your High-  
ness.

*Guise.* Welcome Aumall.

*Cler.* My good friend, friendly welcome.  
How tooke my noblest mistresse the chang'd newes ?

*Aum.* It came too late sir, for those loueliest eyes  
(Through which a soule look't so diuinely louing,  
Teares nothing vttering her distresse enough)  
She wept quite out, and like two falling Starres  
Their dearest fights quite vanisht with her teares.

*Cler.* All good forbid it.

*Guise.* What euent are these ?

*Cler.* All must be borne my Lord ; and yet this  
chance  
Would willingly enforce a man to cast off  
All power to beare with comfort, since hee sees  
In this, our comforts made our miseries.

*Guise.* How strangely thou art lou'd of both the  
sexes ;  
Yet thou lou'ft neyther, but the good of both.

*Cler.* In loue of women, my affection first

168 *The Revenge of Buffy D'Ambois.*

Takes fire out of the fraile parts of my bloud ;  
Which till I haue enioy'd, is passionate,  
Like other louers : but fruition past,  
I then loue out of iudgement ; the desert  
Of her I loue, still sticking in my heart,  
Though the desire, and the delight be gone,  
Which must chance still, since the comparison  
Made vpon tryall twixt what reason loues,  
And what affection, makes in mee the best  
Euer preferd ; what most loue, valuing left.

*Guife.* Thy loue being iudgement then, and of the  
minde,

Marry thy worthiest mistresse now being blinde.

*Cler.* If there were loue in mariage so I would ;  
But I denie that any man doth loue,  
Affecting vviues, maides, widowes, any women :  
For neither Flyes loue milke, although they drowne  
In greedy searck thereof ; nor doth the Bee  
Loue honey, though the labour of her life  
Is spent in gathering it ; nor those that fat  
Or beasts, or fowles, doe any thing therein  
For any loue : for as when onely nature  
Moues men to meate, as farre as her power rules,  
Shee doth it with a temperate appetite,  
The too much men deuoure, abhorring nature ;  
And in our most health, is our most difeafe :  
So, when humanitie rules men and vvomen.  
Tis for societie confinde in reason.  
But what excites the beds desire in bloud,  
By no meanes iustly can be construed loue ;  
For when loue kindles any knowing spirit,  
It ends in vertue and effects diuine ;  
And is in friendship chaste, and masculine.

*Guife.* Thou shalt my Mistresse be ; me thinkes my  
bloud

Is taken vp to all loue vvith thy vertues.  
And howfoeuer other men despise  
These Paradoxes strange, and too precise,  
Since they hold on the right way of our reason,



*The Reuenge of Buffy D'Ambois.* 169

I could attend them euer. Come, away ;  
Performe thy brothers thus importun'd wreake ;  
And I will see what great affaires the King  
Hath to employ my counsell, which he seemes  
Much to desire, and more and more esteemes. *Exit.*

*Enter Henry, Baliigny, with fixe of the guard.*

*Hen.* Saw you his sawcie forcing of my hand  
To D'Ambois freedome ?

*Bal.* Saw, and through mine eyes  
Let fire into my heart, that burn'd to beare  
An infolence so Giantly auftere.

*Hen.* The more Kings beare at Subiects hands, the  
more  
Their lingring Iustice gathers ; that refembles  
The waightie, and the goodly-bodied Eagle,  
Who (being on earth) before her shady wings  
Can raife her into ayre, a mightie way  
Close by the ground she runnes ; but being aloft,  
All shee commands, she flyes at ; and the more  
Death in her Seres beares, the more time shee staves  
Her thundry floope from that on which shee preyes.

*Bal.* You must be then more secret in the waight  
Of these your shady counfels, who will else  
Beare (where such sparkes flye as the Guife and D'Am-  
bois)

Pouder about them. Counfels (as your entrailles)  
Should be vnpiers'd and sound kept ; for not those,  
Whom you discouer, you neglect ; but ope  
A ruinous passage to your owne best hope.

*Hen.* Wee haue Spies set on vs, as we on others ;  
And therefore they that serue vs must excuse vs,  
If what wee most hold in our hearts, take winde,  
Deceit hath eyes that see into the minde.  
But this plot shall be quicker then their twinckling,  
On whose lids Fate, with her dead waight shall lie,  
And Confidence that lightens ere she die.  
Friends of my Guard, as yee gaue othe to be



170 *The Reuenge of Bussy D'Ambois.*

True to your Soueraigne, keepe it manfully :  
Your eyes haue witnest oft th'Ambition  
That neuer made accesse to me in Guife  
But Treafon euer sparkled in his eyes :  
Which if you free vs of, our safetie shall  
You not our Subiects, but our Patrons call.

*Omnes.* Our duties binde vs, hee is now but  
dead.

*Heu.* Wee trust in it, and thanke ye. Baligny,  
Goe lodge their ambush, and thou God that art  
Fautor of Princes, thunder from the skies,  
Beneath his hill of pride this Gyant Guife. *Exeunt.*

*Enter Tamyra with a Letter, Charlotte in mans  
attire.*

*Tam.* I see y'are Seruant, fir, to my deare sifter,  
The Lady of her lou'd Baligny.

*Char.* Madame I am bound to her vertuous  
bounties,  
For that life which I offer in her vertuous seruice,  
To the reuenge of her renowned brother.

*Tam.* She writes to mee as much, and much  
desires,  
That you may be the man, whose spirit shee knowes  
Will cut short off these long and dull delayes,  
Hitherto bribing the eternall Iustice :  
Which I beleeeue, since her vnmatched spirit  
Can iudge of spirits, that haue her sulphure in them ;  
But I must tell you, that I make no doubt,  
Her liuing brother will reuenge her dead,  
On whom the dead impos'd the taske, and hee,  
I know, will come t'effect it instantly.

*Char.* They are but words in him ; beleeeue them  
not.

*Tam.* See ; this is the vault, where he must enter :  
Where now I thinke hee is.

*The Reuenge of Buffy D'Ambois.* 171

*Enter Renel at the vault, with the Countesse being blinde.*

*Ren.* God faue you Lady.  
What Gentleman is this, with whom you trust  
The deadly waightie secret of this houre ?

*Tam.* One that your selfe will say, I well may trust.

*Ren.* Then come vp Madame.

*He helps the Countesse vp.*

See here honour'd Lady,  
A Countesse that in loues mishap doth equall  
At all parts your wrong'd selfe ; and is the mistresse  
Of your flaine seruants brother ; in whose loue  
For his late treachrous apprehension,  
She wept her faire eyes from her Iuory browes,  
And would haue wept her soule out, had not I  
Promist to bring her to this mortall quarrie,  
That by her lost eyes for her seruants loue,  
She might coniure him from this sterne attempt,  
In which, (by a most ominous dreame shee had)  
Shee knowes his death fixt, and that neuer more  
Out of this place the Sunne shall see him liue.

*Char.* I am prouided then to take his place,  
And vndertaking on me.

*Ren.* You sir, why ?

*Char.* Since I am charg'd so by my mistresse,  
His mournfull sifter.

*Tam.* See her Letter sir. *Hee reades.*  
Good Madame, I rue your fate, more then mine,  
And know not how to order these affaires,  
They stand on such occurrents.

*Ren.* This indeede,  
I know to be your Lady mistresse hand,  
And know besides, his brother will, and must  
Indure no hand in this reuenge but his.

*Enter Vmbr. Buffy.*

*Vmb.* 'Away, dispute no more ; get vp, and see,

172 *The Reuenge of Bussy D'Ambois.*

Clermont must aucthor this iust Tragedie.

*Coun.* Who's that ? *Ren.* The spirit of Bussy.

*Tam.* O my seruant ! let vs embrace.

*Vmb.* Forbear. The ayre, in which  
My figures liknesse is imprest, will blast,  
Let my reuenge for all loues satisfie,  
In vvhich (dame) feare not, Clermont shall not dye :  
No word dispute more, vp, and see th'euent.

*Exeunt Ladyes.*

Make the Guard sure Renel ; and then the doores  
Command to make fast, when the Earle is in.

*Exit Ren.*

The blacke soft-footed houre is now on wing,  
Which for my iust wreake, Ghosts shall celebrate,  
With dances dire, and of infernall state. *Exit.*

*Enter Guise.*

*Guise.* Who sayes that death is naturall, vvh  
nature

Is with the onely thought of it, dismaid ?  
I haue had Lotteries set vp for my death,  
And I haue drawne beneath my trencher one,  
Knit in my hand-kerchiefe another lot,  
The word being ; Y'are a dead man if you enter,  
And these words, this imperfect bloud and flesh,  
Shrincke at in spight of me ; their solidst part  
Melting like snow within mee, with colde fire :  
I hate my selfe, that seeking to rule Kings,  
I cannot curbe my flaue. Would any spirit  
Free, manly, Princely, wish to liue to be  
Commanded by this masse of flauerie,  
Since Reason, Iudgement, Resolution,  
And sorne of what we feare, will yeeld to feare ?  
While this fame fincke of sensualitie fwels,  
Who would liue sinking in it ? and not spring  
Vp to the Starres, and leaue this carrion here,  
For Wolfes, and Vultures, and for Dogges to teare ?  
O Clermont D'Ambois, wert thou here to chide



174 *The Reuenge of Buffy D'Ambois.*

More beate, and eaten with them, then was I  
With your ambitious mad Idolatrie ;  
And this bloud I fhed, is to faue the bloud  
Of many thoufands.

*Guife.* That's your white pretext,  
But you will finde one drop of bloud fhed lawleffe,  
Will be the fountaine to a purple fea :  
The prefent luft, and fhift made for Kings liues  
Againft the pure forme, and iuft power of Law,  
Will thriue like shifters purchafes ; there hangs  
A blacke Starre in the skies, to which the Sunne  
Giues yet no light, will raine a poyfon'd fhower  
Into your entrailes, that will make you feele  
How little fafetie lies in treacherous fteele.

*Hen.* Well fir, Ile beare it ; y'haue a Brother to,  
Burfts with like threates, the skarlet Cardinall :  
Seeke, and lay hands on him ; and take this hence,  
Their blouds, for all you, on my confcience. *Exit.*

*Guife.* So fir, your full fwindge take ; mine, death  
hath curb'd.

Clermont, farewell : O didft thou fee but this :  
But it is better, fee by this the Ice  
Broke to thine owne bloud, which thou wilt defpife,  
When thou hear'ft mine fhed. Is there no friend here  
Will beare my loue to him ? *Aum.* I will, my Lord.

*Guife.* Thankes with my laft breath : recommend  
me then

To the moft worthy of the race of men.

*Dyes. Exeunt.*

*Enter Montf. and Tamyra.*

*Mont.* Who haue you let into my houfe ? *Tam.* I,  
none.

*Mont.* Tis falfe, I fauour the rancke bloud of foes  
In euery corner.

*Tam.* That you may doe well,  
It is the bloud you lately fhed, you fmell.

*Mont.* Sdeath the vault opes. *The gulfe opens.*



*The Reuenge of Buffy D'Ambois.* 175

*Tam.* What vault? hold your sword. *Clermont*  
*ascends.*

*Cler.* No, let him vse it. *Mont.* Treafon, mur-  
ther, murther.

*Cler.* Exclaime not; tis is in vaine, and bafe in  
you,

Being one, to onely one. *Mont.* O bloody ftrumpet!

*Cler.* With what bloud charge you her? it may be  
mine

As well as yours; there fhall not any elfe  
Enter or touch you: I conferre no guards,  
Nor imitate the murtherous courfe you tooke;  
But fingle here, will haue my former challenge,  
Now anfwer'd fingle, not a minute more  
My brothers bloud fhall ftay for his reuenge,  
If I can act it; if not, mine fhall adde  
A double conqueft to you, that alone  
Put it to fortune now, and vse no ods.  
Storme not, nor beate your felfe thus gainft the dores,  
Like to a fauage vermine in a trap:  
All dores are fure made, and you cannot fcape,  
But by your valour. *Mont.* No, no, come and kill  
mee.

*Cler.* If you will die fo like a beaft, you fhall,  
But when the fpirit of a man may faue you,  
Doe not fo shame man, and a Noble man.

*Mont.* I doe not fhew this bafeneffe, that I feare  
thee,

But to preuent and shame thy victory,  
Which of one bafe is bafe, and fo Ile die. *Cler.* Here  
then.

*Mou.* Stay, hold, one thought hath harden'd me,  
*He starts vp.*

And fince I muft afford thee victorie,  
It fhall be great and braue, if one request  
Thou wilt admit mee. *Cler.* What's that?

*Mont.* Giue me leaue  
To fetch and vse the fword thy Brother gaue mee  
When he was brauely giuing vp his life.



176 *The Revenge of Bussy D'Ambois.*

*Cler.* No, Ile not fight against my brothers sword,  
Not that I feare it, but since tis a tricke,  
For you to show your backe.

*Mont.* By all truth, no :  
Take but my honourable othe, I will not.

*Cler.* Your honourable othe, plaine truth no place  
has  
Where othes are honourable.

*Tam.* Trust not his othe.  
Hee will lie like a Lapwing, when shee flies  
Farre from her fought nest, still here tis shee cries.

*Mont.* Out on thee damme of Diuels, I will quite  
Disgrace thy braues conquest, die, not fight.

*Tam.* Out on my fortune to wed such an abiect.  
Now is the peoples voyce, the voyce of God ;  
Hee that to wound a vvoman vants so much,  
(As hee did mee) a man dares neuer touch.

*Cler.* Reuenge your wounds now madame, I resigne  
him  
Vp to your full vvill, since hee will not fight.  
First you shall torture him (as hee did you,  
And Iustice wils) and then pay I my vow.  
Here, take this Ponyard.

*Mont.* Sinke Earth, open Heauen,  
And let fall vengeance.

*Tam.* Come fir, good fir hold him.

*Mont.* O shame of women, whither art thou fled !

*Cler.* Why (good my Lord) is it a greater shame  
For her then you ? come, I will be the bands  
You vs'd to her, prophaning her faire hands.

*Mont.* No fir, Ile fight now, and the terror be  
Of all you Champions to such as shee.  
I did but thus farre dally : now obserue,  
O all you aking fore-heads that haue rob'd,  
Your hands of weapons, and your hearts of valour,  
Ioyne in mee all your rages, and rebutters,  
And into dust ram this fame race of Furies,  
In this one relicke of the Ambois gall,  
In his one purple soule shed, drowne it all.

*Fight.*

*The Reuenge of Buffy D'Ambois.* 177

*Mont.* Now giue me breath a while. *Cler.* Re-  
ceiue it freely.

*Mont.* What thinke y'a this now?

*Cler.* It is very noble.

Had it beene free (at least) and of your felfe,  
And thus wee see (where valour most doth vant)  
What tis to make a coward valiant.

*Mont.* Now I shall grace your conquest.

*Cler.* That you shall. *Mont.* If you obtaine it.

*Cler.* True fir, tis in fortune.

*Mont.* If you were not a D'Ambois, I would scarce  
Change liues with you, I feele so great a change  
In my tall spirits breath'd, I thinke, with the breath  
A D'Ambois breathes here, and necessitie  
(With whose point now prickt on, and so, vvhose helpe  
My hands may challenge, that doth all men conquer,  
If shee except not you, of all men onely)  
May change the case here.

*Cler.* True as you are chang'd,  
Her power in me vrg'd, makes y'another man,  
Then yet you euer were. *Mont.* Well, I must on.

*Cler.* Your Lordship must by all meanes. *Mon.*  
Then at all. *Fights, and D'Ambois hurts him.*

*Charlotte aboue.*

*Char.* Death of my father : what a shame is this,  
Sticke in his hands thus? *Ren.* Gentle fir forbear.

*Coun.* Is he not flaine yet? *She gets downe.*

*Ren.* No Madame, but hurt in diuers parts of him.

*Mont.* Y'haue giuen it me,  
And yet I feele life for another vennie,

*Enter Charlotte.*

*Cler.* What would you fir?

*Char.* I would performe this Combat.

*Cler.* Against which of vs?

*Char.* I care not much if twere

178 *The Reuenge of Buffy D'Ambois.*

Against thy felfe : thy fifter would haue sham'd,  
To haue thy Brothers wreake with any man  
(In fingle combat) fticke fo in her fingers.

*Cler.* My Sifter ? know you her ?

*Cam.* I fir, fhee fent him  
With this kinde Letter, to performe the wreake  
Of my deare Seruant.

*Cler.* Now alas good fir,  
Thinke you you could doe more ?

*Char.* Alas ? I doe,  
And wer't not, I, fresh, found, fould charge a man  
Weary, and vvounded, I would long ere this,  
Haue prou'd what I prefume on.

*Cler.* Y'haue a minde  
Like to my Sifter, but haue patience now,  
If next charge fpeede not, Ile refigne to you,

*Mont.* Pray thee let him decide it.

*Cler.* No, my Lord,  
I am the man in fate, and fince fo brauely  
Your Lordfhip ftands mee, fcape but one more  
charge,  
And on my life, Ile fet your life at large.

*Mont.* Said like a D'Ambois, and if now I die,  
Sit ioy and all good on thy victorie.

*Fights, and fals downe.*

*Mon.* Farewell, I hartily forgiue thee. Wife,  
And thee, let penitence fpend thy reft  
of life. } *Hee giues his  
hand to Cler.  
and his wife.*

*Cler.* Noble and Christian.

*Tam.* O it breakes my heart.

*Cler.* And fould, for all faults found in him be-  
fore,

These words, this end, makes full amends and more.  
Reft worthy foule, and vvith it the deare fpirit  
Of my lou'd Brother, reft in endleffe peace :  
Soft lie thy bones Heauen be your foules abode,  
And to your afhes be the earth no lode.

*The Reuenge of Buffy D'Ambois.* 179

*Musicke, and the Ghost of Buffy enters, leading the Ghost of the Guife; Monsieur, Cardinall Guife, and Shattilion, they dance about the dead body, and Exeunt.*

*Cler.* How strange is this? the Guife amongst these spirits,  
And his great Brother Cardinall, both yet liuing,  
And that the rest vvith them, vvith ioy thus celebrate  
This our reuenge? This certainly presages  
Some instant death both to the Guife and Cardinall.  
That the Shattilians Ghost to should thus ioyne  
In celebration of this iust reuenge,  
With Guife, that bore a chiefe stroke in his death,  
It seemes that now he doth approue the act,  
And these true shadowes of the Guife and Cardinall,  
Fore-running thus their bodies, may approue  
That all things to be done, as here wee liue,  
Are done before all times in th'other life.  
That Spirits should rise in these times yet are fables;  
Though learnedst men hold that our sensiuē spirits  
A little time abide about the graues  
Of their deceased bodies; and can take  
In colde condenc't ayre, the same formes they had,  
When they were shut vp in this bodies shade.

*Enter Aumall.*

*Aum.* O Sir, the Guife is slaine. *Cler.* Auert it Heauen.

*Aum.* Sent for to Councill, by the King, an ambush  
(Lodg'd for the purpose) rusht on him, and tooke  
His Princely life; who sent (in dying then)  
His loue to you, as to the best of men.

*Cler.* The worst, and most accurst of things creeping  
On earths sad bosome. Let me pray yee all

180 *The Reuenge of Buffy D'Ambois.*

A little to forbear, and let me vse  
Freely mine owne minde in lamenting him.  
Ile call yee straight againe.

*Aum.* We will forbear, and leaue you free fir.

*Exeunt.*

*Cler.* Shall I liue, and hee  
Dead, that alone gaue meanes of life to me ?  
There's no disputing with the acts of Kings,  
Reuenge is impious on their facred persons :  
And could I play the worldling (no man louing  
Longer then gaine is reapt, or grace from him)  
I should furuiue, and shall be wondred at,  
(Though in mine owne hands being) I end with him :  
But Friendship is the Sement of two mindes,  
As of one man the foule and body is,  
Of which one cannot feuer, but the other  
Suffers a needfull separation.

*Descend Ren.*

*& Coun.*

*Ren.* I feare your seruant, Madame : let's descend.

*Cler.* Since I could skill of man, I neuer liu'd  
To please men worldly, and shall I in death,  
Respect their pleasures, making such a iarre  
Betwixt my death and life, when death should make  
The confort sweetest ; th'end being profe and crowne  
To all the skill and worth wee truely owne ?  
Guise, O my Lord, how shall I cast from me  
The bands and couerts hindring me from thee ?  
The garment or the couer of the minde,  
The humane foule is ; of the foule, the spirit  
The proper robe is ; of the spirit, the bloud ;  
And of the bloud, the body is the shrowd.  
With that must I beginne then to vnclithe,  
And come at th'other. Now then as a ship,  
Touching at strange, and farre remoued shores ;  
Her men a shore goe, for their feuerall ends,  
Fresh water, victuals, precious stones, and pearle,  
All yet intentiue when (the master cals,  
The Ship to put off ready) to leaue all  
Their greediest labours, left they there be left,



*The Reuenge of Bussy D'Ambois.* 181

To theeues, or beafts, or be the Countries flaues :  
So, now my mafter calls, my fhip, my venture  
All in one bottome put, all quite put off,  
Gone vnder faile, and I left negligent,  
To all the horrors of the vicious time,  
The farre remou'd fhores to all vertuous aimes ;  
None fauouring goodneffe ; none but he refpe&cting  
Pietie or man-hood. Shall I here furuiue,  
Not caft me after him into the fea,  
Rather then here liue, readie euery houre  
To feede theeues, beafts, and be the flauie of power ?  
I come my Lord, Clermont thy creature comes.

*Hee kills himfelfe.*

*Enter Aumal, Tamyra, Charlotte.*

*Aum.* What ? lye and languifh, Clermont ? Curfed  
man

To leaue him here thus : hee hath flaine himfelfe.

*Tam.* Mifery on mifery ! O me wretched Dame  
Of all that breath, all heauen turne all his eyes,  
In hartie enuie, thus on one poore dame.

*Char.* Well done my Brother : I did loue thee  
euer,  
But now adore thee : loffe of fuch a friend  
None fould furuiue, of fuch a Brother ;  
With my false husband liue, and both thefe flaine :  
Ere I returne to him, Ile turne to earth.

*Enter Renel leading the Counteffe.*

*Ren.* Horror of humane eyes, O Clermont D'Am-  
bois !

Madame, wee ftaid too long, your feruant's flaine.

*Coun.* It muft be fo, he liu'd but in the Guife,  
As I in him. O follow life mine eyes.

*Tam.* Hide, hide thy fnakie head, to Cloifters flie,  
In pennance pine, too eafie tis to die.

*Cler.* It is. In Cloifters then let's all furuiue.



182 *The Reuenge of Buffy D'Ambois.*

Madame, since wrath nor grieffe can helpe these fortunes,  
tunes,

Let vs forfake the world, in which they raigne,  
And for their wisht amends to God complaine.

*Count.* Tis fit and onely needfull : leade me on,  
In heauens course comfort seeke, in earth is none.

*Exeunt.*

*Enter Henry, Espernone, Soiffone, and others.*

*Hen.* Wee came indeede too late, which much I  
rue,

And would haue kept this Clermont as my crowne.  
Take in the dead, and make this fatall roome  
(The house shut vp) the famous D'Ambois Tombe.

*Exeunt.*

*FINIS.*

*THE*  
CONSPIRACIE,  
And  
TRAGEDIE  
OF  
CHARLES Duke of BYRON,  
Marshall of France.

Acted lately in two playes, at the  
Black-Friers.

*Written by* GEORGE CHAPMAN.

---

---


Printed by *G. Eld* for *Thomas Thorppe*, and are to be sold at  
the Tygers head in Paules Church-yard.

1608.

[A few corrections, chiefly clerical, of the Edition of 1625, have been, for the most part silently, adopted in the following reprint.]

## To my Honorable and Constant

friend, Sir *Tho: Walsingham*, Knight: and to my much *loued from his birth, the right toward and worthy* Gentleman his sonne *Thomas Walsingham*, Esquire.

IR, though I know, you euer stood little affected to these vnprofitable rites of Dedication; (which disposition in you, hath made me hetherto dispence with your right in my other impreffions) yet, least the world may repute it a neglect in me, of so ancient and worthy a friend; (hauing heard your approbation of these in their presentment) I could not but prescribe them with your name; And that my affection may extend to your Posteritie, I haue entituled to it, herein, your hope and comfort in your generous sonne; whom I doubt not, that most reuerenc'd Mother of *Manly Sciences*; to whose instruction your vertuous care commits him; will so profitably initiate in her learned labours, that they will make him flourish in his riper life, ouer the idle liues of our ignorant Gentlemen; and enable him to supply the Honorable places, of your name; extending your yeares, and his right noble Mothers (in the true comforts of his vertues) to the sight of much, and most happy Progenie; which most affectionately wishing; and diuiding these poore dismemberd Poems betwixt you, I desire to liue still in your gracefull loues; and euer

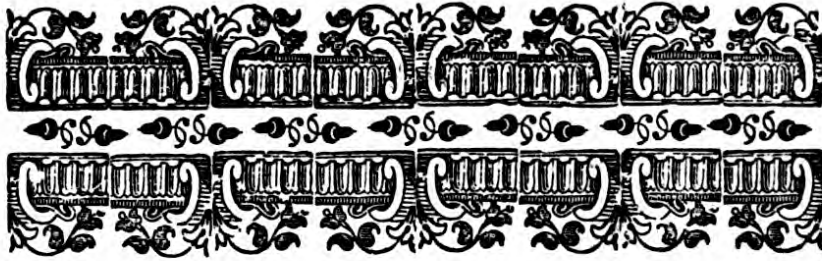
*The most assured at your commandements*

GEORGE CHAPMAN.



## Prologus .

**W**Hen the vnciuill, ciuill warres of France,  
Had pour'd upon the countries beaten brest,  
Her batterd Citties; prest her vnder hils  
Of slaughterd carcasses; set her in the mouthes  
Of murtherous breaches, and made pale Despaire,  
Leaue her to Ruine; through them all, Byron  
Stept to her rescue; tooke her by the hand:  
Pluckt her from vnder her vnnatural presse,  
And set her shining in the height of peace.  
And now new clenfd, from dust, from sweat, and bloud,  
And dignified with title of a Duke;  
As when in wealthy Autumne, his bright starre  
(Washt in the lofty Ocean) thence ariseth;  
Illustrates heauen, and all his other fires  
Out-shines and darkens: so admird Byron,  
All France, exempted from comparison.  
He toucht heauen with his lance; nor yet was toucht  
With hellish treacherie: his countries loue,  
He yet thirsts: not the faire shades of himselfe:  
Of which empoisoned Spring; when pollicie drinkes,  
He bursts in growing great; and rising, sinckes:  
Which now behold in our Conspirator,  
And see in his reuolt, how honors flood  
Ebbes into ayre, when men are Great, not Good.



## BYRON'S CONSPIRACIE.

### ACTVS I. SCAENA I.

*Enter Sauoy, Roncas, Rochette, Breton.*

*Sau.* I Would not for halfe *Sauoy*, but haue bound  
France to some fauour, by my personall  
prefence  
More than your selfe, (my Lord Ambassadour)  
Could haue obtaind ; for all Ambassadours  
(You know) haue chiefly these instructions ;  
To note the State and chiefe fway of the Court,  
To which they are employde ; to penetrate  
The heart, and marrow of the Kings designes,  
And to obserue the countenances and spirites,  
Of such as are impatient of rest ;  
And wring beneath, some priuate discontent :  
But, past all these, there are a number more  
Of these State Critiscismes : That our personall view  
May profitably make, which cannot fall  
Within the powres of our instruction,  
To make you comprehend ; I will doe more  
With my meere shadow, than you with your persons.



All you can say against my coming heere,  
Is that, which I confesse, may for the time,  
Breede strange affections in my brother *Spaine* ;  
But when I shall haue time to make my Cannans,  
The long-tong'd Heralds of my hidden drifts,  
Our reconciliation will be made with triumphs.

*Ron.* If not, your Highnesse hath small cause to  
care,

Hauing such worthy reason to complaine  
Of *Spaines* colde friendship, and his lingring succours,  
Who onely entertaines your griefes with hope,  
To make your medicine desperate.

*Roch.* My Lord knowes

The Spanish glosse too well ; his forme, stufte, lasting,  
And the most dangerous conditions,  
He layes on them with whome he is in league,  
Th'iniustice in the most vnequall dowre,  
Giuen with th' *Infanta*, whome my Lord espoufde,  
Compar'd with that her elder sifter had,  
May tell him how much *Spaines* loue weighs to him,  
When of so many Globes and Scepters held  
By the great King, he onely would bestow  
A portion but of six score thousand Crownes  
In yeerely pension, with his highnesse wife,  
When the *Infanta* wedded by the Archduke  
Had the Franch County, and lowe Prouinces.<sup>1</sup>

*Bret.* We should not fet these passages of Splene  
Twixt *Spaine* and *Sauoy*, to the weaker part,  
More good by suffrance growes, than deedes of heart,  
The nearer Princes are, the further off  
In rites of friendship ; my aduice had neuer  
Consented to this voyage of my Lord,  
In which he doth endaunger *Spaines* whole losse,  
For hope of some poore fragment heere in *France*.

*Sau.* My hope in *France* you know not, though  
my counfel,

---

1 The edition of 1625 reads :—

“Had the French Bounty, and low Prouinces.”

And for my losse of *Spaine*, it is agreede,  
That I should sleight it, oft-times Princes rules  
Are like the Chymicall Philofophers ;  
Leaue me then to mine owne proiection,<sup>2</sup>  
In this our thriftie Alchymie of state,  
Yet helpe me thus farre, you that haue beene heere  
Our Lord Ambassadour ; and, in short informe mee,  
What Spirites here are fit for our designes.

*Ron.* The new-created Duke *Byron* is fit,  
Were there no other reason for your presence,  
To make it worthie ; for he is a man  
Of matchlesse valour, and was euer happy  
In all encounters, which were still made good,  
With an vnwearyed fence of any toyle,  
Hauing continued fourteene dayes together  
Vpon his horse : his blood is not voluptuous,  
Nor much inclinde to women ; his desires  
Are higher than his state, and his deserts  
Not much short of the most he can desire,  
If they be weigh'd with what *France* feeles by them :  
He is past measure glorious : And that humour  
Is fit to feede his Spirites, whome it possesseth  
With faith in any errour, chiefly where  
Men blowe it vp, with praise of his perfections,  
The taste whereof in him so soothes his pallate,  
And takes vp all his appetite, that oft times  
He will refuse his meate, and companie  
To feast alone with their most strong conceit ;  
Ambition also, cheeke by cheeke doth march  
With that exceffe of glory, both sustain'd  
With an vnlimited fancie, That the King,  
Nor *Francce* it selfe, without him can subsist.

*Sau.* He is the man (my Lord) I come to winne ;  
And that supream intention of my presence  
Saw neuer light till now, which yet I feare,  
The politick King, suspecting, is the cause  
That he hath sent him so farre from my reach,

---

<sup>2</sup> The Edition of 1625 reads "protection."

And made him chiefe in the Commiffion,  
 Of his ambassage to my brother Arch-duke,  
 With whome he is now ; and (as I am tolde)  
 So entertaind and fitted in his humour,  
 That ere I part, I hope he will returne  
 Prepar'd, and made the more fit for the phificke  
 That I intend to minister.

*Ron.* My Lord,  
 There is another discontented Spirite  
 Now heere in Court, that for his braine, and aptnes  
 To any courfe that may recouer him  
 In his declined and litigious ftate,  
 Will ferue *Byron*, as he were made for him,  
 In giuing vent to his ambitious vaine,  
 And that is, *De Laffin*.

*Sau.* You tell me true,  
 And him I thinke you haue prepar'd for me.

*Ron.* I haue my Lord, and doubt not he will  
 prooue,  
 Of the yet taintleffe fortrefie of *Byron*,  
 A quicke Expugner, and a ftrong Abider.

*Sau.* Perhappes the battry will be brought before  
 him,  
 In this ambassage, for I am affur'd  
 They fet high price of him, and are informde  
 Of all the paffages, and means for mines  
 That may be thought on, to his taking in :

*Enter Henry and Laffin.*

The King comes, and *Laffin* : the Kings aspect  
 Folded in cloudes.

*Hen.* I will not haue my traine,  
 Made a retraite for Bankroutes, nor my Court,  
 A hye for Droanes : prowde Beggars, and true  
 Thieues,  
 That with a forced truth they sweare to me,  
 Robbe my poore fubiects, fhall giue vp their Arts,  
 And hencefoorth learne to liue by their defarts ;

Though I am growne, by right of Birth and Armes  
Into a greater kingdome, I will spreade  
With no more shade, then may admit that kingdome  
Her proper, naturall, and woonted fruites,  
*Nauarre* shall be *Nauarre*, and *France* still *France*. :  
If one may be the better for the other  
By mutuall rites, so, neither shall be worfe.  
Thou arte in lawe, in quarrells, and in debt,  
Which thou wouldst quit with countenance ; Borrow-  
ing

With thee is purchase, and thou seekst by me  
(In my supportance) now our olde warres cease  
To wage worfe battells, with the armes of Peace.

*Laf.* Peace must not make men Cowards, nor  
keepe calme

Her pursie regiment with mens smotherd breaths ;  
I must confesse my fortunes are decline,  
But neither my deseruings, nor my minde :  
I seeke but to sustaine the right I found,  
When I was rich, in keeping what is left,  
And making good my honour as at best,  
Though it be hard ; mans right to euerything  
Wanes with his wealth, wealth is his surest King ;  
Yet Iustice should be still indifferent.  
The ouerplus of Kings, in all their might,  
Is but to peece out the defects of right :  
And this I sue for, nor shall frownes and taunts  
(The common Scarre-crowes of all poore mens suites)  
Nor mis-construction that doth colour still  
Licentiary Iustice, punishing good for ill,  
Keepe my free throate from knocking at the Skie,  
If thunder chid mee for my equitie.

*Hen.* Thy equity, is to be euer banisht  
From Court, and all societie of nobleffe,  
Amongst whome thou throwst balls of all dissention ;  
Thou arte at peace with nothing but with warre,  
Hast no heart but to hurt, and eatst thy heart,  
If it but thinke of doing any good :

Thou witchest with thy smiles, suckst bloud with  
 praifes,  
 Mock't al humanitie ; society poisonst,  
 Coofinft with vertue ; with religion  
 Betrayst, and maffacrest ; so vile thy selfe,  
 That thou suspectst perfection in others :  
 A man must thinke of all the villanies  
 He knowes in all men, to descipher thee,  
 That art the centre to impietie :  
 Away, and tempt me not.

*Laf.* But you tempt me,  
 To what, thou Sunne to iudge, and make him see.

*Exit.*

*Sau.* Now by my dearest Marquifate of *Saluffes*,  
 Your Maiestie hath with the greatest life  
 Describ'd a wicked man ; or rather thrust  
 Your arme downe through him to his very feete,  
 And pluckt his inside out, that euer yet,  
 My eares did witnesse ; or turnd eares to Eies ;  
 And those strange Characters, writ in his face,  
 Which at first sight, were hard for me to reade,  
 The Doctrine of your speech, hath made so plaine,  
 That I run through them like my naturall language :  
 Nor do I like that mans Aspect, me thinkes,  
 Of all lookes where the Beames of Starres haue caru'd  
 Their powrefull influences ; And (O rare)  
 What an heroicke, more than royall Spirite  
 Bewraide you in your first speech, that defies  
 Protection of vile droanes, that eate the honny  
 Sweat from laborious vertue, and denies  
 To giue those of *Nauarre*, though bred with you,  
 The benefites and dignities of *France*.  
 When little Riuers by their greedy currants,  
 (Farre farre extended from their mother springs)  
 Drinke vp the forraine brookes still as they runne,  
 And force their greatnesse, when they come to Sea,  
 And iustle with the Ocean for a roome,  
 O how he roares, and takes them in his mouth,  
 Digesting them so to his proper streames,



That they are no more feene, hee nothing raifde  
Aboue his vsuall bounds, yet they deuour'd,  
That of themfelues were pleafant, goodly flouds.

*Hen.* I would doe beft for both, yet fhall not be  
fecure,

Till in fome absolute heires my Crowne be fetled,  
There is fo little now betwixt Aspirers  
And their great obiect in my onely felfe,  
That all the ftrength they gather vnder me,  
Tempts combat with mine owne : I therefore make  
Meanes for fome iffue by my marriage,  
Which with the great Dukes neece is now concluded,  
And ſhe is comming ; I haue truſt in heauen  
I am not yet fo olde, but I may ſpring,  
And then I hope all traytors hopes will fade.

*Sau.* Elſe may their whole eſtates flie, rooted vp  
To Ignominie and Obliuion :  
And (being your neighbor ſeruant, and poore kinfman)  
I wiſh your mighty Race might multiply,  
Euen to the Period of all Emperie.

*Hen.* Thankes to my princely cozen, this your  
loue

And honour ſhewne me in your perſonall preſence,  
I wiſh to welcome to your full content :  
The peace I now make with your brother Archduke,  
By Duke *Byron* our Lord Ambaſſadour,  
I wiſh may happily extend to you,  
And that at his returne we may conclude it.

*Sau.* It ſhall be to my heart the happieſt day  
Of all my life, and that life all employd,  
To celebrate the honour of that day. *Exeunt.*

*Enter Roifeau.*

*Roif.* The wondrous honor done our Duke *Byron*  
In his Ambaſſage heere, in th' Archdukes Court,  
I feare will taint his loyaltie to our King,  
I will obſerue how they obſerue his humour,



And glorifie his valure: and how he  
 Accepts and stands attractiue to their ends,  
 That so I may not seeme an idle spot  
 In traine of this ambassage, but returne  
 Able to giue our King some note of all,  
 Worth my attendance; And see, heere's the man,  
 Who (though a French man, and in *Orleance* borne  
 Seruing the Arch-duke) I doe most suspect,  
 Is fet to be the tempter of our Duke;  
 Ile goe where I may see, although not heare.

*Enter Picoté, with two other spreading a Carpet.*

*Pic.* Spreade heere this historie of *Cateline*,  
 That Earth may seeme to bring forth Roman Spirites,  
 Euen to his Geniall feete; and her darke breast  
 Be made the cleare Glasse of his shining Graces,  
 Wee le make his feete so tender, they shall gall  
 In all paths but to Empire; and therein  
 Ile make the sweete Steppes of his State beginne.

*Exit.*

*Lowde Musique, and enter Byron.*

*Byr.* What place is this? what ayre? what region?  
 In which a man may heare the harmony  
 Of all things moouing? *Hymen* marries heere,  
 Their ends and vses, and makes me his Temple.  
 Hath any man beene blessed, and yet liu'd?  
 The blood turnes in my veines, I stand on change,  
 And shall diffolue in changing; tis so full  
 Of pleasure not to be containde in flesh:  
 To feare a violent Good, abuseth Goodnes,  
 Tis Immortality to die aspiring,  
 As if a man were taken quick to heauen;  
 What will not holde Perfection, let it burst;  
 What force hath any Cannon, not being chargde,  
 Or being not dischargde? To haue stufte and forme,  
 And to lie idle, fearefull, and vnus'd,  
 Nor forme, nor stufte shewes; happy *Semele*

That died comprest with Glorie : Happineffe  
Denies comparifon, of leffe, or more,  
And not at moft, is nothing : like the shaft  
Shot at the Sunne, by angry *Hercules*,  
And into shiuers by the thunder broken  
Will I be if I burft : And in my heart  
This fhall be written : yet twas high and right.

*Muficke againe.*

Heere too ? they follow all my fteppes with Mufique,  
As if my feete were numerous, and trode founds  
Out of the Center, with *Apolloes* vertue,  
That out of euery thing his ech-part toucht,  
Strooke muficall accents : wherefoe're I goe,  
They hide the earth from me with couerings rich,  
To make me thinke that I am heere in heauen.

*Enter Picote in hafte.*

*Pic.* This way, your Highneffe.

*Byr.* Come they ?

*Pic.* I my Lord.

*Exeunt.*

*Enter the other Commissioners of France, Belieure,  
Brulart, Aumall, Oreng.*

*Bel.* My Lord *d' Aumall*, I am exceeding forie,  
That your owne obftinacie to hold out,  
Your mortall enmitie againft the King,  
When Duke *du Maine*, and all the faction yeelded,  
Should force his wrath to vse the rites of treason,  
Vpon the members of your fenceleffe Statue,  
Your Name and Houfe, when he had loft your perfon,  
Your loue and duety.

*Bru.* That which men enforce  
By their owne wilfulneffe ; they muft endure  
With willing patience, and without complaint.

*D'Aum.* I vse not much impatience nor complaint.  
Though it offend me much, to haue my name

So blotted with addition of a Traitor.  
And my whole memory, (with such despite,  
Markt and begun to be so rooted out.)

*Bru.* It was despite that held you out so long,  
Whose penance in the King was needfull iustice.

*Bel.* Come let vs seeke our Duke, and take our  
leaues  
Of th' Archdukes grace. *Exeunt.*

*Enter Byron and Pycote.*

*Byr.* Here may we safely breathe ?

*Py.* No doubt (my Lord) no stranger knowes this  
way ;

Onely the Arch-duke, and your friend Count *Mansfield*,  
Perhaps may make their generall scapes to you,  
To vtter some part of their priuate loues,  
Ere your departure.

*Byr.* Then, I well perceiue  
To what th' intention of his highnesse tends ;  
For whose, and others here, most worthy Lords,  
I will become (with all my worth) their seruant,  
In any office, but disloyaltie ;  
But that hath euer showd so fowle a monster  
To all my Ancestors, and my former life,  
That now to entertaine it ; I must wholly  
Giue vp my habite, in his contrary,  
And striue to growe out of priuation.

*Py.* My Lord, to weare your loyall habite still,  
When it is out of fashion ; and hath done  
Seruice enough ; were rusticke miserie :  
The habite of a seruile loyaltie,  
Is reckond now amongst priuations,  
With blindnesse, dumbnesse, deafnesse, scilence, death,  
All which are neither natures by themselues  
Nor substances, but mere decayes of forme,  
And absolute decessions of nature,  
And so, 'tis nothing, what shall you then loofe ?  
Your highnesse hath a habite in perfection,

And in desert of highest dignities,  
Which carue your selfe, and be your owne rewarder ;  
No true powre doth admit priuation,  
Aduerse to him ; or suffers any fellow  
Ioynde in his subiect ; you, superiors ;  
It is the nature of things absolute,  
One to destroy another ; be your Highnesse,  
Like those steepe hils that will admit no clouds,  
No dews, nor left fumes bound about their brows ;  
Because their tops pierce into purest ayre,  
Expert of humor ; or like ayre it selfe  
That quickly changeth ; and receiues the funne  
Soone as he riseth ; euery where disperfing  
His royall splendor ; girds it in his beames,  
And makes it selfe the body of the light ;  
Hot, fhining, swift, light, and aspiring things,  
Are of immortall, and celestiall nature ;  
Colde, darke, dull, heauie of infernall fortunes,  
And neuer aime at any happinesse ;  
Your excellencie knowes ; that simple loyaltie,  
Faith, loue, finceritie, are but words, no things ;  
Meerely deuifde for forme ; and as the Legate,  
Sent from his Holinesse, to frame a peace  
Twixt *Spaine* and *Sauoy* ; labour'd feruently,  
(For common ends, not for the Dukes perticular)  
To haue him signe it ; he againe endeuours  
(Not for the Legates paines, but his owne pleasure)  
To gratifie him ; and being at last encountred ;  
Where the flood *Tefyn* enters into *Po*,  
They made a kinde contention, which of them  
Should enter th' others boate ; one thrust the other :  
One legge was ouer, and another in :  
And with a fierie courtesie, at last  
*Sauoy* leapes out, into the Legates armes,  
And here ends all his loue, and th' others labour ;  
So shall these termes, and impositions  
Exprest before, hold nothing in themfelues  
Really good ; but flourishes of forme :  
And further then they make to priuate ends

None wife, or free, their propper vse intends.

*Byr.* O 'tis a dangerous, and a dreadfull thing  
To steale prey from a Lyon ; or to hide  
A head distrustfull, in his opened iawes ;  
To trust our bloud in others veines ; and hang  
Twixt heauen and earth, in vapors of their breaths :  
To leaue a fure pace on continuate earth,  
And force a gate in iumps, from towre to towre,  
As they doe that aspire, from height to height ;  
The bounds of loyaltie are made of glasse,  
Soone broke, but can in no date be repaired ;  
And as the Duke *D'Aumall*, (now here in Court)  
Flying his countrey ; had his Statue torne  
Peece-meale with horses ; all his goods confiscate,  
His Armes of honor, kickt about the strectes,  
His goodly house at *Annet* rac'd to th' earth.  
And (for a strange reproche of his foule treason)  
His trees about it, cut off by their wastes ;  
So, when men flie the naturall clime of truth,  
And turne them-selues loose, out of all the bounds  
Of Iustice, and the straight-way to their ends ;  
Forfaking all the fure force in themselues  
To seeke, without them, that which is not theirs,  
The formes of all their comforts are distracted ;  
The riches of their freedomes forfeited ;  
Their humane noblesse shamd ; the Mansions  
Of their colde spirits, eaten downe with Cares ;  
And all their ornaments of wit, and valure,  
Learning, and iudgement, cut from all their fruites.

*Alb.* O, here were now the richest prize in *Europe*,  
Were he but taken in affection,  
Would we might growe together, and be twins  
Of eithers fortune ; or that, still embrac't  
I were, but Ring to such a pretious stone :

*Byr.* Your highnesse honors, and high bountie  
showne me,  
Haue wonne from me my voluntary powre ;  
And I must now mooue by your eminent will ;  
To what particular obiects ; if I know



By this man's intercession, he shall bring :  
My vtmost answere, and performe betwixt vs,  
Reciprocally, and full intelligence.

*Alber.* Euen for your owne deserued roiall good,  
Tis ioyfully accepted, vse the loues  
And worthy admirations of your friends,  
That beget vowes of all things you can wish,  
And be what I wish : danger saies, no more. *Exit.*

*Enter Mansfield at another dore. Exit Picote.*

*Manf.* Your highnesse makes the light of this  
Court stoope,  
With your so neere departure, I was forc't  
To tender to your excellence, in briefe,  
This priuate wish, in taking of my leaue ;  
That in some army Roiall, old Count *Mansfield*,  
Might be commanded by your matchles valor,  
To the supreamest point of victorie :  
Who vowes for that renoune all praier, and seruice :  
No more, leaft I may wrong you. *Exit Manf.*

*Byr.* Thanke your Lordship.

*Enter D'Aumall aud Oreng.*

*D'Au.* All maiestie be added to your highnesse,  
Of which, I would not wish your brest to beare  
More modest apprehension : then may tread,  
The high gate of your spirit ; and be knowne  
To be a fit Bound for your Boundlesse valor.

*Or.* So *Oreng* wisheth, and to the defarts  
Of your great actions, their most roiall Crowne.

*Enter Picoté.*

*Pic.* Away my Lord, the Lords enquire for you.

*Exit. Bir.*

*Manet Oreng, D'Aum, Roiseau.*



*Ore.* Would we might winne his valor to our part.

*D'Au.* Tis well prepar'd in his entreaty here ;  
 With all states highest obseruations :  
 And to their forme, and words, are added gifts,  
 He was presented with two goodly horfes,  
 One of which two, was the braue Beast *Pastrana* :  
 With plate of gold, and a much prized iewell ;  
 Girdle and hangers, fet with wealthy stones :  
 All which were vallewed, at ten thousand crownes ;  
 The other Lords had suites of tapistry,  
 And chaines of gold, and euery gentleman  
 A paire of Spanish Gloues, and Rapire blades :  
 And here ends their entreaty ; which I hope  
 Is the beginning of more good to vs,  
 Then twenty thousand times their giftes to them.

*Enter Alber : Byr : Beli. Manf. Roifeau : with others.*

*Alber.* My Lord, I grieue that all the fetting forth,  
 Of our best welcome, made you more retired :  
 Your chamber hath beene more lou'd then our honors ;  
 And therefore we are glad your time of parting  
 Is come to fet you in the ayre you loue :  
 Commend my seruice to his Maiefty,  
 And tell him that this daie of peace with him  
 Is held, as holie. All your paines my Lords  
 I shal be alwaies glad to gratifie  
 With any loue and honour, your owne hearts  
 Shall do me grace to wish exprest to you.

*Roif.* Here hath beene strange demeaneure, which  
 shall flie,  
 To the great author of this Ambassy.

FINIS ACTUS I.

ACT 2. SCE. 1.

*Sauoy, Laffin, Roncas, Rochette, Breton.*

*Sauoy.* Admit no entry, I will speake with none,  
Good signior *de Laffin*, your worth shall finde,  
That I will make a iewell for my cabinet,  
Of that the King (in furfet of his store)  
Hath cast out, as the sweepings of his hall ;  
I told him, hauing threatned you away,  
That I did wonder, this small time of peace,  
Could make him cast his armor so securely  
In such as you, and as twere set the head  
Of one so great in counsailes, on his foote,  
And pitch him from him with such guardlike strength.

*Laffi.* He may perhaps finde he hath pitcht away,  
The Axeltree that kept him on his wheelles.

*Sau.* I told him so, I sweare, in other termes  
And not with too much note of our clofe loues  
Least so he might haue smokt our practises.

*Laffi.* To chuse his time, and spit his poison on me,  
Through th' eares, and eies of strangers.

*Sau.* So I told him  
And more then that, which now I will not tell you :  
It rests now then, Noble and worthy friend,  
That to our friendship, we draw Duke *Byron*,  
To whose attraction there is no such chaine,  
As you can fordge, and shake out of your braine.

*Laffi,* I haue deuise the fashion and the weight ;  
To valures hard to draw, we vse retreates ;

And, to pull shaftes home, (with a good bow-arme)  
 We thrust hard from vs ; since he came from Flanders  
 He heard how I was threatned with the King,  
 And hath beene much inquisitiue to know  
 The truth of all, and seekes to speake with me ;  
 The meanes he vsde, I answered doubtfully ;  
 And with an intimation that I shund him,  
 Which will (I know) put more spur to his charge ;  
 And if his haughty stomacke be preparde,  
 With will to any act : for the aspiring  
 Of his ambitious aimes, I make no doubt  
 But I shall worke him to your highnesse wish.

*Sau.* But vndertake it, and I rest assur'd :  
 You are reported to haue skill in Magick,  
 And the euent of things, at which they reach  
 That are in nature apt to ouerreach :  
 Whom the whole circle of the present time,  
 In present pleasures, fortunes, knowledges,  
 Cannot containe : those men (as broken loose  
 From humane limmits) in all violent ends  
 Would faine aspire the faculties of fiends,  
 And in such ayre breathe his vnbounded spirits,  
 Which therefore well will fit such coniurations,  
 Attempt him then by flying ; close with him,  
 And bring him home to vs, and take my dukedome.

*Laf.* My best in that, and all things, vowes your  
 seruice.

*Sau.* Thankes to my deare friend ; and the French  
*Vliffes.* *Exit Sauoy.*

*Enter Byron.*

*Byr.* Here is the man ; my honord friend, *Laffin* ?  
 Alone, and heauy countinanc't ? on what termes  
 Stood th' insultation of the King vpon you ?

*Laffi.* Why do you aske ?

*Byr.* Since I would know the truth.

*Laf.* And when you know it ; what ?

*Byr.* Ile iudge betwixt you,

And (as I may) make euen th' exceffe of either.

*Laff.* Ahlas my Lord, not all your loyaltie,  
Which is in you, more then hereditary,  
Nor all your valure (which is more then humane)  
Can do the seruice you may hope on me  
In founding my displeasde integrity ;  
Stand for the King, as much in policie  
As you haue stird for him in deedes of armes,  
And make your selfe his glorie, and your countries  
Till you bee suckt as drie, and wrought as leane,  
As my fleade carcase : you shall neuer close  
With me, as you imagine.

*Byr.* You much wrong me,  
To thinke me an intelligencing instrument.<sup>3</sup>

*Laff.* I know not how your so affected zeale,  
To be reputed a true harted subiect,  
May stretch or turne you ; I am desperate ;  
If I offend you, I am in your powre :  
I care not how I tempt your conquering furie,  
I am predestin'd to too base an end,  
To haue the honor of your wrath destroy me ;  
And be a worthy obiect for your sword :  
I lay my hand, and head too at your feete,  
As I haue euer, here I hold it still,  
End me directly, doe not goe about.

*Byr.* How strange is this ? the shame of his disgrace  
Hath made him lunatique.

*Laff.* Since the King hath wrong'd me  
He thinkes Ile hurt my selfe ; no, no, my Lord :  
I know that all the Kings in Christendome,  
(If they should ioyne in my reuenge) would proue  
Weake foes to him, still hauing you to friend :  
If you were gone (I care not if you tell him)  
I might be tempted then to right my selfe. *Exit.*

---

3 The edition of 1608 reads "an intelligencing *Lord*."

*Byr.* He has a will to me, and dares not shew it,  
His state decai'd, and he disgrac'd ; distract's him.

*Redit Laffin.*

*Laff.* Change not my words my Lord, I onely said  
I might be tempted then to right my selfe :  
Temptation to treason, is no treason ;  
And that word (tempted) was conditionall too,  
If you were gone, I pray informe the truth. *Exitur.*

*Byr.* Stay iniur'd man, and know I am your friend,  
Farre from these base, and mercenarie reaches,  
I am I sweare to you.

*Laff.* You may be so ;  
And yet youle giue me leaue to be *Laffin*,  
A poore and expuate humor of the Court :  
But what good bloud came out with me ; what veines  
And finews of the Triumphs, now it makes ;  
I list not vante ; yet will I now confesse,  
And dare assume it ; I haue powre to adde  
To all his greatnesse ; and make yet more fixt  
His bould securitie ; Tell him this my Lord ;  
And this (if all the spirits of earth and aire,  
Be able to enforce) I can make good :  
If knowledge of the sure euent of things,  
Euen from the rise of subiects into Kings :  
And falles of Kings to subiects, hold a powre  
Of strength to worke it ; I can make it good ;  
And tell him this to ; if in midst of winter  
To make black Groues grow greene ; to still the thun-  
der ;  
And cast out able flashes from mine eies,  
To beate the lightning back into the skies,  
Proue powre to do it, I can make it good ;  
And tell him this too ; if to lift the Sea  
Vp to the Starres, when all the Windes are still ;  
And keepe it calme, when they are most enrag'd :  
To make earths driest palms, sweate humorous springs  
To make fixt rocks walke ; and loose shadowes stand,



To make the dead speake : midnight see the Sunne,  
Mid-daie turne mid-night ; to diffolue all lawes  
Of nature, and of order, argue powre  
Able to worke all, I can make all good.  
And all this tell the King.

*Byr.* Tis more then strange,  
To see you stand thus at the rapiers point  
With one so kinde, and sure a friend as I.

*Laff.* Who cannot friend himfelfe, is foe to any,  
And to be fear'd of all, and that is it,  
Makes me so skornd, but make me what you can ;  
Neuer so wicked, and so full of fiends,  
I neuer yet, was traitor to my friends :  
The lawes of friendship I haue euer held,  
As my religion ; and for other lawes ;  
He is a foole that keepes them with more care,  
Then they keepe him, safe, rich, and populare :  
For riches, and for populare respects  
Take them amongst yee Minions, but for safety,  
You shall not finde the least flaw in my armes,  
To pierce or taint me ; what will great men be,  
To please the King, and beare authoritie. *Exit.*

*Byr.* How fit a sort were this to hanfell fortune ?  
And I will winne it though I loose my felfe,  
Though he prooue harder then *Egiptian* Marble,  
Ile make him malliable, as th' *Ophyr* gold ;  
I am put off from this dull shore of East,  
Into industrious, and high-going Seas ;  
Where, like *Pelides* in *Scamanders* flood,  
Vp to the eares in farges, I will fight,  
And pluck French *Ilion* vnderneath the waues :  
If to be highest still, be to be best,  
All workes to that end are the worthiest :  
Truth is a golden Ball, cast in our way,  
To make vs stript by falsehood : And as *Spaine*  
When the hote scuffles of *Barbarian* armes,  
Smotherd the life of *Don Sebastian*,  
To guild the leaden rumor of his death  
Gauē for a slaughterd body (held for his)



A hundred thousand crownes ; causd all the state  
 Of superstitious *Portugall* to mourne  
 And celebrate his solemne funerals ;  
 The Moores to conquest, thankfull feasts preferre,  
 And all made with the carcasse of a *Switzer* :  
 So in the Giantlike, and politique warres  
 Of barbarous greatnesse, raging still in peace,  
 Showes to aspire iust obiects ; are laide on  
 With cost, with labour, and with forme enough,  
 Which onely makes our best acts brooke the light,  
 And their ends had, we thinke we haue their right,  
 So worst workes are made good, with good successe,  
 And so for Kings, pay subiects carcases. *Exit.*

*Enter Henry, Roiseau.*

*Hen.* Was he so courted ?

*Roif.* As a Cittie Dame,  
 Brought by her iealous husband, to the Court,  
 Some elder Courtiers entertaining him,  
 While others snatch, a fauour from his wife :  
 One starts from this doore ; from that nooke another,  
 With gifts, and iunkets, and with printed phrase,  
 Steale her employment, shifting place by place  
 Still as her husband comes : so Duke *Byron*  
 Was woode, and worshipt in the Arch-dukes Court,  
 And as th' assistants that your Maiestie,  
 Ioinde in Commission with him, or my selfe,  
 Or any other doubted eye appear'd,  
 He euer vanisht : and as such a dame,  
 As we compar'd with him before, being won  
 To breake faith to her husband, loose her fame,  
 Staine both their progenies, and comming fresh  
 From vnderneath the burthen of her shame,  
 Visits her husband with as chaste a browe,  
 As temperate, and confirm'd behauour,  
 As she came quitted from confession.  
 So from his scapes, would he present a presence,  
 The practise of his state adulterie,

And guilt that should a gracefull bosome stricke,  
Drownde in the fet lake, of a hopelesse cheeke.

*Hen.* It may be hee dissembled, or suppose,  
He be a little tainted : men whom vertue  
Formes with the stufte of fortune, great, and gracious,  
Must needs pertake with fortune in her humor  
Of instabilitie : and are like to shafts  
Growne crookt with standing, which to rectifie,  
Must twice as much be bowd another way,  
He that hath borne wounds for his worthy parts,  
Must for his worst be borne with : we must fit  
Our gouernment to men, as men to it :  
In old time, they that hunted sauadge beasts,  
Are said to clothe themselues in sauage skinnes,  
They that were Fowlers when they went on fowling,  
Wore garments made with wings resembling Fowles :  
To Buls, we must not shew our selues in red,  
Nor to the warlike Elephant in white,  
In all things gouern'd, their infirmities  
Must not be stirrd, nor wrought on ; Duke *Byron*  
Floues with adust, and melancholy choller,  
And melancholy spirits are venemous :  
Not to be toucht, but as they may be cur'de :  
I therefore meane to make him change the ayre,  
And fend him further from those Spanish vapors,  
That still beare fighting sulphure in their brests,  
To breath a while in temperate English ayre,  
Where lips are spic'd with free and loyall counsailes,  
Where policies are not ruinous, but sauing ;  
Wisdome is simple, valure righteous,  
Humaine, and hating facts of brutish forces,  
And whose graue natures, scorne the scoffes of *France*,  
The empty complements of *Italy*,  
The any-way encroaching pride of *Spaine*,  
And loue men modest, hartly, iust and plaine.

*Sauoy, whispering with Lassin.*

*Sau.* Ile found him for *Byron* ; and what I finde,

In the Kings depth ; ile draw vp, and informe,  
 In excitations to the Dukes reuolt,  
 When next I meete with him.

*Laff.* It must be done

With praifing of the Duke ; from whom the King  
 Will take to giue himfelfe ; which tolde the Duke,  
 Will take his heart vp into all ambition.

*Sau.* I know it (politick friend :) and tis my pur-  
 pose, *Exit Laf.*

Your Maieftie hath mift a royall fight,  
 The Duke *Byron*, on his braue beaft *Pastrana*,  
 Who fits him like a full-faild Argofea,  
 Danc'd with a lofty billow, and as fnug  
 Plyes to his bearer, both their motions mixt ;  
 And being confidered in their fite together,  
 They do the beft prefent the ftate of man,  
 In his firft royaltie ruling ; and of beafts  
 In their firft loyaltie feruing ; one commanding,  
 And no way being mou'd ; the other feruing,  
 And no way being compeld : of all the fights  
 That euer my eyes witneft ; and they make  
 A doctrinall and witty Hieroglyphick,  
 Of a bleft kingdome : to exprefse and teach,  
 Kings to command as they could ferue, and fubiects  
 To ferue as if they had powre to command.

*Hen-* You are a good old horfeman I perceiue,  
 And ftill out all the vfe of that good part :  
 Your wit is of the true *Pierean* fpring,  
 That can make any thing, of any thing.

*Sau.* So braue a fubiect as the Duke, no king  
 Seated on earth, can vante of but your Highneffe,  
 So valiant, loyall, and fo great in feruice.

*Hen.* No queftion he fets valour in his height,  
 And hath done feruice to an equall pitche,  
 Fortune attending him with fit euent,  
 To all his ventrous and well-laid attempts.

*Sau.* Fortune to him was *Iuno*, to *Alcides*,  
 For when, or where did ſhe but open way,  
 To any aēt of his ? what ftone tooke he

With her help, or without his owne lost bloud ?  
What fort won he by her ? or was not forc't ?  
What victory but gainst ods ? on what Commander  
Sleepy or negligent, did he euer charge ?  
What Summer euer made she faire to him ?  
What winter, not of one continued storme ?  
Fortune is so farre from his Creditresse,  
That she owes him much : for in him, her lookes  
Are louely, modest, and magnanimous,  
Constant, victorious ; and in his Achieuements,  
Her cheekes are drawne out with a vertuous rednesse,  
Out of his eager spirit to victorie,  
And chaste contention to conuince with honor ;  
And (I haue heard) his spirits haue flowd so high,  
In all his conflicts against any odds,  
That (in his charge) his lips haue bled with feruor :  
How seru'd he at your famous siege of *Dreux* ?  
Where the enemy (assur'd of victory)  
Drew out a bodie of foure thousand horse,  
And twice fixe thousand foote, and like a Crescent,  
Stood for the signall, you : (that show'd your selfe  
A found old souldier) thinking it not fit  
To giue your enemy the ods, and honour  
Of the first stroke, commanded *de la Guiche*,  
To let flie all his cannons, that did pierce  
The aduerse thickest squadrons, and had shot  
Nine volleies ere the foe had once giuen fire :  
Your troope was charg'd, and when your dukes old  
father,  
Met with th' assailants, and their Groue of Reiters  
Repulst so fiercely, made them turne their beards  
And rallie vp themselues behind their troopes ;  
Fresh forces seeing your troopes a little feuerd,  
From that part first assaulted, gaue it charge,  
Which then, this duke made good, seconds his father,  
Beates through and through the enemies greatest  
strength,  
And breakes the rest like Billowes gainst a rock  
And there the heart of that huge battaile broke.

*Hen.* The heart but now came on, in that strong  
body,  
Of twice two thousand horse, lead by *Du Maine*  
Which (if I would be glorious) I could say  
I first encountered.

*Sau.* How did he take in,  
*Beaune* in view of that inuincible army  
Lead by the Lord great Constable of Castile ?  
*Autun*, and *Nuis* : in Burgundy chafte away,  
Vicount *Tauannes* troopes before Dijon,  
And puts himselfe in, and there that was won.

*Hen.* If you would onely giue me leaue my Lord,  
I would do right to him, yet must not giue.

*Sau.* A league from *Fontaine Francois*, when you  
sent him,  
To make discouerie of the Castile army,  
When he discern'd twas it (with wondrous wifdome  
Joinde to his spirit) he seem'd to make retreat,  
But when they prest him, and the Barron of Lux,  
Set on their charge so hotely, that his horse,  
Was slaine, and he most dangerously engag'd,  
Then turnd your braue duke head, and (with such  
ease

As doth an Eccho beate backe violent sounds,  
With their owne forces) he, (as if a wall  
Start sodainely before them) pasht them all  
Flat, as the earth, and there was that field won.

*Hen.* Y'are all the field wide.

*Sau.* O, I aske you pardon,  
The strength of that field yet laie in his backe,  
Vpon the foes part ; and what is to come,  
Of this your Marshal, now your worthie Duke  
Is much beyond the rest : for now he sees  
A fort of horse troopes, issue from the woods,  
In number nere twelue hundred : and retyring  
To tell you that the entire armie follow'd,  
Before he could relate it, he was forc't  
To turne head, and receiue the maine affaulte  
Of fve horse troopes : onely with twenty horse :



The first he met, he tumbled to the earth,  
And brake through all, not daunted with two wounds,  
One on his head, another on his brest,  
The bloud of which, drownd all the field in doubt :  
Your maiesty himselfe was then engag'd,  
Your powre not yet arriu'd, and vp you brought  
The little strength you had : a cloud of foes,  
Ready to burst in stormes about your eares :  
Three squadrons rusht against you, and the first,  
You tooke so fiercely, that you beate their thoughts  
Out of their bosoms, from the vrged fight :  
The second, all amazed you ouerthrew,  
The third disperst, with fieve and twenty horse  
Left of the fourescore that perfude the chafe :  
And this braue conquest, now your Marshall seconds  
Against two squadrons, but with fifty horse,  
One after other he defeats them both,  
And made them runne, like men whose heeles were  
tript,  
And pitch their heads, in their great generalls lap :  
And him he sets on, as he had beene shot  
Out of a Cannon : beates him into route,  
And as a little brooke being ouerrunne  
With a black torrent ; that beares all things downe,  
His furie ouertakes, his fomy back,  
Loded with Cattaile, and with stackes of Corne,  
And makes the miserable Plowman mourne ;  
So was *du Maine* furchardgd, and so *Byron*  
Flow'd ouer all his forces ; euery drop  
Of his lost bloud, bought with a worthy man ;  
And, onely with a hundred Gentlemen  
He wonne the place, from fifteene hundred horse.  
*Heu.* He won the place ?  
*Sau.* On my word, so tis sayd  
*Hen.* Fie you haue beene extreamely misinform'd.  
*Sau.* I onely tell your highnesse what I heard,  
I was not there ; and though I haue beene rude,  
With wonder of his vallor, and presum'd,  
To keepe his merit in his full carire,



Not hearing you, when yours made such a thunder ;  
 Pardon my fault, since twas t'extoll your seruant ;  
 But, is it not most true, that twixt yee both,  
 So few achieu'd, the conquest of so many ?

*Hen.* It is a truth, must make me euer thankfull,  
 But not performd by him, was not I there ?  
 Commanded him, and in the maine affault,  
 Made him but second ?

*Sau.* Hee's the capitall fouldier,  
 That liues this day in holy Christendome,  
 Except your highnesse, alwaies except *Plato*.

*Hen.* We must not giue to one, to take from  
 many,  
 For (not to praise our countrimen) here seru'd,  
 The Generall *My Lord Norris*, sent from England :  
 As great a captaine as the world affords :  
 One fit to leade, and fight for Christendome ;  
 Of more experience ; and of stronger braine ;  
 As valiant for abiding ; In Command,  
 On any fodaine ; vpon any ground  
 And in the forme of all occasions  
 As ready, and as profitably, dauntles ;  
 And heere was then another ; *Collonell Williams*,  
 A worthy Captaine ; and more like the Duke,  
 Because he was lesse temperate then the Generall ;  
 And being familliar with the man you praise,  
 (Because he knew him haughty and incapable,  
 Of all comparifon) would compare with him,  
 And hold his swelling valour to the marke,  
 Iustice had fet in him, and not his will :  
 And as in open vessells filld with water,  
 And on mens shoulders borne, they put treene  
 cuppes,  
 To keepe the wild and flippery element,  
 From washing ouer : follow all his Swayes  
 And tickle aptnes to exceed his bounds,  
 And at the brym containe him : so this Knight,  
 Swum in *Byron*, and held him, but to right.

But leaue these hot comparifons, hee's mine owne,  
And then what I poffeffe, Ile more be knowne.

*Sau.* All this fhall to the duke, I fight for this.

*Exeunt.*

*FINIS. Aētus Secundi.*

ACTVS 3. SCÆNA 1.

*Enter La Fin, Byron following vnfeene.*

*Laff.* A fained paffion in his hearing now,  
(Which he thinks I perceauē not) making confcience,  
Of the reuolt that he hath vrdgd to me,  
(Which now he meanes to profecute) would found,  
How deepe he ftands affected with that fcruple.  
As when the Moone hath comforted the Night,  
And fet the world in filuer of her light,  
The Planets, Aftarifms, and whole ftate of Heauen,  
In beames of gold defcending ; all the windes,  
Bound vp in caues, chargd not to driue abrode,  
Their cloudy heads ; an vniuerfall peace,  
Proclaimd in filence of the quiet earth.  
Soone as her hot and dry fumes are let loofe,  
Stormes and cloudes mixing ; fodainely put out  
The eyes of all thofe glories : The creation,  
Turnd into *Chaos*, and we then defire,  
For all our ioye of life, the death of fleepe ;  
So when the glories of our liues, mens loues,  
Cleere confciences, our fames, and loyalties,  
That did vs worthy comfort, are eclipsd,  
Griefe and difgrace inuade vs ; and for all,  
Our night of life beftdes, our Miferie craues,

Darke earth would ope and hide vs in our graues.

*Byr.* How strange is this ?

*Laff.* What ? did your highnesse heare ?

*Byr.* Both heard and wonderd, that your wit and  
spirit,

And profit in experience of the flaueries,  
Impo'd on vs ; in those mere politique termes,  
Of loue, fame, loyalty, can be carried vp,  
To such a height of ignorant conscience ;  
Of cowerdife, and dissolution,  
In all the free-borne powers of royall man.  
You that haue made way through all the guards,  
Of Jelouse State ; and feen on both your sides,  
The pikes points chardging heauen to let you passe,  
Will you, (in flying with a scrupulous wing,  
Aboue those pikes to heauen-ward) fall on them ?  
This is like men, that (spirited with wine,)  
Passe dangerous places safe ; and die for feare,  
With onely thought of them, being simply sober ;  
We must (in passing to our wished ends,  
Through things calld good and bad) be like the ayre,  
That euenly interposd betwixt the seas,  
And the opposed Element of fire ;  
At either toucheth, but partakes with neither ;  
Is neither hot, nor cold, but with a sleight  
And harmeles temper mixt of both th'extreames.

*Laff.* Tis shrode.

*Byr.* There is no truth of any good  
To be descern'd on earth : and by conuerfion,  
Nought therefore simply bad : But as the stufte,  
Prepar'd for *Arras* pictures, is no Picture,  
Till it be formd, and man hath cast the beames,  
Of his imaginouse fancie through it,  
In forming antient Kings and conquerors,  
As he conceiues they look't, and were attirde,  
Though they were nothing so : so all things here,  
Haue all their price set downe, from men's concepts,  
Which make all terms and actions, good, or bad,  
And are but pliant, and wel-coloured threads,

Put into fained images of truth :  
To which, to yeeld, and kneele, as truth pure kings,  
That puld vs downe with cleere truth of their Gospell,  
Were Superstition to be hift to hell.

*Laff.* Beleeue it, this is reason.

*Byr.* T'is the faith,  
Of reason and of wifdome.

*Laff.* You perfwade,  
As if you could create : what man can shunne,  
The ferches, and compressions of your graces.

*Byr.* We must haue these lures when we hawke for  
friends,

And wind about them like a subtile Riuer,  
That (seeming onely to runne on his course)  
Doth ferch yet, as he runnes ; and still finds out,  
The easiest parts of entry on the shore ;  
Gliding so slyly by, as scarce it toucht,  
Yet still eates some thing in it : so must those,  
That haue large fields, and currants to dispose.

Come, let vs ioyne our streames, we must runne far,  
And haue but little time : The Duke of Sauoy,  
Is shortly to be gone, and I must needes,  
Make you well knowne to him.

*Laff.* But hath your highnes,  
Some enterprise of value ioynd with him ?

*Byr.* With him and greater persons.

*Laffi.* I will creepe  
Vpon my bosome in your Princely seruice,  
Vouch-safe to make me knowne. I heare there liues  
not,

So kind, so bountyfull, and wise a Prince,  
But in your owne excepted excellence.

*Byr.* He shall both know, and loue you : are you  
mine ?

*Laff.* I take the honor of it, on my knee,  
And hope to quite it with your Maiesty. *Exit.*

*Enter Sauoy, Roncas, Rochet Breton.*

*Sau.* *La Fin*, is in the right ; and will obtaine ;

He draweth with his weight ; and like a plummet  
That swaies a dore, with falling off, pulls after.

*Ron.* Thus will *Laffin* be brought a Stranger to  
you,

By him he leads ; he conquers that is conquerd,  
Thats fought, as hard to winne, that fues to be wonne.

*Sau.* But is my Painter warnd to take his picture,  
When he shall see me, and present *Laffin*?

*Roch.* He is (my Lord) and (as your highnesse  
willd)

All we will presse about him, and admire,  
The royale promise of his rare aspect,  
As if he heard not.

*Sau.* Twill enflame him,

Such trickes the Arch-duke vfd t'extoll his greatnes,  
Which complements though plaine men hold absurd,  
And a meere remedy for desire of Greatnesse,  
Yet great men vse them ; as their state Potatoes,  
High Coollifes, and potions to excite  
The lust of their ambition : and this Duke ;  
You know is noted in his naturall garb  
Extreamely glorious ; who will therefore bring  
An appetite expecting such a baite ;  
He comes, go instantly, and fetch the Painter.

*Enter Byron, La Fin.*

*Byr.* All honor to your highnesse,

*Sau.* Tis most true.

All honours flow to me, in you their Ocean ;  
As welcome worthyest Duke, as if my marquifate,  
Were circl'd with you in these amorous armes.

*Byr.* I forrow Sir I could not bring it with me,  
That I might so supply the fruitlesse complement,  
Of onely visiting your excellence,  
With which the King now sends me t'entertaine you ;  
Which notwithstanding doth confer this good,  
That it hath giuen me some small time to shew,  
My gratitude for the many secret bounties,



I haue (by this your Lord Ambaffador)  
Felt from your heighneffe ; and in fhort, t'affure you,  
That all my moft deferts are at your feruice.

*Sau.* Had the king fent me by you halfe his king-  
dome,

It were not halfe fo welcom ;

*Byr.* For defect,  
Of whatfoeuer in my felfe, (my Lord,)  
I here commend to your moft Princely Seruice  
This honord friend of mine ;

*Sau.* Your name I pray you Sir.

*Laff.* *Laffin*, my Lord.

*Sau.* *Laffin*? Is this the man,  
That you fo recommended to my loue ?

*Ron.* The fame my Lord,

*Sau.* Y'are next my Lord the Duke,  
The moft defird of all men. O my Lord,  
The King and I, haue had a mighty conflict,  
About your conflicts, and your matchles worth,  
In military vertues ; which I put  
In Ballance with the continent of France,  
In all the peace and fafty it enioyes.  
And made euen weight with all he could put in  
Of all mens elfe ; and of his owne deferts.

*Byr.* Of all mens elfe? would he weigh other  
mens,  
With my deferuings ?

*Sau.* I vpon my life,  
The Englifh Generall. the Mylor' *Norris*,  
That feru'd amongft you here, he paralleld  
With you, at all parts, and in fome preferd him,  
And Collonell *Williams* (a Welch Collonell)  
He made a man, that at your moft containd you :  
Which the Welch Herrald of their praife, the Cucko,  
Would fcarce haue put, in his monology,  
In ieft, and faid with reuerence to his merits,

*Byr.* With reuerence? Reuerence skornes him : by  
the fpoyle,  
Of all her Merits in me, he fhall rue it ;



Did euer *Curtian* Gulffe play fuch a part ?  
 Had *Curtius* beene fo vfed, if he had brook't,  
 That rauenous whirlepoole, pourd his folide fpirits,  
 Through earth diffolued finews, ftept her veines,  
 And rofe with faued Rome, vpon his backe,  
 As I fwum pooles of fire, and Gullfs of braffe,  
 To faue my country ? thruft this venturous arme,  
 Beneath her ruines ; tooke her on my necke,  
 And fet her fafe on her appeafed fhore ?  
 And opes the king, a fouler bog then this,  
 In his fo rotten bofome, to deuoure  
 Him that deuourd, what elfe had fwallowed him  
 In a detraction, fo with fpight embrewed,  
 And drowne fuch good in fuch ingratitude ?  
 My fpirrit as yet, but flooping to his reft,  
 Shines hotly in him, as the Sunne in clouds,  
 Purpled, and made proud with a peacefull Euen :  
 But when I throughly fet to him ; his cheekes,  
 Will (like thofe clouds) forgoe their collour quite,  
 And his whole blaze, fmoke into endles night,  
*San.* Nay nay, we muft haue no fuch gall my  
 Lord,

O'reflow our friendly liuers : my relation,  
 Onely deliuers my inflamed zeale  
 To your religious merits ; which me thinkes,  
 Should make your highnes canoniz'd, a Saint.

*Byr.* What had his armes beene, without my  
 arme,  
 That with his motion, made the whole field moue ?  
 And this held vp, we ftill had victory.  
 When ouer charg'd with number, his few friends,  
 Retir'd amazed, I fet them on affurd,  
 And what rude ruine feal'd on I confirmed ;  
 When I left leading, all his army reeld,  
 One fell on other foule, and as the *Cyclop*  
 That hauing loft his eye, ftrooke euery way,  
 His blowes directed to no certaine fcope ;  
 Or as the foule departed from the body,  
 The body wants coherence in his parts,

Can not confist, but feuer, and diffolue ;  
So I remou'd once, all his armies shooke,  
Panted, and fainted, and were euer flying,  
Like wandring pulfes sperft through bodies dying.

*Sau.* It cannot be denied, tis all fo true,  
That what seemes arrogance, is desert in you.

*Byr.* What monftrous humors feed a Princes  
blood,  
Being bad to good men, and to bad men good ?

*Sau.* Well let these contradictions paffe (my lord,)  
Till they be reconcil'd, or put in forme,  
By power giuen to your will, and you present,  
The fashon of a prefect gouernment ;  
In meane fpace but a word, we haue fmall time,  
To fpend in priuate, which I wifh may be  
With all aduantage taken ; Lord *Laffin.*

*Ron.* Ift not a face of excellent presentment,  
Though not fo amoufe with pure white, and red,  
Yet is the whole proportion fingular.

*Roch.* That euer I beheld.

*Bret.* It hath good lines,  
And trafts drawne through it : the purple, rare,

*Ron.* I heard the famous and right learned Earle,  
And Archbishop of *Lyons, Pierce Pinac,*  
Who was reported to haue wondroufe Iudgment  
In mens euent, and natures, by their lookes :  
(Npon his death bed, vifited by this duke)  
He told his fifter, when his grace was gon,  
That he had neuer yet obserud a face,  
Of worfe prefage then this ; and I will fweare,  
That (fomething feene in Phifognomy)  
I do not find in all the rules it giues  
One flendrest blemifh tending to mishap,  
But (on the opposite part) as we may fee,  
On trees late bloffomd, when all frofts are paff,  
How they are taken, and what will be fruit :  
So on this tree of Scepters, I difcerne  
How it is loaden with apparances,

Rules anfwering Rules ; and glances, crownd with  
glances ;

*He fnatches away the picture.*

*Byr.* What, does he take my picture ?

*Sau.* I my Lord.

*Byr.* Your Highneffe will excufe me ; I will giue  
you

My likeneffe put in Statue, not in picture ;  
And by a Statuary of mine owne,  
That can in Braffe expresse the witte of man,  
And in his forme, make all men see his vertues :  
Others that with much strictneffe imitate,  
The some-thing stooping carriage of my neck,  
The voluble, and milde radiance of mine eyes,  
Neuer obserue my Masculine aspect,  
And Lyon-like instinct, it shaddoweth :  
Which Enuie cannot say, is flatterie :  
And I will haue my Image promise you,  
Cut in such matter, as shall euer last ;  
Where it shall stand, fixt with eternall rootes,  
And with a most unmooued grauitie ;  
For I will haue the famous mountaine *Oros*,  
That lookes out of the Dutchy where I gouerne,  
(Into your highneffe Dukedome) first made yours,  
And then with such inimitable art  
Exprest and handled ; chieflie from the place  
Where most conspicuously, he shewes his face,  
That though it keepe the true forme of that hill  
In all his longitudes, and latitudes,  
His height, his distances, and full proportion,  
Yet shall it cleerely beare my counterfaite,  
Both in my face and all my lineaments :  
And euery man shall say, this is *Byron*.  
Within my left hand, I will hold a Cittie,  
Which is the Cittie *Amiens* ; at whose sledge  
I feru'd so memorably : from my right,  
Ile powre an endlesse flood, into a Sea  
Raging beneath me ; which shall intimate  
My ceaselesse service, drunke vp by the King

As th' Ocean drinks vp riuers, and makes all  
Beare his proude title ; *Iuory, Brasfe, and Goulde,*  
That theeues may purchafe ; and be bought and  
fould,

Shall not be vſide about me ; laſting worth  
Shall onely ſet the Duke of *Byron* forth.

*Sau.* O that your ſtatuary could expreſſe you,  
With any nereneſſe to your owne inſtructions ;  
That ſtatue would I priſe paſt all the iewells  
Within my cabinet of *Beatrice,*  
The memorie of my Grandame Portugall ;  
Moſt roiall Duke : we can not longe endure  
To be thus priuate, let vs then conclude,  
With this great reſolution : that your wiſedome,  
Will not forget to caſt a pleaſing vaile,  
Ouer your anger ; that may hide each glance,  
Of any notice taken of your wrong,  
And ſhew your ſelf the more obſequious.  
Tis but the virtue of a little patience,  
There are ſo oft attempts made gainſt his perſon,  
That ſometimes they may ſpeede, for they are plants  
That ſpring the more for cutting, and at laſt  
Will caſt their wiſhed ſhadow : marke ere long,

*Enter Nemours Soiffon.*

See who comes here my Lord, as now no more,  
Now muſt we turne ouer ſtreame another way ;  
My Lord, I hembly thanke his maieſty,  
That he would grace my idle time ſpent here  
With entertainment of your princely perſon ;  
Which, worthely, he keeps for his owne boſome.  
My Lord, the duke *Nemours* ? and Count *Soiffon* ?  
Your honours haue beene bountifully done me  
In often viſitation : let me pray you,  
To ſee ſome iewells now, and helpe my choice :  
In making vp a preſent for the King.

*Nem.* Your highneſſe ſhall much grace vs.

*Sau.* I am doubtfull  
That I haue much incenst the Duke *Byron*,  
With praifing the Kings worthineffe in armes  
So much past all men.

*Soif.* He deserues it, highly.

*Exit. manet Byr : Laffin.*

*Byr.* What wrongs are these, laid on me by the  
King,  
To equall others worths in warre, with mine ;  
Endure this, and be turnd into his Moile  
To beare his sumptures ; honord friend be true,  
And we will turne these torrents, hence.

*En. the King. Exit Laffi.*

*Enter Henry, Espe, Vitry, Fanin.*

*Hen.* Why suffer you that ill aboding vermine,  
To breede so neere your bosome ? bee assurde,  
His hants are omenous, not the throtes of Rauens,  
Spent on infected houses, howles of dogs,  
When no found stirres, at midnight ; apparitions,  
And strokes of spirits, clad in black mens shapes :  
Or ougly womens : the aduerse decrees  
Of constellations, nor securitie,  
In vicious peace, are furer fatall vthers  
Of femall mischiefes, and mortallities,  
Then this prodigious feend is, where he fawnes :  
*Lafiend*, and not *Laffin*, he should be cald.

*Byr.* Be what he will, men in themselues entire,  
March safe with naked feete, on coles of fire :  
I build not outward, nor depend on proppes,  
Nor chuse my confort by the common eare :  
Nor by the Moone-shine, in the grace of Kings :  
So rare are true deseruers, lou'd or knowne,  
That men lou'd vulgarely, are euer none :  
Nor men grac't feruilely, for being spots  
In Princes traines, though borne euen with their  
crownes ;  
The Stalion powre hath such a beesome taile,



That it sweepes all from iustice, and such filth  
He beares out in it, that men mere exempt  
Are merely cleereft : men will shortly buie  
Friends from the prifon or the pillorie,  
Rather then honors markets. I feare none,  
But foule Ingratitude. and Detraction,  
In all the brood of villanie.

*Hen.* No? not treason?

Be circumfpect, for to a credulous eye,  
He comes inuifible, vail'd with flatterie,  
And flaterers looke like friends, as Woolues, like  
Dogges.

And as a glorious Poeme fronted well  
With many a goodly Herralld of his praife,  
So farre from hate of praifes to his face,  
That he praies men to praife him, and they ride  
Before, with trumpets in their mouthes, proclayming  
Life to the holie furie of his lines :  
All drawne, as if with one eye he had leerd,  
On his lou'd hand, and led it by a rule ;  
That his plumes onely Imp the Mufes wings,  
He fleepes with them, his head is napt with baies,  
His lips breake out with *Nectar*, his tunde feete  
Are of the great laft, the perpetuall motion,  
And he puft wirh their empty breath beleeuues  
Full merit, eaf'd, thofe paffions of winde,  
Which yet ferue, but to praife, and cannot merit,  
And fo his furie in their ayre expires :  
So *de Laffin*, and such corrupted Herrallds,  
Hirde to encorage, and to glorifie  
May force what breath they will into their cheekes  
Fitter to blow vp bladders, then full men :  
Yet may puff men to, with perfwasions  
That they are Gods in worth ; and may rife Kings  
With treading on their noifes ; yet the worthieft,  
From onely his owne worth receiues his fpirit  
And right is worthy bound to any merit ;  
Which right, fhall you haue euer ; leaue him then,  
He followes none but markt, and wretched men ;



And now for England you shall goe my lord,  
 Our Lord Ambassador to that matchlesse Queene ;  
 You neuer had a voiage of such pleasure  
 Honor, and worthy obiects : Ther's a Queene  
 Where nature keeps her state, and state her Court,  
*Wisdom* her studie, *Conntinence* her fort,  
 Where *Magnanimity*, *Humanitie* :  
 Firmnesse in counsaile and integritie :  
 Grace to her porest subiects : Maiestie  
 To awe the greatest, haue respects diuine,  
 And in her each part, all the vertues shine.

*Exit Hen. & Sau. manet Byron.*

*Byr.* Inioy your will a while, I may haue mine.  
 VWherefore (before I part to this ambassage)  
 Ile be resolu'd by a Magician  
 That dwells hereby, to whome ile goe disguisde,  
 And shew him my births figure, set before  
 By one of his profession, of the which  
 Ile craue his iudgement, fayning I am sent  
 From some great personage, whose natiuitie,  
 He wisheth should be censurd by his skill.  
 But on go my plots, be it good or ill.

*Exit.*

*Enter La Brosse.*

This houre by all rules of Astrologie,  
 Is dangerous to my perfon, if not deadly.  
 How haples is our knowledge to fore-tel  
 And not be able to preuent a mischiefe,  
 O the strange difference twixt vs and the stars :  
 They worke with inclynations stronge and fatall  
 And nothing know ; and we know all their working  
 And nought can do, or nothing can preuent ?  
 Rude ignorance is beastly, knowledge wretched,  
 The heauenly powers enuy what they *Enioyne* :  
 VVe are commanded t'imitate there natures,  
 In making all our ends eternitie :  
 And in that imitation we are plagued,  
 And worse then they esteemd, that haue no foules,

But in their nostrils, and like beasts expire ;  
As they do that are ignorant of arts,  
By drowning their eternall parts in fence,  
And sensuall affectations : while wee liue  
Our good parts take away, the more they giue.

*Byron solus disguised like a Carrier of letters.*

*Byr.* The forts that fauorites hold in Princes  
hearts,  
In common subiects loues ; and their owne strengths  
Are not so sure, and vnexpugnable,  
But that the more they are presum'd vpon,  
The more they faile ; dayly and houely prooffe,  
Tels vs prosperity is at highest degree  
The fount and handle of calamitie :  
Like dust before a whirle-winde those men flie,  
That prostrate on the grounds of fortune lye :  
And being great (like trees that broadest sproote)  
Their owne top-heauy state grubs vp their roote.  
These apprehensions startle all my powers,  
And arme them with suspition gainst them-selues,  
In my late proiects ; I haue cast my selfe  
Into the armes of others ; and will see  
If they will let me fall ; or tosse me vp  
Into th' affected compasse of a throne.  
God faue you sir.

*Labroff.* Y' are welcome friend ; what would you ?

*Byr.* I would entreate you, for some crownes I  
bring,  
To giue your iudgement of this figure cast,  
To know by his natiuitie there seene ;  
What sort of end the person shall endure,  
Who sent me to you, and whose birth it is.

*Labroff.* Ile herein do my best, in your desire ;  
The man is raifd out of a good descent,  
And nothing oulder then your selfe I thinke ;  
Is it not you ?

*Byr.* I will not tell you that :

But tell me on what end he shall arriue.

*Labroff.* My sonne, I see, that he whose end is  
cast

In this set figure, is of noble parts,  
And by his militarie valure raisde,  
To princely honours ; and may be a king,  
But that I see a *Caput Algol* here,  
That hinders it I feare.

*Byr.* A *Caput Algol* ?

What's that I pray ?

*Labroff.* Forbeare to aske me, sonne,  
You bid me speake, what feare bids me conceale.

*Byr.* You haue no cause to feare, and therefore  
speake.

*Labroff.* Youle rather wish you had beene ignorant,  
Then be instructed in a thing so ill.

*Byr.* Ignorance is an idle salue for ill,  
And therefore do not vrge me to enforce,  
What I would freely know ; for by the skill  
Showne in thy aged hayres, ile lay thy braine  
Here scattered at my feete, and seeke in that,  
What safely thou must vtter with thy tongue,  
If thou deny it.

*Labroff.* Will you not allow me  
To hold my peace ? what lesse can I desire ?  
If not, be pleas'd with my constrained speech.

*Byr.* Was euer man yet punisht for expressing  
What he was chargde ? be free, and speake the worst.

*Labroff.* Then briefly this ; the man hath lately  
done

An action that will make him loose his head.

*Byr.* Curst be thy throte & foule, Rauen, Schriech-  
owle, hag.

*Labroff.* O hold, for heauens sake hold.

*Byr.* Hold on, I will,

Vault, and contracter of all horrid sounds,  
Trumpet of all the miseries in hell,  
Of my confusions ; of the shamefull end  
Of all my seruices ; witch, fiend, accurst

For euer be the poison of thy tongue,  
And let the black fume of thy venom'd breath,  
Infect the ayre, shrinke heauen, put out the starres,  
And raine so fell and blew a plague on earth,  
That all the world may falter with my fall.

*Labroff.* Pitty my age, my Lord.

*Byr.* Out prodigie,  
Remedy of pittie, mine of flint,  
Whence with my nailes and feete, ile digge enough,  
Horror, and sauage cruelty, to build  
Temples to Massacre: dam of deuils take thee,  
Hadst thou no better end to crowne my parts.  
The Bulls of *Colchos*, nor his triple neck,  
That howles out Earthquakes: the most mortall  
vapors,  
That euer stifled and strooke dead the fowles,  
That flew at neuer such a fightly pitch,  
Could not haue burnt my bloud so.

*Labroff.* I told truth,  
And could haue flatterd you.

*Byr.* O that thou hadst ;  
Would I had giuen thee twenty thousand crownes  
That thou hadst flatterd me : there's no ioy on earth,  
Neuer so rationall, so pure, and holy,  
But is a Iester, Parasite, a Whore,  
In the most worthy parts, with which they please,  
A drunkenesse of foule, and a disease.

*Labroff.* I knew you not.

*Byr.* Peace, dog of *Pluto*, peace,  
Thou knewst my end to come, not me here present :  
Pox of your halting humane knowledges ;  
O death ! how farre off hast thou kild ? how soone  
A man may know too much, though neuer nothing ?  
Spight of the Starres, and all Astrologie,  
I will not loose my head : or if I do,  
A hundred thousand heads shall off before.  
I am a nobler substance then the Starres,  
And shall the baser ouer-rule the better ?  
Or are they better, since they are the bigger ?

I haue a will, and faculties of choise,  
 To do, or not to do : and reason why,  
 I doe, or not doe this : the starres haue none,  
 They know not why they shine, more then this Taper,  
 Nor how they worke, nor what : ile change my courfe,  
 Ile peece-meale pull, the frame of all my thoughts,  
 And cast my will into another mould :  
 And where are all your *Caput Algols* then ?  
 Your Plannets all, being vnderneath the earth,  
 At my natiuitie : what can they doe ?  
 Malignant in aspects ? in bloody houfes ?  
 Wilde fire consume them ; one poore cup of wine,  
 More then I vse, that my weake braine will beare,  
 Shall make them drunke and reele out of their spheres,  
 For any certaine act they can enforce.  
 O that mine armes were wings, that I might flie,  
 And pluck out of their hearts, my destinie !  
 Ile weare those golden Spurres vpon my heeles,  
 And kick at fate ; be free all worthy spirits,  
 And stretch your selues, for greatnesse and for height :  
 Vntruffe your flaueries, you haue height enough,  
 Beneath this steepe heauen to vse all your reaches,  
 'Tis too farre off, to let you, or respect you.  
 Giue me a spirit that on this lifes rough sea,  
 Loues t'haue his failes fild with a lustie winde,  
 Euen till his sayle-yerds tremble ; his Mafts crack,  
 And, his rapt ship runne on her side so lowe  
 That she drinkes water, and her keele plowes ayre :  
 There is no danger to a man, that knowes  
 What life and death is : there's not any law,  
 Exceeds his knowledge ; neither is it lawfull  
 That he should stoope to any other law.  
 He goes before them, and commands them all,  
 That to him-felfe is a law rationall.

*Exit.*



ACTVS 4. SCÆNA. I.

*Enter D'Aumont, with Crequi.*

The Duke of *Byron* is return'd from *England*,  
And (as they say) was Princely entertainde,  
Schoold by the matchlesse Queene there, who I heare  
Spake most diuinely ; and would gladly heare,  
Her speech reported.

*Cre.* I can ferue your turne,  
As one that speakes from others, not from her,  
And thus it is reported at his parting :

**T**HVS *Monsieur Du Byron* you haue beheld,  
Our Court proportion'd to our little kingdome,  
In euery entertainment ; yet our minde,  
To do you all the rites of your repaire,  
Is as vnbounded as the ample ayre.  
What idle paines haue you bestowd to see  
A poore old woman ? who in nothing liues  
More, then in true affections, borne your king ;  
And in the perfect knowledge she hath learn'd,  
Of his good knights, and seruants of your fort.  
We thanke him that he keeps the memory  
Of vs and all our kindnesse ; but must say,  
That it is onely kept ; and not laid out  
To such affectionate profit as we wish ;  
Being so much set on fire with his deserts,  
That they consume vs ; not to be restorde  
By your presentment of him ; but his person :



And we had thought, that he whose vertues flye  
 So beyond wonder, and the reach of thought,  
 Should check at eight houres faile, and his high spirit  
 That stoopes to feare, lesse then the Poles of heauen ;  
 Should doubt an vnder billow of the Sea,  
 And (being a Sea) be sparing of his streames :  
 And I muft blame all you that may aduife him ;  
 That (hauing helpt him through all martiall dangers)  
 You let him sticke, at the kinde rites of peace,  
 Considering all the forces I haue sent,  
 To fet his martiall seas vp in firme walls,  
 On both his sides for him to passe at pleasure ;  
 Did plainly open him a guarded way  
 And led in Nature to this friendly shore,  
 But here is nothing worth his personall fight,  
 Here are no walled Citties ; for that Christall  
 Sheds with his light, his hardnesse, and his height  
 About our thankfull person, and our Realme ;  
 Whose onely ayde, we euer yet desire ;  
 And now I see, the helpe we sent to him,  
 Which should haue swum to him in our owne blood,  
 Had it beene needfull ; (our affections  
 Being more giuen to his good, then he himselfe)  
 Ends in the actuall right it did his state,  
 And ours is sleighted ; all our worth is made,  
 The common-stock, and banck ; from whence are  
     feru'd

All mens occasions ; yet (thanks to heauen)  
 Their graticudes are drawne drye ; not our bounties.  
 And you shall tell your King, that he neglects  
 Ould friends for new ; and sets his soothed Ease  
 About his honor ; Marshals policie  
 In ranck before his iustice ; and his profit  
 Before his royalty : his humanitie gone,  
 To make me no repaiment of mine owne.

*D'Au.* What answered the Duke ?

*Cre.* In this sort.

Your highnesse sweete speech hath no sharper end,  
 Then he would wish his life ; if he neglected,

The least grace you haue nam'd ; but to his wish,  
Much powre is wanting : the greene rootes of warre,  
Not yet so close cut vp, but he may dash  
Against their relickes to his vtter ruine,  
Without more neere eyes, fixt vpon his feete,  
Then those that looke out of his countries foyle,  
And this may well excuse his personall prefence,  
Which yet he oft hath long'd to fet by yours :  
That he might imitate the Maiestie,  
Which so long peace hath practisde, and made full,  
In your admir'd apparance ; to illustrate  
And rectifie his habite in rude warre.  
And his will to be here, must needs be great,  
Since heauen hath thron'd so true a royaltie here,  
That he thinkes no king absolutely crownde,  
Whose temples haue not stood beneath this skie,  
And whose height is not hardned with these starres,  
Whose influences for this altitude,  
Distild, and wrought in with this temperate ayre,  
And this diuision of the Element  
Haue with your raigne, brought forth more worthy  
    spirits,  
For counsaile, valour, height of wit, and art,  
Then any other region of the earth :  
Or were brought forth to all your ancestors,  
And as a cunning Orator, referues  
His fairest similies, best-adorning figures,  
Chiefe matter, and most mouing arguments  
For his conclusion ; and doth then supply  
His ground-streames layd before, glides ouer them,  
Makes his full depth seene through ; and so takes vp,  
His audience in applauses past the clouds.  
So in your gouernment, concludiue nature,  
(Willing to end her Excellence in earth  
When your foote shall be fet vpon the starres)  
Shows all her Soueraigne Beauties, Ornaments,  
Vertues, and Raptures ; ouertakes her workes  
In former Empires, makes them but your foyles,  
Swels to her full Sea, and againe doth drowne

The world, in admiration of your crowne.

*D'Au.* He did her (at all parts) confessed right.

*Cre.* She tooke it yet, but as a part of Court-ship,  
And sayd, he was the subtile Orator,  
To whom he did too gloriously resemble,  
Nature in her, and in her gouernment,  
He said, he was no Orator, but a Souldier,  
More then this ayre, in which you breath hath made  
me,

My studious loue, of your rare gouernment,  
And simple truth, which is most eloquent,  
Your Empire is so amply absolute,  
That euen your Theaters show more comely rule,  
True nobleffe, royaltie, and happinesse  
Then others courts : you make all state before  
Vtterly obsolete ; all to come, twice sod.  
And therefore doth my royall Soueraigne wish  
Your yeers may proue, as vitall, as your virtues,  
That (standing on his Turrets this way turn'd,  
Ording and fixing his affaires by yours)  
He may at last, on firme grounds, passe your Seas,  
And see that Maiden-sea of Maiestie,  
In whose chaste armes, so many kingdomes lye.

*D'Au.* When came she to her touch of his ambition ?

*Cre.* In this speech following, which I thus remember.

If I hold any merit worth his presence,  
Or any part of that, your Courtship giues me,  
My subiects haue bestowed it ; some in counsaile,  
In action some, and in obedience all ;  
For none knowes, with such prooffe as you my Lord,  
How much a subiect may renowne his Prince,  
And how much Princes of their subiects hold ;  
In all the seruices that euer subiect  
Did for his Soueraigne ; he that best deferu'd  
Must (in comparison) except, *Byron* ;  
And to winne this prize cleere ; without the maimes  
Commonly giuen men by ambition,

When all their parts lye open to his view,  
Shows continence, past their other excellence :  
But for a subiect to affect a kingdome,  
Is like the Cammell, that of *Ioue* begd hornes,  
And such mad-hungrie men, as well may eate,  
Hote coles of fire, to feede their naturall heate ;  
For, to aspire to competence with your King  
What subiect is so grose, and Gyantly ?  
He hauing now a *Daulphine* borne to him,  
Whose birth, ten dayes before, was dreadfully  
Vsherd with Earth-quakes, in most parts of *Europe*,  
And that giues all men, cause enough to feare  
All thought of competition with him.  
Commend vs good my Lord, and tell our Brother  
How much we ioy, in that his royall issue,  
And in what prayers, we raife our heart to heauen,  
That in more terror to his foes, and wonder  
He may drinke Earthquakes, and deuoure the thun-  
der :

So we admire your valure, and your vertues,  
And euer will contend, to winne their honor.  
Then spake she to *Crequie*, and Prince *D'Auergne*,  
And gaue all gracious farewell ; when *Byron*  
Was thus encountred by a Councillor  
Of great and eminent name, and matchlesse merit :  
I thinke (my Lord) your princely *Daulphin* beares  
*Arion* on his Cradle, through your kingdome,  
In the sweete Musique ioy strikes from his birth.  
He answerd ; and good right ; the cause commands it.  
But (said the other) had we a fift *Henry*,  
To claime his ould right : and one man to friend,  
Whom you well know my Lord, that for his friendship  
Were promist the Vice-royaltie of *France*,  
We would not doubt of conquest, in despight  
Of all those windy Earth-quakes. He replyed ;  
Treason was neuer guide to English conquests,  
And therefore that doubt shall not fright our *Daul-*  
*phine* ;  
Nor would I be the friend to such a foe,

For all the royalties in Christendome.  
 Fix there your foote (sayd he) I onely giue  
 False fire, and would be lothe to shoote you off :  
 He that winnes Empire with the losse of faith,  
 Out-buies it ; and will banck-route ; you haue layde  
 A braue foundation, by the hand of virtue :  
 Put not the roofe to fortune : foolish statuaries,  
 That vnder little Saints suppose, great bafes  
 Make lesse, to fence, the Saints ; and so where fortune,  
 Aduanceth uile mindes, to states great and noble,  
 She much the more exposeth them to flame,  
 Not able to make good, and fill their bafes,  
 With a conformed structure ; I haue found,  
 (Thankes to the bleffer of my searche) that counfailes,  
 Held to the lyne of Iustice ; still produce,  
 The surest states, and greatest, being sure,  
 Without which fit assurance, in the greatest,  
 As you may see a mighty promontorie  
 More digd and vnder-eaten, then may warrant,  
 A safe supportance, to his hanging browes,  
 All passengers auoide him, shunne all ground  
 That lyes within his shadow, and beare still  
 A flying eye vpon him, so great men  
 Corrupted in their grounds and building out  
 Too swelling fronts for their foundations ;  
 When most they should be propt, are most forsaken,  
 And men will rather thrust into the stormes  
 Of better grounded States, then take a shelter  
 Beneath their ruinous, and fearefull weight ;  
 Yet they, so ouersee, their faultie bafes,  
 That they remaine securer in conceipt :  
 And that securitie, doth worse presage  
 Their nere distructions, then their eaten grounds ;  
 And therefore heauen it selfe is made to vs  
 A perfect Hieroglyphick to expresse,  
 The Idleneffe of such securitie,  
 And the graue labour, of a wise distrust,  
 In both forts of the all-enclining starres ;  
 Where all men note this difference in their shyning,



As plaine as they distinguish either hand ;  
The fixt starres wauer, and the erring, stand.

*D'Aum.* How took hee this so worthy admonition ?

*Cre.* Grauely applied (said he) and like the man,  
Whome all the world faies, ouerrules the starres ;  
Which are diuine bookes to vs ; and are read  
By vnderstanders onely, the true obiects,  
And chief companions of the truest men ;  
And (though I need it not) I thanke your counsaile,  
That neuer yet was idle, But spherelike,  
Still mooues about, and is the continent  
To this blest Ile.

ACT 5.      SCEN. 1.

*Enter Byron, D'Auergne, Laffin.*

*Byr.* The Circle of this ambassie is closde,  
For which I long haue long'd, for mine owne ends ;  
To see my faithfull. and leaue courtly friends,  
To whom I came (me thought) with such a spirit,  
As you haue seene, a lusty courser shoue,  
That hath beene longe time at his manger tied ;  
High fed, alone, and when (his headstall broken)  
Hee runnes his prifon, like a trumpet neighs,  
Cuts ayre, in high curuets, and shakes his head :  
(With wanton stopings, twixt his forelegs) mocking  
The heauy center ; spreads his flying crest,  
Like to an Ensigne hedge, and ditches leaping,  
Till in the fresh meate, at his naturall foode  
He sees free fellowes, and hath met them free :  
And now (good friend) I would be fain inform'd,



What our right Princely Lord, the Duke of *Sauoy*  
Hath thought on, to employ my comming home.

*Laf.* To try the Kings trust in you, and withall,  
How hot he trailes on our conspiracie :  
He first would haue you, begge the gouernment,  
Of the important Citadell of Bourg :  
Or to place in it, any you shall name :  
VVhich wilbe wondrous fit, to march before,  
His other purposos ; and is a fort  
Hee rates, in loue, aboue his patrimonie ;  
To make which fortresse worthie of your fuite :  
He vowes (if you obtaine it) to bestowe  
His third faire daughter, on your excellence,  
And hopes the King will not deny it you.

*Byr.* Denie it me ? deny me such a fuite ?  
Who will he grant, if he deny it me.

*Laf.* He'le find some politique shift to do't, I  
feare.

*Bir.* What shift ? or what euasion can he finde,  
What one patch is there in all policies shop,  
(That botcher vp of Kingdomes) that can mend  
The brack betwixt vs, any way denying.

*D'Au.* Thats at your peril :

*Byr.* Come, he dares not do't.

*D'Au.* Dares not ? presume not so ; you know  
(good duke)

That all things hee thinkes fit to do, he dares.

*Byr.* By heauen I wonder at you, I will aske it,  
As sternely, and secure of all repulse  
As th' antient Persians did when they implorde,  
Their idoll fire to grant them any boone ;  
With which they would descend into a flood,  
And threaten there to quench it, if they faild,  
Of that they ask't it :

*Laffi.* Said like pour Kings King ;  
Cold hath no act in depth, nor are fuites wrought  
(Of any high price) that are coldly fought :  
Ile hast, and with your courage, comfort *Sauoy*.

*Exit Laffin.*

*D'Au.* I am your friend (my Lord) and will deferue

That name, with following any course you take ;  
Yet (for your owne sake) I could wish your spirit  
Would let you spare all broade termes of the King,  
Or, on my life you will at last repent it :

*Byr.* What can he doe ?

*D'Aum.* All that you can not feare.

*Byr.* You feare too much, be by, when next I see  
him,

And see how I will vrge him in this fuite,  
He comes, marke you, that thinke  
He will not grant it.

*Enter Henry, Espe. Soiff. Ianin.*

I am become a fuitter to your highnesse.

*Hen.* For what, my Lord, tis like you shall obtaine.

*Bya.* I do not much doubt that ; my seruices,  
I hope haue more strength in your good conceit  
Then to receiue repulse, in such requests.

*Hen.* What is it ?

*Byr.* That you would bestow on one whom I shall  
name,

The keeping of the Citadell of Bourg,

*Hen.* Excuse me sir, I must not grant you that.

*Byr.* Not grant me that ?

*Hen.* It is not fit I should ;

You are my gouernor in Burgundy,  
And Prouince gouernors, that command in chiefe,  
Ought not to haue the charge of fortresses ;  
Besides, it is the chiefe key of my kingdome,  
That opens towards Italie, and must therefore,  
Be giuen to one that hath imediatly  
Dependance on vs.

*Byr.* These are wondrous reasons,  
Is not a man depending on his merits  
As fit to haue the charge of such a key

As one that meerey hangs vppon your humors ?

*Hen :* Do not enforce your merits so your self ;  
It takes away their lustre, and reward.

*Byr :* But you will grant my suite ?

*Hen :* I sweare I cannot,  
Keeping the credit of my braine and place.

*Byr.* Will you deny me then ?

*Hen :* I am inforced ;  
I haue no power, more then your selfe in things  
That are beyond my reason.

*Byr.* Then my selfe ?  
That's a strange sleight in your comparison ;  
Am I become th' example of such men  
As haue lost power ? Such a diminutiue ?  
I was comparatiue in the better sort ;  
And such a King as you, would say I cannot,  
Do such ; or such a thing ; were I as great  
In power as he ; euen that indefinite he,  
Expresst me full : This Moone is strangely chang'd.

*Hen.* How can I helpe it ? would you haue a King  
That hath a white beard ; haue so greene a braine ?

*Byr :* A plague of braine ; what doth this touch  
your braine ?

You must giue me more reason or I sweare

*Hen :* Sweare ; what doe you sweare ?

*Byr :* I Sweare you wrong me,  
And deale not like a King, to iest, and sleight,  
A man that you should curiously reward ;  
Tell me of your gray beard ? it is not gray  
With care to recompence me, who eas'd your care.

*Hen :* You haue beene recompenc't, from head to  
foote.

*Byr :* With a distrustd dukedome ? Take your  
dukedome

Bestow'd on me againe ; It was not giuen  
For any loue, but feare, and force of shame.

*Hen :* Yet twas your honor ; which if you respect  
not,

Why seeke you this Addition ?

*Byron* : Since this honour,  
Would shew you lou'd me to, in trusting me,  
Without which loue, and trust ; honor is shame ;  
A very Pageant, and a propertie :  
Honor, with all his Adiuncts, I deferue,  
And you quit my deserts, with your gray beard.

*Hen* : Since you expostulate the matter so ;  
I tell you plaine ; Another reason is  
Why I am mou'd to make you this deniall  
That I suspect you to haue had intelligence  
With my vowd enimies.

*Byr* : Miserie of vertue,  
Ill is made good, with worfe ? This reason poures  
Poyson, for Baline, into the wound you made ;  
You make me madde, and rob me of my foule,  
To take away my try'd loue, and my Truth ;  
Which of my labors, which of all my woundes,  
Which ouerthrow, which Battayle wonne for you,  
Breedes this suspition ? Can the blood of faith,  
(Loft in all these to finde it prooffe, and strength)  
Beget disloyalty ? all my raine is falne,  
Into the horse-fayre ; springing pooles and myre ;  
And not in thankfull grounds, or fields of fruite ;  
Fall then before vs, O thou flaming Christall,  
That art the vncorrupted Register  
Of all mens merits : And remonstrate heere,  
The fights, the dangers, the affrights and horrors,  
Whence I haue rescu'd this vnthankfull King :  
And shew (commixt with them) the ioyes, the glories  
Of his state then : Then his kind thoughts of me :  
Then my deseruings : Now my infamie :  
But I will be mine owne King, I will see,  
That all your Chronicles be fild with me,  
That none but I, and my renowned Syre  
Be said to winne the memorable fieldes  
Of *Arques* and *Deepe* : and none but we of all  
Kept you from dying there, in an Hospitall ;  
None but my selfe, that wonne the day at *Dreux* :  
A day of holy name, and needes, no night :

Nor none but I at *Fontaine Francois* burst,  
 The heart strings of the leaguers ; I alone,  
 Tooke *Amiens* in these armes, and held her fast,  
 In spite of all the Pitchy fires she cast,  
 And clouds of bullets pourd vpon my brest,  
 Till she showd yours ; and tooke her naturall forme,  
 Onely my selfe (married to victory)  
 Did people *Artois, Douay, Picardie,*  
*Bethune,* and *Saint Paule, Bapaume,* and *Courcelles,*  
 With her triumphant issue ;

*Hen.* Ha ha ha, *Exit,*

*Byron drawing and is held by D'Au.*

*D'Au.* O hold my Lord ; for my sake, mighty  
 Spirit. *Exit.*

*Enter Byron Dau following vnseene.*

*Byr.* Respect, Reuenge, slaughter, repaie for  
 laughter,

What's graue in Earth, what awfull ? what abhord ?

If my rage be ridiculouse ? I will make it,

The law and rule of all things serious.

So long as idle and ridiculous King<sup>4</sup>

Are suffered, soothed and wrest all right, to fasty

So long is mischief gathering massacres,

For their curst kingdomes ; which I will preuent,

Laughter ? Ile fright it from him, farre as he,

Hath cast irreuocable shame ; which euer,

Being found is lost and lost returneth neuer ;

Should Kings cast of their bounties, with their dan-  
 gers ?

He that can warme at fires, where vertue burnes,

Hunt pleasure through her torments ; nothing feele,

Of all his subiects suffer ; but (long hid)

In wants, and miseries, and hauing past

Through all the grauest shapes, of worth and honor,

(For all *Heroique* fashions to be learned,

By those hard lessons) shew an antique vizard,

Who would not wish him rather hewd to nothing,

---

4 So long as such as he. 1608.



Then left so monstrous? slight my seruices?  
 Drowne the dead noifes of my sword, in laughter?  
 My blowes, as but the passages of shadowes,  
 Ouer the highest and most barraine hills,  
 And vse me, like, no man; but as he tooke me  
 Into a defart, gasht with all my wounds,  
 Sustained for him, and buried me in flies;  
 Forth vengeance then, and open wounds in him  
 Shall let in Spaine, and Sauoy.

*Offers to draw and D'Au: againe holds him.*

*D'Au.* O my Lord,  
 This is to large a licence giuen your furie;  
 Giue time to it, what reason, sodainely,  
 Can not extend, respite doth oft supplie.

*Byr.* While respite holds reuenge, the wrong re-  
 doubles,  
 And so the shame of sufferance, it torments me,  
 To thinke what I endure, at his shrunke hands,  
 That scornes the guift, of one pore fort to me:  
 That haue subdu'd for him; O iniurie,  
 Forts, Citties, Countries, I, and yet my furie. *Exeunt.*

*Hen.* *Byron?*

*D'Au.* My Lord? the King calls.

*Hen.* Turne I pray,  
 How now? from whence flow these distracted faces?  
 From what attempt returne they? as disclayming,  
 Their late *Heroique* bearer? what, a pistoll?  
 Why, good my Lord, can mirth make you so wrathfull?

*Byr.* Mirth? twas mockerie, a contempt; a scan-  
 dall

To my renowne for euer: a repulse  
 As miserably cold, as Stygian water,  
 That from sincere earth issues, and doth breake  
 The strongest vessells, not to be containde,  
 But in the tough hoofe of a pacient Affe.

*Hen.* My Lord, your iudgement is not competent,  
 In this diffention, I may say of you;  
 As Fame saies of the antient Eleans,  
 That, in th' Olimpian contentions,

They euer were the iustest Arbitrators,  
 If none of them contended, nor were parties ;  
 Those that will moderate disputations well,  
 Must not themselues affect the coronet ;  
 For as the ayre, containd within our eares :  
 If it be not in quiet ; nor refrains,  
 Troubling our hearing, with offensive founds ;  
 But our affected instrument of hearing,  
 Repleat with noise, and singings in it selfe,  
 It faithfully receiues no other voices ;  
 So, of all iudgements, if within themselues  
 They suffer spleene, and are tumultuous ;  
 They can not equall differences without them ;  
 And this winde, that doth sing so in your eares,  
 I know, is no disease bred in your selfe,  
 But whisperd in by others ; who in swelling  
 Your vaines with emptie hope of much, yet able,  
 To performe nothing ; are like shallow streames,  
 That make themselues so many heauens ; to fight ;  
 Since you may see in them, the moone, and Starres,  
 The blew space of the ayre ; as farre from vs,  
 (To our weake fences) in those shallow streames  
 As if they were as deepe, as heauen is high ;  
 Yet with your middle finger onely, found them,  
 And you shall pierce them to the very earth ;  
 And therefore leaue them, and be true to me  
 Or yow'le be left by all ; or be like one  
 That in cold nights will needes haue all the fire,  
 And there is held by others, and embrac't  
 Onely to burne him : your fire wil be inward,  
 Which not another deluge can put out :

*Byron kneeles while the King goes on.*

O innocence the sacred amulet,  
 Gainst all the poisons of infirmitie :  
 Of all misfortune, iniurie, and death,  
 That makes a man, in tune still in himselfe ;  
 Free from the hell to be his owne accuser,  
 Euer in quiet, endles ioy enjoying ;  
 No strife, nor no sedition in his powres :

No motion in his will, against his reason,  
No thought gainst thought, nor (as twere in the  
confines

Of wishing and repenting) doth possesse  
Onely a wayward, and tumultuofe peace,  
But (all parts in him, friendly and secure,  
Fruitefull of all best thinges in all worst seasons)  
He can with euerie wish, be in their plenty,  
When, the infectious guilt of one foule crime,  
Destroyes the free content of all our time.

*Byr.* Tis all acknowlegd, and, (though all to late)  
Heere the short madnesse of my anger ends :  
If euer I did good I lockt it safe  
In you, th' impregnable defence of goodnesse :  
If ill, I presse it with my penitent knees  
To that vnsounded depth, whence naught returneth.

*Hen.* Tis musique to mine eares : rise then for  
euer,  
Quit of what guilt foeuer, till this houre,  
And nothing toucht in honnor or in spirit,  
Rise without flattery, rise by absolute merit.

*Enter Esp : to the King, Byron : &c.*

*Enter Sauoy with three Ladies.*

*Esp.* Sir if it please you to bee taught any Court-  
ship take you to your stand : *Sauoy* is at it with three  
Mistresses at once, he loues each of them best, yet all  
differently.

*Hen.* For the time he hath beene heere, he hath  
talkt a Volume greater than the Turkes Alcaron ;  
stand vp close ; his lips go still.

*Sau.* Excuse me, excuse me ; The King has ye all.

1. True Sir, in honorable subiection.

2. To the which we are bound, by our loyallty.

*Sau.* Nay your excuse, your excuse, intend me for  
affection : you are all bearers of his faouours ; and  
deny him not your opposition by night.

3. You say rightly in that ; for therein we oppose vs to his command.

1. In the which he neuer yet prest vs.

2. Such is the benediction of our peace.

*Sau.* You take me still in flat misconstruction, and conceiue not by me.

1. Therein we are strong in our owne purposes ; for it were something scandalous for vs to conceiue by you.

2. Though there might be question made of your fruitfulness, yet drie weather in haruest dooes no harme.

*Hen.* They will talke him into *Sauoy* ; he begins to hunt downe.

*Sau.* As the King is, and hath beene, a most admired, and most vnmatchable souldier, so hath he beene, and is, a sole excellent, and vnparalleld Courtier.

*Hen.* *Pouvre Amy Mercie.*

1. Your highnes does the King but right fir.

2. And heauen shall blesse you for that iustice, With plentiful store of want in Ladies affections.

*Sau.* You are cruell, und will not vouchsafe me audience to any conclusion.

1. Befeech your grace conclude, that we may present our curtsies to you, and giue you the adiew.

*Sau.* It is faide, the King will bring an army into *Sauoy*.

2. Truely we are not of his counsaile of warre.

*Sau.* Nay but vouchsafe me.

3. Vouchsafe him, vouchsafe him, else there is no play in't.

1. Well I vouchsafe your Grace.

*Sau.* Let the King bring an army into *Sauoy*, and Ile finde him sport for fortie yeares.

*Hen.* Would I were sure of that, I should then haue a long age, and a merry.

1. I thinke your Grace woulde play with his army at Balloone.

2. My faith, and that's a martiall recreation.

3. It is next to impious courting.

*Sau.* I am not hee that can fet my Squadrons  
ouer-night, by midnight leape my horfe, curry seauen  
miles, and by three, leape my mistris ; returne to mine  
armie againe, and direct as I were infatigable, I am no  
such tough souldier.

1. Your disparitie is beleeu'd fir.

2. And tis a peece of virtue to tell true.

3. Gods me, the King,

*Sau.* Well, I haue said nothing that may offend.

1. Tis hop't fo.

2. If there be any mercie in laughter.

*Sau.* Ile take my leaue.

After the tedious stay my loue hath made,  
(Most worthy to command our earthly zeale)  
I come for pardon, and to take my leaue ;  
Affirming though I reape no other good,  
By this my voiage ; but t'haue seene a Prince  
Of greatnes, in all grace so past report ;  
I nothing should repent me, and to shew  
Some token of my gratitude, I haue sent,  
Into your treasury, the greatest Jewells,  
In all my Cabinet of Beatrice,  
And of my late deceased wife, th'Infanta,  
Which are two Basons, and their Ewrs of christall,  
Neuer yet valued for their workmanship,  
Nor the exceding riches of their matter.  
And to your stable (worthy Duke of *Byron*)  
I haue sent in two of my fayrest horses.

*Byr.* Sent me your horses ? vpon what desert ?

I entertaine no presents, but for merits ;  
Which I am farre from at your highnes hands ;  
As being of all men to you the most stranger,  
There is as ample bounty in refusing ;  
As in bestowing, and with this I quit you.

*Sau.* Then haue I lost nought but my poore good  
will.



*Hen.* Well cosine, I with all thankes, welcome  
 that ;  
 And the rich arguments with which you proue it,  
 Wishing I could, to your wish welcome you ;  
 Draw, for your marquifate, the articles ;  
 Agreed on in our composition,  
 And it is yours ; but where you haue propof'd,  
 (In your aduices) my designe for Millane,  
 I will haue no warre with the King of Spaine,  
 Vnlesse his hopes proue weary of our peace ;  
 And (Princely cosine) it is farre from me,  
 To thinke your wisedome, needeful of my counsaile,  
 Yet loue, oft-times must offer things vnneedeful ;  
 And therefore I would counsaile you to hold  
 All good termes, with his Maiestie of *Spaine* :  
 If any troubles should be stirr'd betwixt you,  
 I would not stirre therein, but to appease them ;  
 I haue too much care of my royal word,  
 To breake a Peace so iust and consequent,  
 Without force of precedent iniurie :  
 Endles desires are worthles of iust Princes,  
 And onely proper to the swinge of tyrants.

*Sau.* At al partes spoke like the most christian  
 king,  
 I take my humblest leaue, and pray your Highnes,  
 To holde me as your seruant, and poore kinsman,  
 Who wisheth no supreamer happines  
 Than to be yours : To you (right worthy Princes)  
 I wish for all your fauours powr'd on me  
 The loue of al these Ladies mutually,  
 And (so they please their Lordes) that they may please  
 Themselues by all meanes. And be you assurde  
 (Most louely Princeffes) as of your liues,  
 You cannot be true women, if true wiues. *Exit.*

*Hen.* Is this he *Espernon*, that you would needes  
 Perfwade vs courted so absurdly.

*Esp.* This is euen he sir, howfoeuer he hath studied  
 his Parting Courtship.

*Hen.* In what one point seemde hee so ridiculous as you would present him ?

*Esp.* Behold me fir, I beseech you behold me, I appeare to you as the great Duke of *Sauoy* with these three Ladies.

*Hen.* Well fir, we graunt your resemblance.

*Esp.* He stole a carriage fir, from Count *d' Auuergne* heere.

*D' Auer.* From me fir ?

*Esp.* Excuse me fir, from you I assure you : heere fir, he lies at the Lady *Antoniette*, iust thus, for the worlde, in the true posture of Count *d' Auuergne*.

*D' Auer.* Yare exceeding delightfome.

*Hen.* Why is not that wel ? it came in with the organ hofe.

*Esp.* Organ hofe ? a pox ant ; let it pipe it selfe into contempt ; hee hath stolne it most feloniously, and it graces him like a difeafe.

*Hen.* I thinke he stole it from *D' Auuergne* indeed.

*Esp.* Well, would he had robd him of all his other difeases,

He were then the foundest lord in *France*.

*D' Au.* As I am fir, I shall stand all weathers with you.

*Esp.* But fir, he hath praifd you aboute th' inuention of Rimers.

*Hen.* Wherein ? or how ?

*Esp.* He tooke vpon him to describe your victories in warre, and where he should haue fayd, you were the most absolute souldier in Christendome, (no Assé could haue mist it) hee deliuerd you for as pretty a fellow of your hands, as any was in *France*.

*Hen.* Marry God dild him.

*Esp.* A pox on him.

*Hen.* Well, (to be ferious) you know him well  
To be a gallant Courtier : his great wit  
Can turne him into any forme he lists,  
More fit to be auoyded, then deluded.

For my Lord Duke of *Byron* here, well knowes,  
That it infecteth, where it doth affect :  
And where it seemes to counsaile, it conspires.  
With him go all our faults, and from vs flie,  
(With all his counsaile) all conspiracie.

*Finis Actus Quinti,*

*& ultimi.*

THE  
TRAGEDIE  
OF CHARLES

Duke of BYRON.

By GEORGE CHAPMAN.







# THE TRAGEDIE OF

*Charles Duke of Byron.*

ACTVS, I.      SCENA, I.

*Enter Henry, Vidame, D'escures, Espernon, Ianin.*

*Hen.* **B**Yron fallne in so tratrous a relaps,  
Aleadged for our ingratitude : what offices,  
Titles of honor, and what admiration,  
Could *France* afford him that it pourd not  
on ?

When he was scarce arriu'd at forty yeares,  
He ranne through all chiefe dignities of *France*.  
At fourteene yeares of age he was made Colonell  
To all the Suiffes seruing then in Flanders ;  
Soone after he was marshall of the campe,  
And shortly after, marshall Generall :  
He was receiued high Admirall of *France*  
In that our Parliament we held at *Tours* ;  
Marshall of *France* in that we held at *Paris*.

And at the Siege of *Amiens* he acknowledged,  
 None his Superiour but our felfe, the King ;  
 Though I had there, the Princes of the blood  
 I made him my Lieutennant Generall,  
 Declard him Ioyntly the prime Peere of *France*,  
 And raifd his Barony into a Duchy,  
*Iani.* And yet (my Lord) all this could not allay  
 The fatall thirft of his ambition,  
 For fome haue heard him fay he would not die,  
 Till on the wings of valour he had reacht  
 One degree higher ; and had feene his head,  
 Set on the royal Quarter of a crowne ;  
 Yea at fo vnbeleeu'd a pitch he aynd,  
 That he hath faid his heart would ftill complaine,  
 Till he afpird the ftyle of Soueraigne,  
 And from what ground my Lord rife all the leuyes  
 Now made in *Italy* ? from whence fhould fpring  
 The warlike humor of the Count *Fuentes* ?  
 The reftles ftirrings of the Duke of *Sauoye* ?  
 The difcontent the Spaniard entertaind,  
 With fuch a threatning fury, when he heard  
 The preiudiciall conditions,  
 Propof'd him, in the treaty held at *Veruins* ?  
 And many other braueries, this way ayming,  
 But from fome hope of inward ayd from hence ?  
 And that, all this derec'tly aymes at you,  
 Your highnes hath by one intelligence,  
 Good caufe to thinke ; which is your late aduice,  
 That the Sea army, now prepar'd at *Naples*,  
 Hath an intended Enterprife on *Prouence* ?  
 Although the cunning Spaniard giues it out,  
 That all is for *Algier*.

*Hen.* I muft beleeeue,  
 That without treason bred in our owne brefts,  
 Spaines affayres are not in fo good eftate,  
 To ayme at any action againft *France* :  
 And if *Byron* fhould be their instrument,  
 His altred difpofition could not growe,  
 So far wide in an instant ; nor refigne,

His valure to these lawles, resolutions  
Vpon the sodaine ; nor without some charms,  
Of forreigne hopes and flatteries fung to him :  
But far it flyes my thoughts, that such a spirit,  
So aētiue, valiant, and vigilant ;  
Can see it selfe transformed with such wild furies.  
And like a dreame it shewes to my conceipts,  
That he who by himselfe hath wonne such honor :  
And he to whome his father left so much,  
He that still dayly reapes so much from me,  
And knowes he may encrease it to more prooffe  
From me, then any other forreigne King ;  
Should quite against the streame of all religion  
Honor, and reason, take a course so foule,  
And neither keepe his Oth, nor saue his Soule.  
Can the poore keeping of a Citadell  
Which I denyed, to be at his disposure,  
Make him forgoe the whole strength of his honours ?  
It is impossible, though the violence,  
Of his hot spirit made him make attempt  
Vpon our person for denying him ;  
Yet well I found his loyall iudgement seru'd,  
To keepe it from effect : besides being offer'd,  
Two hundred thousand crownes in yearely pention.  
And to be Generall of all the forces  
The *Spaniards* had in *France* ; they found him still,  
As an vnmatcht *Achilles* in the warres,  
So a most wise *Vlisses* to their words,  
Stopping his eares at their enchanted founds ;  
And plaine he tould them that although his blood  
(Being mou'd) by Nature, were a very fire  
And boyld in apprehension of a wrong ;  
Yet should his mind hold such a scepter there,  
As would containe it from all aēt and thought  
Of treachery or ingratitude to his Prince.  
Yet do I long, me thinkes, to see *La Fin*,  
Who hath his heart in keeping ; since his state,  
(Growne to decay and he to discontent)  
Comes neere the ambitious plight of Duke *Byron*.

My Lord *Vidame*, when does your Lordship thinke,  
Your vnckle of *La Fin* will be arriu'd.

*Vid.* I thinke (my Lord) he now is neere ariuing  
For his particular iourny and deuotion,  
Voud to the holy Lady of *Loretto*,  
Was long since past and he vpon returne.

*Hen.* In him, as in a christall that is charm'd,  
I shall descerne by whome and what designes,  
My rule is threatened : and that sacred power  
That hath enabled this defensue arme,  
(When I enioyd but an vnequall Nooke,  
Of that I now possesse) to front a King  
Farre my Superiour : And from twelue set battailes,  
March home a victor : ten of them obtaind,  
VVithout my personall seruice ; will not see  
A traitrous subiect foile me, and so end  
VVhat his hand hath with such successe begunne.

*Enter a Ladie, and a Nurse bringing the Daulphine.*

*Esp.* See the young Daulphin brought to cheere  
your highnes.

*Hen.* My royall blessing, and the King of heauen,  
Make thee an aged and a happie King :  
Helpe Nurse to put my sword into his hand ;  
Hold Boy, by this ; and with it may thy arme  
Cut from thy tree of rule, all traitrous branches,  
That striue to shadow and eclips thy glories ;  
Haue thy old fathers angell for thy guide,  
Redoubled be his spirit in thy brest ;  
VVho when this State ranne like a turbulent sea,  
In ciuill hates and bloody enmity,  
Their wrathes and enuies, like so many windes,  
Setled and burst : and like the Halcions birth,  
Be thine to bring a calme vpon the shore,  
In which the eyes of warre may euer sleepe,  
As ouermatcht with former massacres,  
When guilty, made Noblesse, feed on Noblesse ;  
All the sweete plentie of the realme exhausted ;

When the nak't merchant, was purfude for spoile,  
When the pore Pezants, frighted needieft theeues  
With their pale leaneneffe ; nothing left on them  
But meager carcafes fustaind with ayre,  
Wandring like Ghosts affrighted from their graues,  
When with the often and inceffant founds  
The very beafts knew the alarum bell,  
And (hearing it) ranne bellowing to their home :  
From which vnchristian broiles and homicides,  
Let the religious fword of iuftice free  
Thee and thy kingdomes gouern'd after me.  
O heauen ! or if th' vnsettled bloud of France,  
VVith ease, and welth, renew her ciuill furies :  
Let all my powers be emptied in my Sonne  
To curb, and end them all, as I haue done.  
Let him by vertue, quite out of from fortune,  
Her fetherd shoulders, and her winged shooes,  
And thrust from her light feete, her turning stone ;  
That she may euer tarry by his throne.  
And of his worth, let after ages say,  
(He fighting for the land ; and bringing home  
Iust conquests, loden with his enimies spoiles)  
His father past all France in martiall deeds,  
But he, his father twenty times exceeds.

*Enter the Duke of Byron, D'Avuergne  
and Laffin.*

*Byr.* My deare friends *D'Avuergne*, and *Laffin*,  
We neede no coniurations to conceale :  
Our clofe intendments, to aduance our states  
Euen with our merits ; which are now neglected ;  
Since Britaine is reduc't, and breathlesse warre  
Hath sheath'd his fword, and wrapt his Ensignes vp ;  
The King hath now no more vse of my valure,  
And therefore I shall now no more enioy  
The credite that my seruice held with him ;  
My seruice that hath driuen through all extreames,



Through tempests, droughts, and through the deepeft  
floods ;

Winters of fhott : and ouer rockes fo high  
That birds could scarce aspire their ridgy toppes ;  
The world is quite inuerted : vertue throwne  
At Vices feete : and fenfuall peace confounds,  
Valure and cowardife : Fame, and Infamy ;  
The rude and terrible age is turnd againe :  
When the thicke ayre hid heauen, and all the  
ftarres,

Were drown'd in humor, tough, and hard to peirfe,  
When the red Sunne held not his fixed place ;  
Kept not his certaine courfe, his rife and fet  
Nor yet diftinguifht with his definite boundes ;  
Nor in his firme conuerfions, were difcernd  
The fruitfull diftances of time and place,  
In the well varied feafons of the yeare ;  
When th' incomposd incurfions of floods  
Wafte and eat the earth ; and all things fhewed  
Wilde and difordred : nought was worfe then now ;  
Wee muft reforme and haue a new creation  
Of State and gouernment ; and on our *Chaos*  
Will I fit brooding vp another world.

I who through all the dangers that can fiege  
The life of man, haue forcft my glorious way  
To the repaying of my countries ruines,  
Will ruine it againe, to re-advance it ;  
Romaine *Camyllus*, fafte the State of Rome  
With farre leffe merite, then *Byron* hath France ;  
And how fhort of this is my recompence.  
The King fhall know, I will haue better price  
Set on my feruices ; in fpight of whome  
I will proclaime and ring my difcontents  
Into the fartheft eare of all the world.

*Laff.* How great a fpirit he breaths ? how learnd ?  
how wife ?

But (worthy Prince) you muft giue temperate ayre,  
To your vnmatcht, and more then humane winde ;  
Elfe will our plots be froft-bit, in the flowre.



*D'Au:* Betwixt our felues we may giue liberall  
vent

To all our fiery and displeas'd impreffions ;  
Which nature could not entertaine with life,  
Without some exhalation ; A wrongd thought  
Will breake a rib of steele.

*Byr.* My Princely friend,  
Enough of these eruptions ; our graue Councillor  
Well knowes that great affaires will not be forg'd  
But vpon Anuills that are linde with wooll ;  
We must ascend to our intentions top,  
Like Clouds that be not seene till they be vp.

*Laff.* O, you do too much rauish ; and my foule  
Offer to Musique in your numerous breath ;  
Sententious, and so high, it wakens death ;  
It is for these parts, that the Spanish King  
Hath sworne to winne them to his side  
At any price or perrill ; That great *Sauoy*,  
Offers his princely daughter, and a dowry,  
Amounting to fiae hundred thousand crownes ;  
With full transport of all the Soueraigne rights  
Belonging to the State of Burgundy ;  
Which marriage will be made the onely Cyment  
T'effect and strengthen all our secreet Treaties ;  
Instruēt me therefore (my assured Prince)  
Now I am going to resolue the King  
Of his sulphitions, how I shall behaue me.

*Byr.* Go my most trusted friend, with happy feete :  
Make me a found man with him ; Go to Court  
But with a little traine : and be prepar'd  
To heere, at first, tearmes of contempt and choller,  
Which you may easily calme, and turne to grace.  
If you beseech his highnesse to beleue  
That your whole drift and course for Italy,  
(Where he hath heard you were) was onely made  
Out of your long-well-knowne deuotion  
To our right holy Lady of *Lorretto*,  
As you haue told some of your friends in Court ;  
And that in passing Mylan and Thurin,

They charg'd you to propound my marriage  
 With the third daughter of the Duke of Sauoy ;  
 Which you haue done, and I reiected it,  
 Resolu'd to build vpon his royall care  
 For my bestowing, which he lately vowd.

*Laff.* O, you direct, as if the God of light  
 Sat in each nooke of you ; and pointed out  
 The path of Empire ; Charming all the dangers  
 On both sides arm'd, with his harmonious finger.

*Byr.* Besides let me intreat you to dismisse,  
 All that haue made the voyage with your Lordship,  
 But specially the Curate : And to locke  
 Your papers in some place of doubtlesse safety ;  
 Or sacrfize them to the God of fire ;  
 Considering worthily that in your handes  
 I put my fortunes, honour, and my life.

*Laff.* Therein the bounty that your Grace hath  
 shoune me,  
 I prize past life, and all thinges that are mine ;  
 And will vndoubtedly preferue, and tender  
 The merit of it, as my hope of heauen.

*Byr.* I make no question ; farewell worthy friend.

*Exit.*

*Henry, Chancellor, Laffin, D'Escures, Ianin,*

*Henry hauing many papers in his hand.*

*Hen.* Are these proofes of that purely Catholike  
 zeale  
 That made him with no other glorious title,  
 Then to be calld the scourge of *Huguenots* ?

*Chan.* No question sir, he was of no religion ;  
 But (vpon false groundes, by some Courtiers laid)  
 Hath oft bene heard to mocke and iest at all.

*Hen.* Are not his treasons haynous ?

*All.* Most abhord.

*Chan.* All is confirmd that you haue heard before,  
 And amplified with many horrors more.

*Hen.* Good *De' Laffin* ; you were our golden plummet,  
To found this gulphe of all ingratitude ;  
In which you haue with excellent defert  
Of loyalty and pollicie, exprest  
Your name in action ; and with fuch apparence  
Haue prou'd the parts of his ingratefull treafons,  
That I muft credit, more then I defir'd.

*Laff.* I muft confefse my Lord, my voyages  
Made to the Duke of Sauoy and to Mylan ;  
Were with indeauour, that the warres returnd,  
Might breed fome trouble to your Maieftie ;  
And profit thofe by whome they were procur'd ;  
But fince, in their defignes, your facred perfon  
Was not excepted (which I fince haue feene)  
It fo abhord me, that I was refolu'd  
To giue you full intelligence thereof ;  
And rather chuf'd to fayle in promifes,  
Made to the feruant, then infringe my fealty  
Sworne to my royall Soueraigne and Maifter.

*Hen.* I am extremely difcontent to fee,  
This moft vnnaturall confpiracie ;  
And would not haue the marshall of *Byron*,  
The firft example of my forced Iuftice ;  
Nor that his death fhould be the worthy caufe,  
That my calme raigne, (which hetherto hath held  
A cleare and cheerefull skie aboue the heads  
Of my deare fubiefts) fhould fo fodainely  
Be ouercast with clowdes of fire, and thunder ;  
Yet on fubmiffion, I vow ftill his pardon.

*Ian.* And ftill our humble counfayles, (for his  
feruice)  
Would fo refolue you, if he will imploy  
His honourd valure as effectually,  
To fortifie the State, againft your foes ;  
As he hath practis'd bad interdments with them.

*Hen.* That vow fhall ftand ; and we will now ad-  
drefse,  
Some meffengers to call him home to Court :

Without the flendrest intimation,  
 Of any ill we know ; we will restraine  
 (Withall forgiuenes, if he will confesse)  
 His headlong course to ruine ; and his taste,  
 From the sweete poyson of his friendlike foes :  
*Treason hath blisterd heeles, dishonest Things*  
*Haue bitter Riuers, though delicious Springs ;*  
*Descures* haste you vnto him, and informe,  
 That hauing heard by fure intelligence,  
 Of the great leuies made in Italie,  
 Of Arms and foldiers ; I am resolute,  
 Vpon my frontiers to maintaine an Army ;  
 The charge whereof I will impose on him ;  
 And to that end, expresly haue commanded,  
*De Vic*, our Lord Ambassador in Suiffe,  
 To demand leuie of six thousand men :  
 Appointing them to march where Duke *Byron*  
 Shall haue directions ; wherein I haue follow'd  
 The counsaile of my Constable his Gossip ;  
 Whose lik't aduice, I made him know by letters,  
 Wishing to heare his owne ; from his owne mouth,  
 And by all meanes coniure, his speediest presence ;  
 Do this with vtmost hast.

*Desc.* I will my Lord.

*Exit Desc.*

*Hen.* My good Lord Chancellor, of many Peeces,  
 More then is here, of his conspiracies  
 Presented to vs, by our friend, *La#in* ;  
 You onely, shall referue these seauen and twenty,  
 Which are not those that must conclude against him ;  
 But mention only him : since I am loth,  
 To haue the rest of the conspirators knowne

*Chan.* My Lord, my purpose is to guard all these  
 So safely from the sight of any other :  
 That in my doublet I will haue them fow'd ;  
 Without discouering them to mine owne eies,  
 Till neede, or opportunitie requires.

*Hen.* You shall do well my Lord, they are of  
 weight,  
 But I am doubtfull that his conscience

Will make him so suspicious of the worst,  
That he will hardly be induc't to come.

*Ian.* I much should doubt that to, but that I hope  
The strength of his conspiracie, as yet  
Is not so readie, that he dare presume,  
By his refusall to make knowne so much  
Of his disloyalty.

*Hen.* I yet conceiue ;  
His practises are turnd to no bad end,  
And good *Laffin*, I pray you write to him,  
To hasten his repaire : and make him sure,  
That you haue satisfied me to the full  
For all his actions, and haue vtterd nought,  
But what might serue to banish bad impressions.

*Laf.* I will not faile my Lord.

*Hen.* Conuaie your Letters ;  
By some choice friend of his : or by his brother :  
And for a third excitement to his presence :

*Ianin*, your selfe shall goe, and with the powre  
That both the rest employ to make him come,  
Vse you the strength of your persuasions.

*Ian.* I will my Lord, and hope I shall present him.

*Exit Ian.*

*Enter Esper, Soisson, Vitry, Pralin, &c.*

*Esp.* Wilt please your Maiestie to take your place,  
The Maske is comming.

*Hen.* Roome my Lords, stand close.

*Musique and a Song aboue, and Cupid enters with a  
Table written, hung about his neck ; after him two  
Torch-bearers ; after them Mary D'Entragues, and  
foure Ladies more with their Torch-bearers, &c.  
Cupid speakes.*

*Cup.* My Lord, these Nymphs, part of the scatterd  
traine,  
Of friendlesse vertue (liuing in the woods



Of shady Arden : and of late not hearing  
 The dreadfull sounds of Warre ; but that sweete Peace,  
 Was by your valure lifted from her graue,  
 Set on your royall right hand : and all vertues  
 Summond with honor, and with rich rewards,  
 To be her hand-maides) : These I say, the vertues,  
 Haue put their heads out of their Cauces and Couerts,  
 To be her true attendants in your Court :  
 In which desire, I must relate a tale,  
 Of kinde and worthy emulation,  
 Twixt these two Vertues, leaders of the traine.  
 This on the right hand is *Sophrosyne*,  
 Or *Chastitie* : this other *Dapsyle*  
 Or *Liberalitie* : their Emulation  
 Begat a iarre, which thus was reconcil'd.  
 I, (hauing left my Goddesse mothers lap,  
 To hawk and shoote at Birds in *Arden* groues,)  
 Beheld this Princely Nymph with much affection,  
 Left killing Birds, and turn'd into a Birde,  
 Like which I flew betwixt her Iuory brefts,  
 As if I had beene driuen by some Hawke,  
 To sue to her for safety of my life ;  
 She smilde at first, and sweetly shadowed me,  
 With soft protection of her siluer hand ;  
 Some-times she tyed my legges in her rich hayre,  
 And made me (past my nature, libertie)  
 Proud of my fetters : As I pertly fat,  
 On the white pillowes of her naked brefts,  
 I sung for ioy ; she answered note for note,  
 Relish for relish, with such ease and Arte,  
 In her diuine diuision, that my tunes,  
 Showd like the God of Shepherds to the Sunnes,  
 Comparede with hers : ashamd of which disgrace,  
 I tooke my true shape, bow, and all my shafts,  
 And lighted all my torches at her eyes,  
 Which (set about her, in a golden ring)  
 I followd Birds againe, from Tree to Tree,  
 Kild, and presented, and she kindly tooke.  
 But when she handled my triumphant bow,



And faw the beauty of my golden shafts,  
She begd them of me ; I, poore boy replied,  
I had no other Riches ; yet was pleafde  
To hazard all, and flake them gainft a kiffe,  
At an old game I vfde, call'd Penny-prick.  
She priuie to her owne skill in the play,  
Anwerd my challenge, fo I loft my armes :  
And now my shafts are headed with her lookes,  
One of which shafts ſhe put into my bow,  
And ſhot at this faire Nymph, with whom before,  
I told your Maieftie, ſhe had ſome iarre.  
The Nymph did instantly repent all parts  
She playd in vrging that effeminate warre,  
Lou'd and ſubmitted ; which ſubmiſſion  
This tooke ſo well, that now they both are one :  
And as for your deare loue, their diſcords grew,  
So for your loue, they did their loues renew.  
And now to prooue them capable of your Court,  
In ſkill of ſuch conceipts, and quallities  
As here are practiſde ; they will firſt ſubmit  
Their grace in dancing to your highneſſe doome,  
And play the preaſe to giue their meaſures roome :

*Muſique, Dance, &c., which done Cupid ſpeakes.*

If this ſuffice, for one Court complement,  
To make them gracious and entertain'd ;  
Behold another parcell of their Courtſhip,  
Which is a rare dexteritie in riddles,  
Showne in one inſtance, which is here inſcrib'd.  
Here is a Riddle, which if any Knight  
At firſt fight can reſolue ; he ſhall enioy  
This Iewell here annex ; which though it ſhow  
To vulgar eyes, no richer then a Peble ;  
And that no Lapydarie, nor great man  
Will giue a Soulz for it ; 'tis worth a Kingdome :  
For 'tis an artificiall ſtone compoſde,  
By their great Miſtreſſe, Vertue : and will make  
Him that ſhall weare it, liue with any little,

Suffizde, and more content then any King.  
 If he that vndertakes cannot resolue it ;  
 And that these Nymphs can haue no harbor here ;  
 (It being considered, that so many vertues  
 Can neuer liue in Court) he shall resolue  
 To leaue the Court, and liue with them in *Arden*.

*Esp.* Pronounce the riddle : I will vndertake it.

*Cup.* 'Tis this fir.

*What's that a faire Lady, most of all likes,  
 Yet euer makes shew, she least of all seekes ?  
 That's euer embrac'd and affected by her,  
 Yet neuer is seene to please or come nigh her :  
 Most seru'd in her night-weeds : does her good in a corner,  
 But a poore mans thing, yet doth richly adorne her :  
 Most cheape, and most deare, aboue all worldly pelfe,  
 That is hard to get in, but comes out of it selfe.*

*Esp.* Let me peruse it, *Cupid*.

*Cup.* Here it is.

*Esp.* Your Riddle is good *Fame*.

*Cup.* Good fame ? how make you that good ?

*Esp.* Good fame is that a good Lady most likes,  
 I am sure ;

*Cup.* That's granted.

*Esp.* Yet euer makes shewe she least of all seekes :  
 for she likes it onely for vertue, which is not glo-  
 rious.

*Hen.* That holds well.

*Esp.* Tis euer embrac't and affected by her : for she  
 must, perseuer in vertue or fame vanishes. Yet neuer  
 seene to please or come nigh her, for fame is invisible.

*Cup.* Exceeding right.

*Esp.* Most serued in her night-weeds : for Ladies  
 that most wear their Nightweeds come lest abroad, and  
 they that come lest abroad, serue fame most ; accord-  
 ing to this ; *Non forma sed fama in publicum exire debet.*

*Hen.* Tis very substantiall.

*Esp.* Does her good in a corner : that is in her  
 most retreate from the world, comforts her ; but a

poore mans thing : for euery poore man may purchase it, yet doth richly adorne a Lady.

*Cup.* That all must grant.

*Efp.* Most cheape for it costs nothing, and most deare, for gold cannot buy it ; aboue all worldly pelffe ; for thats tranfitory, and fame eternall. It is hard to get in ; that is hard to get : But comes out of it selfe ; for when it is vertuously deserued with the most inward retreat from the world, it comes out in spight of it, and so *Cupid* your iewell is mine.

*Cup.* It is : and be the vertue of it, yours.  
Wee'l now turne to our daunce, and then attend,  
Your heighnes will, as touching our resort,  
If vertue may be entertaind in Court.

*Hen.* This show hath pleased me well, for that it figures  
The reconcilment of my Queene and Mistresse :  
Come let vs in and thanke them, and prepare,  
To entertaine our trusty friend *Byron.* *Excunt.*

*Finis Actus Secundi.*

ACTVS 3. SCÆNA 1.

*Enter the Duke of Byron, D'Auergne.*

*Byr.* Deare friend, we must not be more true to  
Kings,  
Then Kings are to their subiects, there are schooles,  
Now broken open in all parts of the world,  
First founded in ingenious Italy,  
Where some conclusions of estate are held,

That for a day preferue a Prince, and euer,  
 Destroy him after : from thence men are taught,  
 To glyde into degrees of height by crafte,  
 And then lock in them-felues by villanie :  
 But God, who knowes Kings are not made by art,  
 But right of Nature, nor by treachery propt,  
 But fimple vertue, once let fall from heauen,  
 A branch of that greene tree, whose root is yet,  
 Fast fixt aboue the ftarrs : which facred branch,  
 Wee well may liken to that Lawrell fpray,  
 That from the heauenly Eagles golden feres,  
 Fell in the lap of great *Augustus* wife :  
 Which fpray once fet, grew vp into a tree,  
 Where of were Garlands made, and Emperors  
 Had their eftates and forheads crowned with them :  
 And as the armes of that tree did decay  
 The race of great *Augustus* wore away,  
*Nero* being laft of that imperiall line,  
 The tree and Emperor together died.  
 Religion is a branch, firft fet and bleft  
 By heauens high finger in the hearts of kings,  
 Which whilelome grew into a goodly tree,  
 Bright Angels fat and fung vpon the twigs,  
 And royall branches for the heads of Kings,  
 Were twifted of them but fince fquint ey'd enuye :  
 And pale fufpicion, dasht the heads of kingdomes,  
 One gainft another : two abhorred twins,  
 With two foule tayles : fterne Warre and Libertie,  
 Entred the world. The tree that grew from heauen.  
 Is ouerrunne with moffe ; the cheerfull mufique,  
 That heretofore hath founded out of it,  
 Beginnes to ceafe ; and as fhe cafts her leaues,  
 (By fmall degrees) the kingdomes of the earth  
 Decline and wither : and looke whenfoeuer  
 That the pure fap in her, is dried vp quite ;  
 The lamp of all authoritie goes out,  
 And all the blaze of Princes is extinckt,  
 Thus as the Poet fends a meffenger  
 Out to the ftage, to fhew the fumme of all,

That followes after : fo are Kings reuolts,  
And playing both wayes with religion,  
Fore-runners of afflictions imminent,  
Which (like a Chorus) subiects must lament :

*D'Au.* My Lord I stand not on these deepe dif-  
courses,  
To fettle my course to your fortunes ; mine  
Are freely and inseperably linckt :  
And to your loue my life.

*Byr.* Thankes Princely friend,  
And whatfoeuer good shall come of me,  
Perfu'd by al the Catholike Princes aydes  
With whom I ioyne, and whose whole states propofde,  
To winne my valor, promise me a throne :  
All shall be equall with my selfe ; thine owne.

*La Brun.* My Lord here is *D'escuris* sent from  
the King,  
Desires accessse to you.

*Enter D'escures.*

*Byr.* Attend him in.

*Desc.* Health to my Lord the Duke :

*Byr.* Welcome *D'escuris*,  
In what health rests our royall Soueraigne.

*Desc.* In good health of his body, but his minde  
Is somthing troubled with the gathering stormes,  
Of forreigne powres ; that as he is inform'd  
Adresse themselues into his frontier townes ;  
And therefore his intent is to maintaine :  
The body of an army on those parts ;  
And yeeld their worthy conduct to your valor.

*Byr.* From whence heares he that any stormes are  
rising ?

*Desc.* From Italy ; and his intelligence,  
No doubt is certaine, that in all those partes  
Leuies are hotly made ; for which respect,  
He sent to his Ambaffador *De Vic*,  
To make demand in Switzerland, for the raising,



With vtmost dilligence of fixe thousand men ;  
 All which shall be commanded to attend,  
 On your direction ; as the Constable  
 Your honord Gossip gaue him in aduice ;  
 And he sent you by writing : of which letters,  
 He would haue answere, and aduice from you  
 By your most speedie prefence.

*Byr.* This is strange,  
 That when the enemie is t'attempt his frontiers,  
 He calls me from the frontiers: does he thinke,  
 It is an action worthy of my valor  
 To turne my back, to an approaching foe ?

*Defc.* The foe is not so nere, but you may come,  
 And take more strickt directions from his highnesse,  
 Then he thinkes fit his letters should containe ;  
 Without the least attainture of your valour ;  
 And therefore good my Lord, forbear excuse  
 And beare your selfe on his direction ;  
 Who well you know hath neuer made designe  
 For your most worthy seruice, where he saw  
 That any thing but honour could succede :

*Byr :* I will not come I sweare :

*Def.* I know your Grace,  
 Will send no such vnfauorie replie.

*Byr.* Tell him that I beseech his Maiesty,  
 To pardon my repaire till th' end be knowne  
 Of all these leuies now in Italie.

*Def.* My Lord I know that tale will neuer please  
 him ;  
 And wish you as you loue his loue and pleasure  
 To satisfie his summons speedily :  
 And speedily I know he will returne you.

*Byr.* By heauen it is not fit : if all my seruice  
 Makes me know any thing : beseech him therefore,  
 To trust my iudgement in these doubtfull charges,  
 Since in assur'd assaults it hath not faild him.

*Def.* I would your Lordship now, would trust his  
 iudgment,



*Byr.* Gods precious, y'are importunate past measure,  
And (I know) further, then your charge extends,  
Ile satisfie his highnesse, let that serue ;  
For by this flesh and bloud, you shall not beare,  
Any replie to him, but this from me.

*Def.* Tis nought to me my Lord, I wish your good,  
And for that cause haue beene importunate.

*Exit Defc.*

*Brunel.* By no meanes goe my Lord ; but with distrust,  
Of all that hath beene said or can be sent ;  
Collect your friends, and stand vpon your gard,  
The Kings faire letters, and his messages  
Are onely Golden Pills, and comprehend  
Horrible purgatiues.

*Byr.* I will not goe,  
For now I see the instructions lately sent me,  
That something is discouerd, are too true,  
And my head rules none of those neighbor Nobles,  
That euery Pursuant bring beneath the axe :  
If they bring me out, they shall see ile hatch  
Like to the Black-thorne, that puts forth his leafe,  
Not with the golden fawnings of the Sunne,  
But sharpest showers of haile, and blackest frosts,  
Blowes, batteries, breaches, showers of steele and  
bloud,  
Must be his down-right messengers for me,  
And not the misting breath of policie :  
He, he himselfe, made passage to his Crowne  
Through no more armies, battailes, massacres,  
Then I will aske him to arriue at me ;  
He takes on him, my executions,  
And on the demolitions, that this arme,  
Hath shaken out of forts and Citadells,  
Hath he aduanc't the Tropheys of his valor ;  
Where I, in those assumptions may scorne,  
And speake contemptuously of all the world,  
For any equal yet, I euer found ;

And in my rising, not the Syrian Starre  
 That in the Lyons mouth, vndaunted shines,  
 And makes his braue ascension with the Sunne,  
 Was of th' Egyptians, with more zeale beheld,  
 And made a rule to know the circuite  
 And compasse of the yeare ; then I was held  
 When I appeared from battaile ; the whole sphere,  
 And full sustainer of the state we beare ;  
 I haue Alcides-like gone vnder th' earth  
 And on these shoulders borne the weight of France :  
 And (for the fortunes of the thankles King)  
 My father (all know) fet him in his throne,  
 And if he vrge me, I may pluck him out.

*Enter Meff.*

*Mef.* Here is the president *Ianin*, my Lord ;  
 Sent from the King, and vrgeth quick accessse.

*Byr.* Another Pursuant ? and one so quick ?  
 He takes next course with me, to make him stay :  
 But, let him in, let's heare what he importunes.

*Enter Ianin.*

*Ianin.* Honor, and loyall hopes to Duke *Byron*.

*Byr.* No other touch me : say how fares the King ?

*Ian.* Farely my Lord ; the cloud is yet farre off  
 That aimes at his obscuring, and his will,  
 Would gladly giue the motion to your powers  
 That should disperse it ; but the meanes, himselfe,  
 Would personally relate in your direction.

*Byr.* Still on that haunt ?

*Ian.* Vpon my life, my Lord,  
 He much desires to see you, and your fight  
 Is now growne necessarie to suppressse  
 (As with the glorious splendor of the Sunne)  
 The rude windes that report breaths in his eares,  
 Endeauouring to blast your loyalty.

*Byr.* Sir, if my loyalty, stick in him no faster  
 But that the light breath of report may loose it,  
 (So I rest still vnmoou'd) let him be shaken.

*Ian.* But these aloofe abodes, my Lord bewray,  
That there is rather firmnesse in your breath  
Then in your heart ; Truth is not made of glasse,  
That with a small touch, it should feare to breake,  
And therefore should not shunne it ; beleue me  
His arme is long, and strong ; and it can fetch  
Any within his will, that will not come :  
Not he that surfets in his mines of gold,  
And for the pride thereof, compares with God,  
Calling (with almost nothing different)  
His powers invincible, for omnipotent,  
Can back your boldest Fort gainst his assaults :  
It is his pride, and vaine ambition,  
That hath but two staires in his high designs ;  
(The lowest enuie, and the highest bloud)  
That doth abuse you ; and giues mindes too high,  
Rather a will by giddinesse to fall,  
Then to descend by iudgement.

*Byr.* I relye  
On no mans back nor belly ; but the King  
Must thinke that merit, by ingratitude crackt,  
Requires a firmer fementing then words.  
And he shall find it a much harder worke  
To foder broken hearts, then shiuerd glasse.

*Ian.* My Lord, 'tis better hold a Soueraignes loue  
By bearing iniuries ; then by laying out  
Stirre his displeasure ; Princes discontents  
(Being once incenst) are like the flames of *Ætna*,  
Not to be quencht, nor lessend : and be fure,  
A subiects confidence in any merit,  
Against his Soueraigne, that makes him presume  
To flie too high ; approoues him like a cloude,  
That makes a shew as it did haulke at kingdoms,  
And could command, all raisd beneath his vapor :  
When sodainly, the Fowle that hawlkt so faire,  
Stoope in a puddle, or consumes in ayre.

*Byr.* I flie with no such ayme, nor am opposde  
Against my Soueraigne ; but the worthy height  
I haue wrought by my seruice, I will hold,

Which if I come away, I cannot do ;  
 For if the enemy should inuade the Frontier,  
 Whose charge to guard, is mine, with any spoile,  
 (Although the King in placing of another  
 Might well excuse me) Yet all forraine Kinges  
 That can take note of no such secret quittance,  
 Will lay the weakenesse here, vpon my wants ;  
 And therefore my abode is resolute.

*Ian* : I sorrow for your resolution,  
 And feare your dissolution, will succeed.

*Byr*. I must indure it ;

*Ian* : Fare you well my Lord.

*Exit. Ian.*

*Byr* : Farewell to you ;

*Enter Brun.*

Captaine what other newes ?

*Bru* : *La Fin* salutes you.

*Byr* : Welcome good friend ; I hope your wisht  
 arriually,

Will giue some certaine end to our disseignes ;

*Bru* : I know not that, my Lord ; reports are  
 raif'd so doubtfull and so different, that the truth of  
 any one can hardly be affur'd.

*Byr*. Good newes, *D' Auuergne* ; our trusty friend  
*La Fin*,

Hath clear'd all scruple with his Maiestie,  
 And vtterd nothing but what seru'd to cleare  
 All bad Suggestions.

*Bru* : So he sayes, my Lord

But others say, *La Fins* assurances

Are meere deceipts ; and wish you to beleue ;

That when the *Vidame*, nephew to *La Fin*,

Met you at *Autune*, to assure your doubts,

His vncler had said nothing to the King

That might offend you ; all the iournies charge,

The King defraid ; besides, your truest friendes

Willd me to make you certaine that your place

Of gouernment is otherwise dispos'd ;

And all aduise you, for your latest hope,

To make retreat into the *Franch County*.

*Byr* : I thanke them all, but they touch not the  
depth,  
Of the affaires, betwixt *La Fin* and me.  
Who is returnd contented to his house,  
Quite freed, of all displeasure or distrust ;  
And therefore, worthy friends wele now to Court.

*D'Au.* My Lord, I like your other friends aduices,  
Much better then *Laffins* ; and on my life  
You can not come to Court with any fastie.

*Byr.* Who shall infringe it ? I know, all the Court,  
Haue better apprehension of my valure ;  
Then that they dare lay violent hands on mee ;  
If I haue onely meanes to drawe this sword,  
I shall haue powre enough to set me free,  
From seasure, by my proudest enemie. *Exit.*

*Enter Esper. Vyt, Pral.*

*Esp.* He will not come, I dare engage my hand.

*Vyt.* He will be fetcht then, ile engage my head.

*Pra.* Come, or be fetcht, he quite hath lost his  
honor,  
In giuing these suspicions of reuolt  
From his allegiance : that which he hath wonne,  
With fundry wounds, and perrill of his life ;  
With wonder of his wisdom, and his valure,  
He loofeth with a most enchanted glorie :  
And admiration of his pride and folly.

*Vit.* Why did you neuer see a fortunate man  
Sodainely raif'd to heapes of welth and honor ?  
Nor any rarely great in gifts of nature,  
As valure, wit, and smooth vse of the tongue,  
Set strangely to the pitch of populare likings ?  
But with as sodaine falls the rich and honord,  
Were ouerwhelmd by pouertie, and shame  
Or had no vse of both aboue the wretched.

*Esp.* Men neuer are fatisfi'd with that they haue ;  
But as a man, matcht with a louely wife,  
When his most heauenly Theorie of her beauties,



Is duld and quite exhausted with his practise :  
 He brings her forth to feasts, where he ahlas,  
 Falls to his viands with no thought like others,  
 That thinke him blest in her, and they (poore men)  
 Court, and make faces, offer seruice, sweate,  
 With their desires contention, breake their braines  
 For iests, and tales : sit mute, and loofe their lookes,  
 (Far out of wit, and out of countenance)  
 So all men else, do what they haue transplant,  
 And place their welth in thirst of what they want.

*Enter Henry, Chancellor, Vyd : Desc : Ianin.*

*Hen.* He will not come ; I must both grieue and  
 wonder,  
 That all my care to winne my subiects loue  
 And in one cup of friendship to commixe,  
 Our liues and fortunes : should leaue out so many  
 As giue a man (contemptuous of my loue,  
 And of his owne good, in the Kingdomes peace)  
 Hope, in a continuance so vngratefull,  
 To beare out his designs in spight of me ;  
 How should I better please all, then I do ?  
 When they suppos'd, I would haue giuen some,  
 Insolent garifons ; others Citadells,  
 And to all forts, encrease of miseris ;  
 Prouince by Prouince, I did visit all ?  
 Whom those iniurious rumors had diswaide ;  
 And shew'd them how, I neuer sought to build,  
 More forts for me, then were within their hearts ;  
 Nor vse more sterne constraints, then their good wills,  
 To succor the necessities of my crowne,  
 That I desired to ad to their contents  
 By all occasions, rather then subtract ;  
 Nor wisht I, that my treasury should flow,  
 With gold that swum in, in my subiects teares ;  
 And then I found no man, that did not blesse,  
 My few yeares raigne ; and their triumphant peace,  
 And do they now so soone, complaine of ease ?  
 He will not come ?



*Enter Byron, D'Avuergne, brother, with others.*

*Esp.* O madnesse ? he is come.

*Chan.* The duke is come my Lord :

*Hen.* Oh Sir, y'are welcome,  
And fitly, to conduct me to my house ;

*Byr.* I must beseech your Maiesties excuse,  
That (Ielouse of mine honor) I haue vfd,  
Some of mine owne commandment in my stay,  
And came not with your highnesse soonest summons.

*Hen :* The faithfull feruant right in holy writ ;  
That said he would not come and yet he came :  
But come you hether ; I must tell you now,  
Not the contempt you stood to in your stay,  
But the bad ground that bore vp your contempt,  
Makes you arriue at no port, but repentance,  
Despayre and ruine ;

*Byr.* Be what port it will,  
At which your will, will make me be arriued,  
I am not come to iustifie my selfe,  
To aske you pardon nor accuse my friends,

*Hen.* If you conceale my enemies you are one,  
And then my pardon shall be worth your asking,  
Or else your head be worth my cutting of.

*Byr.* Being friend and worthy fautor of my selfe,  
I am no foe of yours, nor no empayrer,  
Since he can no way worthely maintaine  
His Princes honor that neglects his owne :  
And if your will haue beene to my true reason,  
(Maintaining still the truth of loyalty)  
A checke to my free nature and mine honor,  
And that on your free iustice I presum'd  
To crosse your will a little, I conceiue,  
You will not thinke this forfait worth my head ;

*Hen.* Haue you maintaind your truth of loyalty ?  
When since I pardoned foule ententions,  
Resoluing to forget eternally,  
What they apperd in, and had welcomd you  
As the kind father doth his riotous son.

I can approue facts fowler then th' intents,  
Of deepe difloyalty and highest treason;

*Byr.* May this right hand be thunder to my brest,  
If I stand guilty of the flendrest fact,  
Wherein the left of those two can be prooued,  
For could my tender conscience but haue toucht,  
At any such vnnaturall relaps;  
I would not with this confidence haue runne,  
Thus headlong in the furnace of a wrath,  
Blowne, and thrice kindled: hauing way enough,  
In my election both to shunne and sleight it.

*Hen.* Y'are grosely and vain gloriously abus'd,  
There is no way in *Sauoy* nor in *Spaine*,  
To giue a foole that hope of your escape,  
And had you not (euen when you did) arriued,  
(With horror to the proudest hope you had)  
I would haue fetcht you.

*Byr.* You must then haue vs'd  
A power beyond my knowledge, and a will  
Beyond your iustice. For a little stay  
More then I vs'd would hardly haue beene worthy,  
Of such an open expedition;  
In which to all the censures of the world,  
My faith and Innocence had beene fouly soyld;  
Which (I protest) by heauens bright witnesses  
That shine farr, farr, from mixture with our feares,  
Retaine as perfect roundnes as their spheares;

*Hen.* Tis well my Lord, I thought I could haue  
frighted  
Your firmest confidence: some other time,  
We will (as now in priuate) sift your actions.  
And poure more then you thinke into the siue,  
Alwaies reseruing clemency and pardon  
Vpon confession, be you nere so foule,  
Come lets cleere vp our browes shall we to tennis.

*Byr.* I my Lord if I may make the match.  
The Duke *Espernon* and my selfe will play,  
With you and Count *Soiffons*;

*Esp.* I know my Lord.

You play well but you make your matches ill.

*Hen.* Come tis a match.

*Exit.*

*Byr.* How like you my ariuell ?

*Esp.* Ile tell you as a friend in your eare.

You haue giuen more preferment to your courage,  
Then to the prouident counfailes of your friends.

*D'Au.* I told him fo my Lord, and much was  
grieu'd

To see his bold approach, so full of will.

*Byr.* Well I must beare it now, though but with  
th' head,

The shoulders bearing nothing.

*Esp.* By Saint *John*,

Tis a good headleffe resolution.

*Exeunt.*

ACTVS 4.

SCÆNA I.

*Enter the Duke of Byron, D'Avuergne.*

*Byr.* O the most base fruites of a fetled peace !  
In men, I meane ; worse then their durty fields,  
Which they manure much better then them-felues :  
For them they plant, and sowe, and ere they grow,  
Weedie, and choakt with thornes, they grub and  
proyne,  
And make them better, then when cruell warre,  
Frighted from thence the sweaty labourer :  
But men them-felues, instead of bearing fruites,  
Grove rude, and foggie, ouer-growne with weedes,  
Their spirits, and freedoms smotherd in their ease ;  
And as their tyrants and their ministers,

Growe wilde in profecution of their lufts,  
 So they grow prostitute, and lye (like whores)  
 Downe and take vp, to their abhord dishonors :  
 The friendlesse may be iniur'd and opprest ;  
 The guiltlesse led to slaughter, the deseruer  
 Giuen to the begger ; right be wholly wrongd,  
 And wrong be onely houor'd ; till the strings  
 Of euery mans heart, crack ; and who will stirre,  
 To tell authority, that it doth erre.  
 All men cling to it, though they see their blouds  
 In their most deare associates and Allyes,  
 Pour'd into kennels by it : and who dares  
 But looke well in the breast, whom that impayres ?  
 How all the Court now lookes askew on me ?  
 Go by without saluting, shun my sight,  
 Which (like a March Sunne) agues breeds in them,  
 From whence of late, 'twas health to haue a beame.

*D'Au.* Now none will speake to vs, we thrust our-  
 felues

Into mens companies, and offer speech,  
 As if not made, for their diuerted eares,  
 Their backs turnd to vs, and their words to others.  
 And we must like obsequious Parasites,  
 Follow their faces, winde about their persons,  
 For lookes and answers : or be cast behinde,  
 No more viewd than the wallet of their faults.

*Enter Soiffon.*

*Byr.* Yet here's one views me ; and I thinke will  
 speake.

*Soiff.* My Lord, if you respect your name and race,  
 The preferuation of your former honors,  
 Merites and vertues ; humbly cast them all,  
 At the kings mercy ; for beyond all doubt,  
 Your acts haue thether driuen them : he hath proofes  
 So pregnant, and so horride, that to heare them,  
 Would make your valure in your very lookes,  
 Giue vp your forces, miserably guilty :

But he is most loth (for his ancient loue  
To your rare vertues :) and in their empaire,  
The full discouragement of all that liue,  
To trust or fauour any gifts in Nature,  
T'expose them to the light ; when darknesse may  
Couer her owne broode, and keepe still in day,  
Nothing of you but that may brooke her brightnesse :  
You know what horrors these high strokes do bring,  
Raifd in the arme of an incensed King.

*Byr.* My Lord, be sure the King cannot complaine  
Of any thing in me, but my true seruice,  
Which in so many dangers of my death,  
May so approoue my spotlesse loyaltie ;  
That those quite opposite horrors you assure,  
Must looke out of his owne ingratitude ;  
Or the malignant enuies of my foes,  
Who powre me out in such a Stygian flood,  
To drowne me in my selfe, since their deserts  
Are farre from such a deluge ; and in me  
Hid like so many riuers in the Sea.

*Soiff.* You thinke I come to found you ; fare you  
wel, *Exit.*

*Enter Chancellor, Espernon, Fanin, Vidame, Vitry,  
Pralin, whispering by couples, &c.*

*D'Au :* See see, not one of them will cast a glance  
At our eclipsed faces ;

*Byr.* They keepe all to cast in admiration on the  
King :  
For from his face are all their faces moulded.

*D'Au :* But when a change comes ; we shall see  
them all

Chang'd into water, that will instantly  
Giue looke for looke, as if it watcht to greet vs ;  
Or else for one, they'l giue vs twenty faces,  
Like to the little specks on sides of glasses ;

*Byr.* Is't not an easie losse to lose theyr lookes,  
Whose hearts so soone are melted ?



*D'Au*: But me thinks,  
(Being Courtiers) they should cast best looks on men,  
When they thought worst of them.

*Byr*. O no my Lord,  
They n'ere difsemble but for some aduantage ;  
They fell theyr looks, and shadowes ; which they rate  
After theyr markets, kept beneath the State ;  
Lord what foule weather theyr aspects do threaten ?  
See in how graue a Brake he fets his vizard :  
Passion of nothing ; See, an excellent Iecture :  
Now Courtship goes a ditching in theyr fore-heads ;  
And we are falne into those dismall ditches :  
Why euen thus dreadfully would they be wrapt,  
If the Kings butterd egges, were onely spilt.

*Enter Henry.*

*Hen*: Lord Chancellor ;

*Cha*: I my Lord ;

*Hen*: And lord *Vidame*: *Exit.*

*Byr*: And not *Byron* ? here's a prodigious change ;

*D'Au*. He cast no Beame on you ;

*Byr*: Why now you see

From whence theyr countenances were copyed.

*Enter the captain of Byrons guard with a letter.*

*D'Au*. See, here comes some newes, I beleue my  
Lord.

*Byr*. What faies the honest captaine of my guard ?

*Cap*. I bring a letter from a friend of yours.

*Byr*. Tis welcome then :

*D'Au*. Haue we yet any friends ?

*Cap*. More then yee would I thinke : I neuer  
faw,

Men in their right mindes so vnrighteous  
In their owne caufes.

*Byr*. See what thou hast brought,  
Hee will vs to retire our selues my Lord,  
And makes as if it were almost too late,  
What faies my captaine ; shall we goe or no ?

*Cap.* I would your daggers point had kist my heart,  
When you resolu'd to come.

*Byr.* I pray thee why ?

*Cap.* Yet doth that fencelesse Apopelxy dull you ?  
The diuell or your wicked angell blinds you,  
Bereauing all your reason of a man  
And leaues you but the spirit of a horse,  
In your brute nostrills : onely powre to dare.

*Byr.* Why, dost thou think, my comming here hath  
brought me  
To such an vnrecouerable danger ?

*Cap.* Iudge by the strange Ostents that haue succeeded,  
Since your arriuall : the kinde fowle, the wilde duck,  
That came into your cabinet, so beyond  
The sight of all your seruants, or your selfe :  
That flew about, and on your shoulder sat  
And which you had so fed, and so attended ;  
For that dum loue she shew'd you ; iust as soone,  
As you were parted, on the sodaine died.  
And to make this no lesse then an Ostent ;  
Another that hath fortun'd since, confirmes it :  
Your goodly horse *Pastrana*, which the Archduke,  
Gauē you at Bruxells ; in the very houre,  
You left your strength, fel-mad, and kild himselfe ;  
The like chanc't to the horse the great duke sent you :  
And, with both these, the horse the duke of Lorraine,  
Sent you at *Vimie* made a third presage,  
Of some Ineuitable fate that toucht you,  
Who like the other pin'd away and died.

*Byr.* All these together are indeed ostentfull,  
Which by another like, I can confirme :  
The matchlesse Earle of *Effex* who some make,  
(In their most sure diuinings of my death)  
A parallell with me in life and fortune,  
Had one horse like-wise that the very howre,  
He sufferd death, (being well the night before)  
Died in his pasture. Noble happy beasts,

That hie, not hauing to their wills to liue :  
 They vse no deprecations, nor complaints.  
 Nor sute for mercy : amongst them the Lion ;  
 Serues not the Lion ; nor the horse the horse,  
 As man serues man : when men shew most their  
     spirits  
 In valure and their vtmost dares to do ;  
 They are compard to Lions, Woolues, and Bores,  
 But by conuerfion ; None will fay a Lyon,  
 Fights as he had the Spirrit of a man.  
 Let me then in my danger now giue caufe,  
 For all men to begin that *Simile*.  
 For all my huge engagement, I prouide me,  
 This short sword onely ; which if I haue time,  
 To show my apprehendor, he shall vse  
 Power of tenne Lions if I get not loofe.

*Enter Henry, Chancellor, Vidame, Ianin, Vitry,  
 Pralin.*

*Hen.* What shall we doe with this vnthankfull  
     man ?  
 Would he (of one thing) but reueale the truth,  
 Which I haue prooffe of, underneath his hand,  
 He should not tast my Iustice. I would giue,  
 Two hundred thousand crownes, that he would yeeld,  
 But such meanes for my pardon, as he should ;  
 I neuer lou'd man like him : would haue trusted,  
 My Sonne in his protection, and my Realme :  
 He hath deseru'd my loue with worthy seruice,  
 Yet can he not deny, but I haue thrice,  
 Sau'd him from death : I drew him off the foe  
 At *Fontaine Francoise* where he was engag'd,  
 So wounded and so much amazd with blowes,  
 That (as I playd the fouldier in his rescue,)  
 I was enforc't to play the Marshall,  
 To order the retreat : because he said,  
 He was not fit to do it nor to serue me.

*Cha.* Your maiefty hath vfd your vtmost meanes,

Both by your owne perfwasions, and his friends,  
 To bring him to submission, and confesse  
 (With some signe of repentance) his foule fault :  
 Yet still he stands prefract and insolent.  
 You haue in loue and care of his recouery  
 Beene halfe in labour to produce a course,  
 And resolution, what were fit for him.  
 And since so amply it concernes your crowne,  
 You must by law cut of, what by your grace,  
 You cannot bring into the state of safety.

*Ian.* Begin at th' end my Lord and execute,  
 Like *Alexander* with *Parmenio*.

Princes (you knowe) are Maisters of their lawes,  
 And may resolue them to what forms they please,  
 So all conclude in iustice ; in whose stroke,  
 There is one sort of manadge for the Great ;  
 Another for inferiour : The great Mother,  
 Of all productions (graue Necessity)  
 Commands the variation : And the profit,  
 So certainly fore-seene, commends the example.

*Hen.* I like not executions so informall,  
 For which my predecessors haue beene blam'd :  
 My Subiects and the world shall knowe my powre,  
 And my authority by lawes vsuall course  
 Dares punish ; not the deuilish heads of treason,  
 But there confederates be they nere so dreadfull.  
 The decent ceremonies of my lawes,  
 And their solemnitie shall be obserued,  
 With all their Sternenes and Seueritie.

*Vit.* Where will your highnes haue him apprehended ?

*Hen.* Not in the Castle (as some haue aduif'd)  
 But in his chamber ;

*Pral.* Rather in your owne,  
 Or comming out of it ; for tis assur'd  
 That any other place of apprehension,  
 Will make the hard performance, end in blood.

*Vit.* To shun this likely-hood, my Lord tis best  
 To make the apprehension neere your chamber ;

For all respect and reuerence giuen the place,  
More then is needfull, to chastice the person,  
And faue the opening of too many veines ;  
Is vain and dangerous.

*Hen* : Gather you your guard,  
And I will finde fit time to giue the word,  
When you shall feaze on him and on *D'Avuergne* ;

*Vit* : We will be readie to the death ; (my Lord)

*Exeunt.*

*Hen* : O thou that gouernst the keene swords of  
Kings,

Direct my arme in this important stroke,  
Or hold it being aduanc't ; the weight of blood,  
Euen in the basest subiect, doth exact  
Deepe consultation, in the highest King ;  
For in one subiect, deaths vniust affrights,  
Passions, and paines, (though he be n'ere so poore)  
Aske more remorse, then the voluptuous spleenes  
Of all Kings in the world, deserue respect ;  
Hee should be borne grey-headed that will beare  
The sword of Empire ; Iudgement of the life,  
Free state, and reputation of a man,  
(If it be iust and worthy) dwells so darke  
That it denies accesse to Sunne and Moone ;  
The foules eye sharpned with that sacred light,  
Of whome the Sunne it selfe is but a beame,  
Must onely giue that iudgement ; O how much  
Erre those Kings then, that play with life and death,  
And nothing put into their ferious States,  
But humor and their lusts ! For which alone  
Men long for Kingdomes ; whose huge counterpoise  
In cares and dangers, could a foole comprise,  
He would not be a King but would be wise ;

*Enter Byron talking with the Queene: Esp: D'En-  
tragues, D'Auer: with another Lady, others  
attending.*

*Hen* : Heere comes the man, with whose ambitious  
head



(Cast in the way of *Treason*) we must stay  
His full chace of our ruine and our Realme ;  
This houre shall take vpon her shady winge  
His latest liberty and life to Hell.

*D'Au.* We are vndone ?

*Queene :* Whats that ?

*Byr :* I heard him not ;

*Hen :* Madam, y'are honord much, that Duke  
*Byron*

Is so obseruant ; Some, to cardes with him,  
You foure, as now you come, fit to *Primero* ;  
And I will fight a battayle at the *Cheffe*.

*Byr.* A good safe fight beleeeue me ; Other warre  
Thirsts blood, and wounds, and his thirst quencht, is  
thankles ;

*Efp.* Lift, and then cut ;

*Byr.* Tis right the end of lifting,  
When men are lifted to their highest pitch,  
They cut of those that lifted them so high.

*Qu :* Apply you all these sports so seriously ?

*Byr :* They first were from our ferious acts deuif'd,  
The best of which are to the best but sports ;  
(I meane by best, the greatest) for their ends,  
In men that serue them best, are their owne pleasures.

*Qu :* So, in those best mens seruices, their ends  
Are their owne pleasures ; passe.

*Byr :* I vy't ;

*Hen :* I fee't ;

And wonder at his frontles impudence ; *Exit Hen :*

*Chan :* How speedes your Maiesty ?

*Que.* Well ; the Duke instructs me  
With such graue lessons of mortallitie  
Forc't out of our light sport ; that if I loose,  
I cannot but speed well.

*Byr.* Some idle talke,  
For Courtship sake, you know does not amisse.

*Chan.* Would we might heare some of it.

*Byr.* That you shall,  
I cast away a card now, makes me thinke,  
Of the deceased worthy King of Spaine.

*Chan.* What card was that ?

*Byr.* The king of hearts (my Lord)  
Whose name yeelds well the memorie of that King,  
Who was indeed the worthy King of hearts,  
And had, both of his subiects hearts, and strangers,  
Much more then all the Kings of Christendome.

*Chan.* He wun them with his gold.

*Byr.* He wun them chiefly,  
With his so generall Pietie and Justice :  
And as the little, yet great Macedon,  
Was sayd with his humane philosophy,  
To teach the rapefull *Hyrkans*, mariage ;  
And bring the barbarous *Sogdians*, to nourish,  
Not kill their aged Parents ; as before,  
Th' incestuous *Persians* to reuerence  
Their mothers, not to vse them as their wiues ;  
The *Indians* to adore the *Grecian* Gods,  
The *Scythians* to inter, not eat their Parents ;  
So he, with his diuine Philosophy,  
(Which I may call his, since he chiefly vsd it)  
In *Turky*, *India*, and through all the world,  
Expell'd prophane idolatry ; and from earth,  
Raisd temples to the highest : whom with the word,  
He could not winne, he iustly put to sword.

*Chan.* He fought for gold, and Empire.

*Byr.* Twas Religion,  
And her full propagation that he fought ;  
If gold had beene his end, it had beene hoorded,  
When he had fetcht it in so many fleetes :  
Which he spent not on *Median* Luxurie,  
Banquets and women ; *Calidonian* wine,  
Nor deare *Hyrcanian* fishes, but emploid it,  
To propagate his Empire ; and his Empire  
Desird t' extend so, that he might withall,  
Extend Religion through it, and all nations,  
Reduce to one firme constitution,  
Of Pietie, Iustice, and one publique weale ;  
To which end he made all his matchles subiects  
Make tents their castles, and their garisons ;

True Catholikes contrimen ; and their allies,  
Heretikes, strangers, and their enemies.  
There was in him the magnanimity.

*Montig.* To temper your extreame applause (my  
Lord)

Shorten, and answere all things in a word,  
The greatest commendation we can giue  
To the remembrance of that King deceast ;  
Is, that he spar'd not his owne eldest sonne,  
But put him iustly to a violent death,  
Because, hee sought to trouble his estates.

*Byr.* Ist so ?

*Chan.* That bit (my Lord) vpon my life,  
Twas bitterly replied, and doth amaze him.

*The King sodainely enters hauing  
determined what  
to doe.*

*Hen.* It is resolud,  
A worke shall now be done,  
Which, (while learned *Atlas* shall with starres be  
crownd,)

While th'Ocean walkes in stormes his way round,  
While Moones at full, repaire their broken rings :  
While *Lucifer* fore-shewes *Auroras* springs,  
And *Arctos* sticke aboute the Earth vnmou'd,  
Shall make my realme be blest, and me beloued ;  
Call in the count *D'Auuergne.* *Enter D'Au.*

A word my Lord.

Will you become as wilfull as your friend ?  
And draw a mortall iustice on your heads,  
That hangs so blacke and is so loth to strike ?  
If you would vtter what I knowe you knowe,  
Of his inhumaine treason ; on Stronge Barre,  
Betwixt his will, and duty were dissolud.  
For then I know he would submit himselfe ;  
Thinke you it not as strong a point of faith,  
To rectifie your loyalties to me,

As to be trusty in each others wrong ?  
Trust that deceiues our selues in treachery,  
And Truth that truth conceales an open lie ;

*D'Au.* My Lord if I could vtter any thought,  
Instruſted with difloyalty to you,  
And might light any faſty to my friend ;  
Though mine owne heart came after it ſhould out.

*Hen.* I knowe you may, and that your faith's  
affected

To one another, are ſo vaine and faulce,  
That your owne Strengths will ruine you : ye contend,  
To caſt vp rampiers to you in the ſea,  
And ſtrive to ſtop the waues that runne before you.

*D'Au.* All this my Lord to me is miſery.

*Hen.* It is ; Ile make it plaine enough. Beleeue  
me.

Come my Lord Chancellor let vs end our mate.

*Enter Varennes, whispering to Byron.*

\* *Var.* You are vndone my Lord ;

*Byr :* Is it poſſible ?

*Que.* Play good my Lord : whom looke you for ?

*Eſp.* Your mind,

Is not vpon your Game.

*Byr.* Play, pray you play,

*Hen.* Enough, tis late, and time to leaue our play,  
On all hands ; all forbear the roome, my Lord ?

Stay you with me ; yet is your will reſolued,

To duty, and the maine bond of your life ?

I ſweare (of all th' Intruſions I haue made,

Vpon your owne good, and continu'd fortunes)

This is the laſt ; informe me yet the truth,

And here I vow to you, (by all my loue ;

By all meanes ſhowne you, euen to this extreame,

When all men elſe forſake you) you are ſafe.

What paſſages haue ſlipt twixt Count *Fuentes*,

You, and the Duke of *Sauoy* ?

*Byr.* Good my Lord,

This nayle is driuen already past the head,  
You much haue ouercharged, an honest man :  
And I beseech you yeeld my Innocence iustice,  
(But with my single valure) gainst them all  
That thus haue poisoned your opinion of me,  
And let me take my vengeance by my sword :  
For I protest, I neuer thought an Action,  
More then my tongue hath vtterd.

*Hen.* Would twere true ;  
And that your thoughts and deeds, had fell no fouler.  
But you disdain submission, not remembring,  
That (in intentes vrgd for the common good)  
He that shall hold his peace being chardgd to speake :  
Doth all the peace and nerues of Empire breake  
Which on your conscience lie, adieu, good night.

*Exit.*

*Byr.* Kings hate to heare what they command  
men speake,  
Aske life, and to desert of death ye yeeld.  
Where Medicins loath, it yrcks men to be heald.

*Enter Vitry, with two or three of the Guard, Esper,  
Vidame, following. Vytry layes hand on Byrons  
sword.*

*Vyt.* Resigne your sword (my Lord) the King com-  
mands it.

*Byr.* Me to resigne my sword ? what King is he,  
Hath vfd it better for the realme then I ?  
My sword, that all the warres within the length,  
Breadth and the whole dimensions of great *France*,  
Hath sheathd betwixt his hilt aud horrid point ?  
And fixt ye all in such a flourishing Peace ?  
My sword that neuer enimie could inforce,  
Bereft me by my friendes ? Now, good my Lord,  
Beseech the King, I may resigne my sword,  
To his hand onely.



*Enter Ianin.*

*Ianin.* You must do your office,  
The King commands you.

*Vit:* Tis in vaine to striue,  
For I must force it.

*Byron:* Haue I n'ere a friend,  
That beares another for me? All the Guard?  
What will you kill me? will you smother here  
His life that can command, and faue in field,  
A hundred thousand liues? For man-hood sake;  
Lend something to this poore forsaken hand;  
For all my seruice, let me haue the honor  
To dye defending of my innocent selfe,  
And haue some little space to pray to God.

*Enter Henry.*

*Hen:* Come, you are an Atheist *Byron*, and a  
Traytor,  
Both foule and damnable; Thy innocent selfe?  
No Leper is so buried quicke in vlcers  
As thy corrupted foule: Thou end the war?  
And settle peace in France? what war hath rag'd,  
Into whose fury I haue not expof'd,  
My person, which is as free a spirit as thine?  
Thy worthy Father, and thy selfe, combinde,  
And arm'd in all the merits or your valors;  
(Your bodyes thrust amidst the thickest fights)  
Neuer were bristled with so many battayles,  
Nor on the foe haue broke such woods of Launces  
As grew vpon my thigh; and I haue Marshald;  
I am asham'd to bragge thus; where enuy  
And arrogance, their opposit Bulwarke raise;  
Men are allowd to vse their proper praise;  
Away with him: *Exit Henry:*

*Byr.* Away with him? liue I?  
And here my life thus sleighted? curfed man,  
That euer the intelligensing lights

Betraid me to mens whorish fellowships ;  
To Princes Moorish slaueries : To be made  
The Anuille, on which onely blowes, and woundes  
Were made the feed, and wombs of other honors ;  
A property for a Tyrant, to fet vp,  
And puffe downe, with the vapour of his breath ;  
Will you not kill me ?

*Vit* : No, we will not hurt you,  
We are commanded onely to conduct you  
Into your lodging ;

*Byr* : To my lodging ? where ?

*Vit* : Within the Cabynet of Armes my Lord :

*Byr* : What to a prifon ? Death ; I will not go ;

*Vit* : Weele force you then ;

*Byr* : And take away my fword ;

A proper point of force ; ye had as good,  
Haue rob'd me of my foule ; Slaues of my Starrs,  
Partiall and bloody ; O that in mine Eyes  
Were all the Sorcerous poyfon of my woes,  
That I might witch ye headlong from your height,  
So, trample out your execrable light.

*Vit* : Come will you go my Lord ? this rage is  
vaine ;

*Byr*. And so is all your graue authority ;  
And that all France shall feele before I die ;  
Ye fee all how they vse good Catholiques ;

*Efp*. Farewell for euer ; so haue I defern'd  
An exhalation that would be a Starre  
Fall when the Sunne forfooke it, in a fincke.  
Shooes euer ouerthrow that are too large,  
And hugest canons, burst with ouercharge.

*Enter D'Avuergne, Pralin, following with a Guard.*

*Pra*. My Lord I haue commandment from the  
King,  
To charge you go with me, and aske your fword ;

*D'Au* : My fword, who feares it ? it was nere the  
death

Of any but wilde Bores ; I prithee take it ;  
 Hadst thou aduertif'd this when last we met,  
 I had bene in my bed, and fast asleepe  
 Two houres a goe ; lead ; ile go where thou wilt :

*Exit.*

*Vid* : See how he beares his crosse, with his small  
 strength,

On easier shoulders then the other *Atlas*.

*Esp* : Strength to aspire, is still accompanied  
 With weakenes to indure ; All popular gifts,  
 Are coullors, it will beare no vineger ;  
 And rather to aduerse affaires, betray ;  
 Thine arme against them ; his State still is best  
 That<sup>s</sup> hath most inward worth ; and that's best tryed,  
 That<sup>s</sup> neither glories, nor is glorified. *Exeunt.*

ACTVS 5. SCÆNA 1.

*Henry, Soiffons, Ianin, Descures, cum aliis.*

*Hen* : What shall we thinke (my Lords) of these  
 new forces

That (from the King of Spaine) hath past the Alps ?  
 For which (I thinke) his Lord Ambassador,  
 Is come to Court, to get their passe for Flanders ?

*Ian*. I thinke (my Lord) they haue no end for  
 Flanders ;

Count *Maurice* being already entred Brabant  
 To passe to Flanders, to relieue Ostend,  
 And th' Arch-duke full prepar'd to hinder him ;  
 For fure it is that they must measure forces,  
 Which (ere this new force could haue past the Alps)  
 Of force must be incountred.

---

<sup>5</sup> In both these places the word *As* is substituted for "that," in the edition of 1625.

*Soiff.* Tis vnlikely,  
That their march hath so large an ayme as Flanders ;

*Desc:* As these times fort, they may haue shorter  
reaches ;  
That would pierce further ;

*Hen :* I haue bene aduertit'd,  
How Count *Fuentes* (by whose meanes this army  
Was lately leuied ; And whose hand was strong,  
In thrusting on *Byrons* conspiracie)  
Hath caus'd these cunning forces to aduance,  
With coullor onely to set downe in Flanders ;  
But hath intentionall respect to fauor  
And countnance his false Partizans in Bresse,  
And friendes in Burgondie ; to giue them heart  
For the full taking of their hearts from me ;  
Be as it will ; we shall preuent their worst ;  
And therefore call in Spaines Ambassador,

*Enter Ambassador with others.*

What would the Lord Ambassador of Spaine ?

*Amba :* First (in my maisters name) I would beseech  
Your highnes hearty thought ; That his true hand,  
(Held in your vowd amities) hath not toucht,  
At any least point in *Byrons* offence ;  
Nor once had notice of a crime so foule ;  
Whereof, since he doubts not, you stand resolu'd,  
He prayes your Leagues continuance in this favor ;  
That the army he hath rais'd to march for Flanders,  
May haue safe passage by your frontier townes,  
And finde the Riuer free, that runs by Rhofne.

*Hen.* My Lord my frontiers shall not be disfarm'd,  
Till, by araignment of the Duke of *Byron*,  
My scruples are resolu'd ; and I may know  
In what account to hold your Maisters faith,  
For his obseruance of the League betwixt vs ;  
You wish me to beleeeue that he is cleare  
From all the proiects caus'd by Count *Fuentes*,  
His speciall Agent ; But where, deedes pull downe,

Words, may repaire, no faith ; I scarce can thinke  
 That his gold was so bouteously employd,  
 Without his speciall counsaile, and command :  
 These faint proceedings in our Royall faiths,  
 Make subiects proue so faithlesse : If becaufe,  
 We sit aboute the danger of the lawes,  
 We likewise lift our Armes aboute their iustice ;  
 And that our heauenly Soueraigne, bounds not vs,  
 In those religious confines ; out of which  
 Our iustice and our true lawes are inform'd ;  
 In vaine haue we expectance that our subiects,  
 Should not as well presume to offend their Earthly,  
 As we our Heauenly Soueraigne ? And this breach  
 Made in the Forts of all Society ;  
 Of all celestially, and humane respects,  
 Makes no strengths of our bounties, counsaile, s armes,  
 Hold out against their treasons ; and the rapes  
 Made of humanitie and religion,  
 In all mens more then *Pagan* liberties,  
 Atheismes, and flaueries will deriue their springs  
 From their base Presidents, copied out of kings.  
 But all this shall not make me breake the commerce,  
 Authorisde by our treaties ; let your Armie  
 Have the directest passe,<sup>6</sup> it shall goe safe.

*Amb.* So rest your highnesse euer ; and assurde  
 That my true Soueraigne, hates all opposite thoughts.<sup>7</sup>

*Hen.* Are our dispatches made to all the kings,  
 Princes, and Potentates of Christendome ?  
 Ambassadors and Prouince gouernors,  
 T'enforme the truth of this conspiracie ?

*Ian.* They all are made my Lord, and some giue  
 out,  
 That 'tis a blow giuen to religion,  
 To weaken it, in ruining of him,  
 That said, he neuer wisht more glorious title,  
 Then to be call'd the scourge of *Hugenots*.

---

6. Take the directest passe. 1608.

7. lothes all opposite thoughts. 1608.



*Soiff.* Others that are like faouurers of the fault,  
Said 'tis a politique aduife from *England*,  
To breake the facred Iauelins,<sup>8</sup> both together.

*Hen.* Such fhut their eyes to truth, we can but fet  
His lights before them, and his trumpet found  
Clove to their eares ; their partiall wilfulneffe,  
In refing blinde, and deafe, or in peruerting,  
What their moft certaine fences apprehend,  
Shall naught difcomfort our imperiall Iuftice,<sup>9</sup>  
Nor cleere the desperat fault that doth enforce it.

*Enter Vyt.*

*Vyt.* The Peeres of *France* (my Lord) refufe  
t'appeare,  
At the arraignment of the Duke of *Byron*.

*Hen.* The Court may yet proceed ; and fo com-  
mand it,

'Tis not their slackneffe to appeare fhall ferue,  
To let my will t'appeare in any fact,  
Wherein the bouledest of them tempts my iuftice.  
I am refolu'd, and will no more endure,  
To haue my fubiects make what I command,  
The fubiect of their oppositions,  
Who euer-more make slack their allegiance,  
As kings forbear their pennance ; how fustaine  
Your prifoners their ftrange durance ?

*Vit.* One of them,  
(Which is the Count *D'Avuergne*) hath merry fpirits,  
Eates well, and fleepes : and neuer can imagine,  
That any place where he is, is a prifon ;  
Where on the other part, the Duke *Byron*,  
Enterd his prifon, as into his graue,  
Reiects all food, fleepes not, nor once lyes downe :  
Furie hath arm'd his thoughts fo thick with thornes,  
That ref can haue no entry : he difdaines  
To grace the prifon with the flendrest fhew  
Of any patience, leaft men fhould conceiue,

---

8. feared Jauelins. 1608.

9. impartiall Iuftice. 1608.

He thought his sufferance in the best sort fit ;  
 And holds his bands so worthlesse of his worth,  
 That he empaires it, to vouchsafe to them,  
 The best part of the peace, that freedom owes it :  
 That patience therein, is a willing flauerie,  
 And (like the Cammell) stoopes to take the load :  
 So still he walkes : or rather as a Byrde,  
 Enterd a Clofet, which vnawares is made,  
 His desperate prison (being purfude) amazd,  
 And wrathfull beates his brest from wall to wall,  
 Assaults the light, strikes downe himselfe, not out,  
 And being taken, struggles, gaspes, and bites,  
 Takes all his takers strokings, to be strokes,  
 Abhorreth food, and with a fauadge will,  
 Frets, pines, and dyes, for former libertie.  
 So fares the wrathfull Duke ; and when the  
 strength

Of these dumbe rages, breake out into founds,  
 He breaths defiance, to the world, and bids vs,  
 Make our selues drunke, with the remaining bloud  
 Of fise and thirty wounds receiud in fight,  
 For vs and ours ; for we shall neuer brag,  
 That we haue made his spirits check at death :  
 This rage in walkes and words ; but in his looks  
 He coments all, and prints a world of bookes.

*Hen.* Let others learne by him to curb their  
 spleenes,  
 Before they be curbd ; and to cease their grudges :  
 Now I am fetled in my Sunne of height,  
 The circulare splendor, and full Sphere of State  
 Take all place vp from enuy : as the funne,  
 At height, and passiue ore the crownes of men,  
 His beames diffusd, and downe-right pourd on  
 them,

Cast but a little or no shade at all,  
 So he that is aduanc'd aboue the heads,  
 Of all his Emulators, with high light,  
 Preuents their enuies, and depriues them quite.

*Exeunt.*

*Enter the Chancellor, Harlay, Potiers; Fleury,  
in scarlet gownes, Laffin, Descures, with  
other officers of state.*

*Cha.* I wonder at the prifoners fo long ftay,

*Har :* I thinke it may be made a queftion,  
If his impacience will let him come.

*Pot.* Yes, he is now well ftayd : Time and his  
Iudgment,  
Haue caft his paffion and his feuer off.

*Fleu.* His feuer may be paff, but for his paffions,  
I feare me we fhall find it fpic'd to hotly,  
With his ould poulder.

*Def.* He is fure come forth ;  
The Caroffe of the Marquis of *Rhofny*  
Conducted him along to th' Arcenall,  
Clofe to the Riuer-fide : and there I faw him,  
Enter a barge couered with Tapiftry,  
In which the kings gards waited and receiued him.  
Stand by there cleere the place,

*Cha.* The prifoner comes.  
My Lord *Laffin* forbear your fight a while,  
It may incense the prifoner : who will know,  
By your attendance nere vs, that your hand,  
Was chiefe in his difcouery ; which as yet,  
I thinke he doth not doubt.

*Laf.* I will forbear,  
Till your good pleafures call me, *Exit Laf.*

*Har.* When he knowes  
And fees *Laffin*, accufe him to his face,  
The Court I thinke will shake with his diftemper.

*Enter Vitry, Byron, with others and a garde.*

*Vit.* You fee my Lord, 'tis in the golden chamber.

*Byr.* The golden chamber ? where the greateft  
Kings  
Haue thought them honor'd to receiue a place :  
And I haue had it ; am I come to ftand

In ranke and habit here of men arraigned,  
 Where I haue sat assistant, and beene honord,  
 With glorious title of the chiefeft vertuous,  
 Where the Kings chiefe Solicitor hath said,  
 There was in *France*, no man that euer liu'd,  
 Whose parts were worth my imitation ;  
 That, but mine owne worth ; I could imitate none :  
 And that I made my selfe inimitable,  
 To all that could come after ; whom this Court  
 Hath seene to sit vpon the Flower de Luice  
 In recompence of my renowned seruice.  
 Must I be sat on now, by petty Iudges ?  
 These Scarlet robes, that come to fit and fight  
 Against my life ; dismay my valure more,  
 Then all the bloody Cassocks *Spaine* hath brought  
 To field against it.

*Vit.* To the barre my Lord. *He salutes and*

*Har.* Read the inditement. *stands to the barre.*

*Chan.* Stay, I will inuert

(For shortnesse sake) the forme of our proceedings,  
 And out of all the points, the proceffe holds,  
 Collect fve principall, with which we charge you.

1. First you conferd with one, cald *Picote*,  
 At *Orleance* borne, and into *Flanders* fled,  
 To hold intelligence by him with the Archduke,  
 And for two voyages to that effect,  
 Bestowd on him, fve hundred, fiftie crownes.

2. Next you held treaty with the Duke of *Sauoy*,  
 Without the Kings permission ; offering him  
 All seruice and assistance gainst all men,  
 In hope to haue in marriage, his third daughter.

3. Thirdly you held intelligence with the Duke,  
 At taking in of *Bourge*, and other Forts ;  
 Aduising him, with all your preiudice,  
 Gainst the Kings armie, and his royall person.

4. The fourth is ; that you would haue brought  
 the King,  
 Before Saint *Katherines Fort*, to be there flaine :  
 And to that end writ to the Gouvernor,

In which you gaue him notes to know his highnesse.

5. Fiftly, you sent *Laffin* to treat with *Sauoy*,  
And with the Count *Fuentes*, of more plots,  
Touching the ruine of the King and realme.

*Byr.* All this (my Lord) I answer, and deny :  
And first for *Picoté* ; he was my prisoner,  
And therefore I might well conferre with him :  
But that our conference tended to the Arch-duke,  
Is nothing so ; I onely did employ him  
To Captaine *La Fortune*, for the reduction  
Of *Seuerre*, to the seruice of the King,  
Who vsd such speedy dilligence therein,  
That shortly 'twas assur'd his Maiestie.

2. Next, for my treaty with the Duke of *Sauoy*,  
*Roncas* his Secretarie, hauing made  
A motion to me, for the Dukes third daughter,  
I tolde it to the King ; who hauing since,  
Giuen me the vnderstanding by *La Force*  
Of his dislike ; I neuer dreamd of it.

3. Thirdly, for my intelligence with the Duke,  
Aduising him against his Highnesse armie :  
Had this beene true, I had not vndertaken  
Th' assault of *Bourg*, against the Kings opinion,  
Hauing assistance but by them about me :  
And (hauing wunne it for him) had not beene  
Put out of such a gouernment so easly.

4. Fourthly, for my aduice to kill the King ;  
I would beseech his Highnesse memory,  
Not to let slip, that I alone diswaded  
His viewing of that Fort ; informing him,  
It had good marke-men ; and he could not goe,  
But in exceeding danger, which aduice  
Diuerted him : the rather, since I said,  
That if he had desire to see the place  
He should receiue from me a Plot of it ;  
Offering to take it with five hundred men,  
And I my selfe would go to the assault.

5. And lastly, for intelligences held,  
With *Sauoy* and *Fuentes* : I confesse,



That being denyed to keepe the Cytadell,  
Which with incredible perill I had got,  
And seeing another honor'd with my spoiles,  
I grew so desparate that I found my spirit,  
Enrag'd to any act, and wisht my selfe,  
Couer'd with bloud.

*Chan.* With whose bloud?

*Byr.* With mine owne ;  
Wishing to liue no longer, being denyed,  
With such suspition of me, and fet will,  
To rack my furious humor into bloud.  
And for two moneths space, I did speake, and wright,  
More then I ought ; but haue done euer well,  
And therefore your enformers haue beene false.  
And (with intent to tyranize) subornd.

*Flew.* What if our witnesses come face to face,  
And iustifie much more then we alledge ?

*Byr.* They must be hyrelings then, and men corrupted.

*Pot.* What thinke you of *La Fin* ?

*Byr.* I hold *La Fin*,  
An honor'd Gentleman, my friend and kinsman.

*Har.* If he then aggrauate, what we affirme,  
With greater accusafions to your face,  
What will you say ?

*Byr.* I know it cannot be.

*Chan.* Call in my Lord *La Fin*.

*Byr.* Is he so neere ?

And kept so close from me ? can all the world,  
Make him a treacher. *Enter La Fin.*

*Chan.* I suppose my Lord,  
You haue not stood within ; without the eare  
Of what hath heere beene vrgd against the Duke ;  
If you haue heard it, and vpon your knowledge  
Can witness all is true, vpon your soule :  
Vtter your knowledge.

*Laffi.* I haue heard my Lord,  
All that hath past here ; and vpon my soule,  
(Being chargd so vrgently in such a Court)

Vpon my Knowledge I affirme all true ;  
And so much more : as had the prifoner liues  
As many as his yeeres, would make all forfaite.

*Byr.* O all yee vertuous powers, in earth and  
heauen,

That haue not put on hellish flesh and blood,  
From whence these monstrous iffues are produc'd,  
That cannot beare in execrable concord,  
And one prodigious fubiect ; contraries ;  
Nor (as the Ile that of the world admirde)  
Is feuerd from the world) can cut your felues  
From the consent and facred harmony  
Of life, yet liue ; of honor, yet be honor'd ;  
As this extrauagant, and errant rogue,  
From all your faire *Decorums*, and iust lawes,  
Findes powre to doe : and like a lothesome wen,  
Sticks to the face of nature, and this Court ;  
Thicken this ayre, and turne your plaguie rage,  
Into a shape as difmall as his sinne.

And with some equall horror teare him off  
From fight and memory : let not fuch a court,  
To whose fame all the Kings of Christendome,  
Now laid their eares ; so crack her royall Trumpe,  
As to found through it, that here wanted iustice  
Was got in fuch an inceft : is it iustice  
To tempt, and witch a man, to breake the law,  
And by that witch condemne him ? let me draw  
Poifon into me with this curfed ayre,  
If he betwicht me, and transformd me not ;  
He bit me by the eare, and made me drinke  
Enchanted waters ; let me fee an Image  
That vtterd these diftinct words ; *Thou shalt dye,*  
*O wicked King* ; and if the diuill gaue him  
Such powre vpon an Image ; vpon me  
How might he tyrannize ? that by his vowes  
And othes fo Stygian, had my Nerues and will,  
In more awe then his owne : what man is he  
That is fo high, but he would higher be ?  
So roundly fought, but he may be found,

To haue a blinde fide, which by craft, perfude,  
Confederacie, and simply trusted treason,  
May wrest him past his Angell, and his reason?

*Chan.* Witchcraft can neuer taint an honest minde.

*Harl.* True gold, will any trial stand, vntoucht.

*Pot.* For coulours that will staine when they are  
tryed,

The cloth it selfe is euer cast aside.

*Byr.* Some times, the very Gloffe in any thing,  
Will seeme a staine; the fault not in the light,  
Nor in the guilty obieſt, but our sight.  
My gloffe, raisd from the richnesse of my stufte,  
Had too much splendor for the Owly eye,  
Of politique and thanklesse royaltie:  
I did deserue too much: a plurisie  
Of that blood in me is the cause I dye.  
Vertue in great men must be small and sleight:  
For poore starres rule, where she is exquisite,  
Tis tyrannous, and impious policie,  
To put to death by fraude and trecherie;  
Sleight is then royall, when it makes men liue,  
And if it vrge faults, vrgeth to forgiue.  
He must be guiltlesse, that condemnes the guiltie,  
Like things, do nourish like, and not destroy them:  
Mindes must be found, that iudge affaires of weight,  
And seeing hands, cut corosiuues from your sight.  
A Lord intelligencer? hangman-like,  
Thrust him from humane fellowship, to the desert  
Blowe him with curses; shall your iustice call  
Treacherie her Father? would you wish her weigh  
My valor with the hisse of such a viper?  
What haue I done to shunne the mortall shame  
Of so uniuſt an opposition;  
My eniuious starres cannot deny me this,  
That I may make my Iudges witnesse;  
And that my wretched fortunes haue referu'd  
For my last comfort; yee all know (my Lords)  
This body gasht with fise and thirty wounds,  
Whose life and death you haue in your award,

Holds not a veine that hath not opened beene,  
 And which I would not open yet againe,  
 For you and yours ; this hand that writ the lines  
 Alledgd against me, hath enacted still,  
 More good then there it onely talkt of ill.  
 I must confesse my choller hath transferd  
 My tender spleene to all intemperate speech :  
 But reason euer did my deeds attend.  
 In worth of praise, and imitation,  
 Had I borne any will to let them loofe,  
 I could haue flesht them with bad seruices,  
 In *England* lately, and in *Switzerland* :  
 There are a hundred Gentlemen by name,  
 Can witnesse my demeanure in the first ;  
 And in the last Ambassage I adiure  
 No other testimonies then the Seigneurs  
*De Vic*, and *Sillerie* ; who amply know,  
 In what fort, and with what fidelitie  
 I bore my selfe ; to reconcile and knit,  
 In one desire so many wills disioynde,  
 And from the Kings allegiance quite withdrawne.  
 My acts askt many men, though done by one.  
 And I were but one, I stood for thousands,  
 And still I hold my worth, though not my place :  
 Nor sleight me, Iudges, though I be but one,  
 One man, in one sole expedition,  
 Reduc'd into th' imperiall powre of *Rome*,  
*Armenia*, *Pontus*, and *Arabia*,  
*Syria*, *Albania*, and *Iberia*,  
 Conquer'd th' *Hyrceanians* ; and to *Caucasus*,  
 His arme extended ; the *Numidians*  
 And *Affrick* to the shores Meridionall,  
 His powre subiected ; and that part of *Spaine*  
 Which stood from those parts that *Sertorius* rulde,  
 Euen to the *Atlantique* Sea he conquered.  
 Th' *Albanian* kings, he from the kingdoms chac'd,  
 And at the *Caspian* Sea, their dwellings plac'd :  
 Of all the Earths globe, by powre and his aduice,  
 The round-eyd Ocean saw him victor thrice :

And what shall let me (but your cruell doome,)  
 To adde as much to *France*, as he to *Rome*,  
 And to leaue Iustice neither Sword nor word,  
 To vse against my life ; this Senate knowes,  
 That what with one victorious hand I tooke,  
 I gaue to all your vses, with another :  
 With this I tooke, and propt the falling Kingdome,  
 And gaue it to the King : I haue kept  
 Your lawes of state from fire, and you your selues,  
 Fixt in this high Tribunall ; from whose height  
 The vengefull Saturnals of the League  
 Had hurld yee head-long ; doe yee then returne  
 This retribution ? can the cruell King  
 The kingdome, lawes, and you, (all sau'd by me)  
 Destroy their fauer ? what (aye me) I did  
 Aduerfe to this ; this damnd Enchanter did,  
 That tooke into his will, my motion ;  
 And being banck-route both of wealth and worth,  
 Purfued with quarrels, and with fuites in law ;  
 Feard by the Kingdome ; threatned by the King ;  
 Would raife the loathed dung-hill of his ruines,  
 Vpon the monumentall heape of mine :  
 Torne with possessed whirle-winds may he dye,  
 And dogs barke at his murtherous memory.

*Chan.* My Lord, our liberall sufferance of your  
 speech,  
 Hath made it late ; and for this Session,  
 We will dismisse you ; take him back my Lord.

*Exit Vit. & Byron.*

*Har.* You likewise may depart.

*Exit Laffin.*

*Chan.* What resteth now  
 To be decreed gainst this great prifoner ?  
 A mighty merit, aud a monstrous crime,  
 Are here concurrent ; what by witnessses ;  
 His letters and instructions we haue prou'd  
 Himfelfe confesseth, and excuseth all  
 With witch-craft, and the onely act of thought.  
 For witch-craft I esteeme it a meere strength  
 Of rage in him conceiu'd gainst his accufer ;



Who being examinde hath denied it all ;  
Suppose it true, it made him false ; But wills  
And worthy mindes, witch-craft can neuer force.  
And for his thoughts that brake not into deeds ;  
Time was the cause, not will ; the mindes free act  
In treason still is Iudgd as th' outward fact.  
If his deferts haue had a wealthy share,  
In sauing of our land from ciuill furies :  
*Manlius* had so that fast the Capitoll ;  
Yet for his after traiterous factiōns,  
They threw him head-long from the place he sau'd.  
My definite sentence then, doth this import :  
That we must quench the wilde-fire with his bloud,  
In which it was so traiterously inflam'd ;  
Vnlesse with it, we seeke to incence the land,  
The King can haue no refuge for his life,  
If his be quitted : this was it that made  
*Lewis* th'eleuenth renounce his countrymen,  
And call the valiant *Scots* out of their kingdome,  
To vse their greater vertues, and their faiths,  
Then his owne subiects, in his royall garde :  
What then conclude your censures ?

*Omnes.* He must dye.

*Chan.* Draw then his sentence, formally, and fend  
him ;

And so all treasons in his death attend him. *Exeunt.*

*Enter Byron, Espernon, Soisson, Fanin, Vidame,  
Descures.*

*Vit.* I ioy you had so good a day my Lord.

*Byr.* I won it from them all : the Chancellor  
I answerd to his vttermoſt improuements :  
I mou'd my other Iudges to lament  
My insolent misfortunes ; and to lothe  
The pockie foule, and state-bawde, my accuser,  
I made reple to all that could be said,  
So eloquently, and with such a charme,  
Of graue enforcements, that me thought I sat,

Like *Orpheus* casting reignes on fauage beafts ;  
 At the armes end (as twere) I tooke my barre  
 And fet it farre aboute the high tribunall,  
 Where like a Cedar on Mount Lebanon,  
 I grew, and made my iudges shew like Box-trees ;  
 And Boxtrees right, their wifhes would haue made  
 them,

Whence boxes should haue growne, till they had  
 strooke

My head into the budget : but ahlas,  
 I held their bloody armes, with such strong reasons ;  
 And (by your leaue) with such a iyrck of wit :  
 That I fetcht blood vpon the Chancelors cheekes,  
 Me thinkes I see his countenance as he fat ;  
 And the most lawierly deliuery *Enter Soiffon, Esp:*  
 Of his fet speeches : shall I play his part ?

*Esp* : For heauens fake, good my Lord.

*Byr.* I will ifaith,

Behold a wicked man : A man debauched,  
 A man, contesting with his King ; A man :  
 On whom (my Lord) we are not to conniue,  
 Though we may condole : A man  
 That *Læsa Maiestate* fought a lease,  
 Of *Plus quam jatis*. A man that *vi et armis*  
 Affaild the King ; and would *per fas et nefas*,  
 Aspire the kingdome : here was lawiers learning.

*Esp* : He said not this my Lord, that I haue  
 heard.

*Byr.* This or the like, I sweare. I pen no speeches.

*Soiff.* Then there is good hope of your wisht  
 acquitall.

*Byr.* Acquitall ? they haue reason ; were I dead  
 I know they can not all supply my place ;  
 Ift possible the King should be so vaine,  
 To thinke he can shake me with feare of death ?  
 Or make me apprehend that he intends it ?  
 Thinkes he to make his firmeft men, his clouds ?

The clowdes (obferuing their Æriall natures)  
Are borne aloft, and then to moifture hang'd,  
Fall to the earth ; where being made thick, and cold,  
They loofe both al their heate, and leuitie ;  
Yet then againe recouering heate and lightneffe,  
Againe they are aduanc't : and by the Sunne  
Made fresh and glorious ; and fince clowdes are rapt  
With thefe vncertainties : now vp, now downe,  
Am I to flit fo with his fmile, or frowne ?

*Efp.* I wifh your comforts, and incuragments,  
May fpring out of your faftie ; but I heare  
The King hath reafond fo againft your life,  
And made your moft friends yeeld fo to his reafons,  
That your eftate is fearefull.

*Byr.* Yeeld t'his reafons ?  
O how friends reafons, and their freedoms ftretch,  
When powre fets his wide tenters to their fides !  
How like a cure, by mere opinion,  
It workes vpon our bloud ? like th'antient Gods  
Are *Moderne* Kings, that liu'd pafte bounds themfelues,  
Yet fet a meafure downe to wretched men :  
By many Sophifmes, they made good, deceit ;  
And, fince they pafte in powre, furpafte, in right :  
When Kings wills pafte ; the ftarres winck, and the  
Sunne,  
Suffers eclips : rude thunder yeelds to them  
His horrid wings : fits fmoothe as glaffe engazd,  
And lightning fticks twixt heauen and earth amazd :  
Mens faiths are shaken : and the pit of truth  
O'reflowes with darkeneffe, in which Iuftice fits,  
And keepes her vengeance tied to make it fierce ;  
And when it comes, th'increafed horrors showe,  
Heuens plague is fure, though full of ftate, and flowe.

*Sift.* O my deare Lord and brother, *Within.*  
O the Duke.

*Byr.* What founds are thefe my Lord ? hark, hark,  
methinks  
I heare the cries of people.

*Efp.* Tis for one,  
 Wounded in fight here at Saint *Antonies* Gate :  
*Byr.* Sfoote, one cried the Duke : I pray harken,  
 Againe, or burft your felues with filence, no :  
 What contriman's the common headfman here ?  
*Soiff.* He's a Bourgonian.  
*Byr.* The great deuill he is,  
 The bitter wizard told me, a Burgonian,  
 Should be my headfman ; ftrange concurrences :  
 S'death whose here ? *Enter 4 Vjhers bare Chanc : Har :*  
 O then I am but dead, *Pot : Fleur : Vit : Pralin, with*  
*others.*

Now, now ye come all to pronounce my fentence.  
 I am condemn'd vniuftly : tell my kinsfolkes,  
 I die an innocent :  
 If any friend pittie the ruine of the States fufstainer  
 Proclaime my innocence ; ah Lord Chancelor,  
 Is there no pardon ? will there come no mercie ?  
 I; put your hat on, aud let me ftand bare,  
 Showe yourfelfe a right Lawier.

*Chan.* I am bare,  
 What would you haue me do ?  
*Byr.* You haue not done,  
 Like a good Iuftice ; and one that knew  
 He fat vpon the precious bloud of vertue ;  
 Y'auē pleafd the cruell King, and haue not borne,  
 As great regard to faue as to condemne ;  
 You haue condemn'd me, my Lord Chancelor,  
 But God acquites me ; he will open lay  
 All your clofe treafons againft him, to collour  
 Treafons layd to his trueft images ;  
 And you my Lord fhall anfwere this iniuftice,  
 Before his iudgement feat : to which I fummon  
 In one yeare and a daie your hot apparenfe ;  
 I goe before, by mens corrupted domes ;  
 But they that cauf'd my death, fhall after come  
 By the immaculate iuftice of the higheft.

*Chan.* Well, good my Lord, commend your foule  
 to him,

And to his mercie, thinke of that, I pray.

*Byr.* Sir, I haue thought of it, and euery howre,  
Since my affliction, askt on naked knees  
Patience to beare your vnbeleeu'd Iniustice :  
But you, nor none of you haue thought of him,  
U<sup>n</sup> my euiction : y<sup>e</sup>are come to your benches,  
M<sup>i</sup>th plotted iudgements ; your linckt eares so lowd,  
Sing with preiudicate windes, that nought is heard,  
Of all, pore prifoners vrge gainst your award.

*Har.* Passion, my Lord, transports your bitternes,  
Beyond all collour ; and your propper iudgement :  
No man hath knowne your merits more then I ;  
And would to God your great misdeeds had beene,  
As much vndone, as they haue beene concealde ;  
The cries of them for iustice (in desert)  
Haue beene so lowd and pierfing ; that they deafned  
The eares of mercie ; and haue labord more,  
Your Iudges to compresse then to enforce them.

*Pot.* We bring you here your sentence, will you  
reade it.

*Byr.* For heauens sake, shame to vse me with such  
rigor ;  
I know what it imports, and will not haue,  
Mine eare blowne into flames with hearing it ;  
Haue you beene one of them that haue condemn'd  
me ?

*Flen.* My Lord I am your Orator : God comfort  
you.

*Byr.* Good Sir, my father lou'd you so entirely,  
That if you haue beene one, my soule forgiues you ;  
It is the King (most childish that he is  
That takes what he hath giuen) that iniures me :  
He gaue grace in the first draught of my fault,  
And now restraines it : grace againe I aske ;  
Let him againe vouchsafe it : send to him,  
A post will soone returne : the Queene of England,  
Told me that if the wilfull Earle of Effex,  
Had vsd submissiō, and but askt her mercie,  
She would haue giuen it, past resumtion ;



She (like a gracious Princeſſe) did deſire  
 To pardon him : euen as ſhe praid to God,  
 He would let doune a pardon vnto her ;  
 He yet was guiltie, I am innocent :  
 He ſtill refusd grace, I importune it.

*Chan.* This aſkt in time (my Lord) while he be-  
 fought it,

And ere he had made his feuerity knowne,  
 Had (with much ioye to him) I know beene granted.

*Byr.* No, no, his bountie, then was miſery,  
 To offer when he knew twould be refusde ;  
 He treads the vulgar pathe of all aduantage,  
 And loues men, for their vices, not for their vertues ;  
 My ſeruice would haue quickn'd gratitude,  
 In his owne death, had he beene truly royall ;  
 It would haue ſtirr'd the image of a King,  
 Into perpetual motion ; to haue ſtood  
 Neare the conſpiracie reſtraind at Mantes ;  
 And in a danger, that had then the Woolfe,  
 To flie vpon his boſome, had I onely held  
 Intelligence with the conſpirators ;  
 Who ſtuck at no check but my loyaltie,  
 Nor kept life in their hopes, but in my death ;  
 The ſeege of Amiens, would haue ſoftned rocks,  
 Where couer'd all in ſhowers of ſhot and fire,  
 I ſeem'd to all mens eyes a fighting flame  
 With bullets cut, in faſhion of a man ;  
 A ſacrifice to valour (impious King)  
 Which he will needes extinguiſh with my bloud ;  
 Let him beware, iuſtice will fall from heauen,  
 In the ſame forme I ſerued in that ſeege,  
 And by the light of that, he ſhall decerne,  
 What good my ill hath brought him ; it will nothing,  
 Affure his State: the ſame quench he hath caſt  
 Vpon my life, ſhall quite put out his fame ;  
 This day he looſeth, what he ſhall not finde,  
 By all daies he ſeruiues ; ſo good a ſeruant,  
 Nor Spaine ſo great a foe ; with whom, ahlas,  
 Becauſe I treated am I put to death ?

Tis but a politique glofe : my courage raif'd me,  
 For the deare price of five and thirtie 1karres,  
 And that hath ruin'd me, I thanke my Starres :  
 Come ile goe where yee will, yee shall not lead me.

*Chan.* I feare his frenzie,  
 Neuer saw I man of fuch a fpirit fo amaz'd at death.

*Har.* He alters euery minute : what a vapor ?  
 The strongest mind is to a storme of croffes. *Exeunt.*

*Manet Esper : Soiffon : Ianin : Vidame, D'escures.*

*Efp.* Oh of what contraries confits a man !  
 Of what impossible mixtures ? vice and vertue,  
 Corruption, and eternneffe, at one time,  
 And in one fubiect, let together, looffe ?  
 We haue not any ftrengh but weakens vs,  
 No greatnes but doth crush vs into ayre.  
 Our knowledges, do light vs but to erre,  
 Our Ornaments are Burthens : Our delights  
 Are our tormentors ; fiendes that (raisd in feares)  
 At parting fhake our Roofes about our eares.

*Soi.* O vertue, thou art now farre worfe then For-  
 tune :  
 Her gifts flucke by the Duke, when thine are vanisht,  
 Thou brau'ft thy friend in Neede : Neceffity,  
 That vfd to keepe thy welth, contempt, thy loue,  
 Haue both abandond thee in his extreames,  
 Thy powers are shadowes, and thy comfort, dreames.

*Vid.* O reall goodneffe if thou be a power !  
 And not a word alone, in humaine vfes,  
 Appere out of this angry conflagration,  
 Where this great Captaine (thy late Temple) burns,  
 And turne his vicious fury to thy flame,  
 From all earths hopes mere guilded with thy fame :  
 Let pietie enter with her willing croffe,  
 And take him on it ; ope his brest and armes,  
 To all the Storms, Neceffity can breath,  
 And burft them all with his embraced death.

*Ian.* Yet are the ciuille tumults of his fpirits,

Hot and outragiouſe : not reſolued, *Ahlas*,  
 (Being but one man) render the kingdome dome ;  
 He doubts, ſtormes, threatens, rues, complains, im-  
 plores,

Griefe hath brought all his forces to his lookes,  
 And nought is left to ſtrengthen him within,  
 Nor laſts one habite of thoſe greeu'd aſpects :  
 Blood expells paleneſſe, palenes Blood doth chace,  
 And ſorrow errs through all forms in his face.

*Def.* So furioſe is he, that the Politique law,  
 Is much to ſeeke, how to enact her ſentence :  
 Authority backt with arms, (though he vnarmd)  
 Abhorrs his furie, and with doubtfull eyes,  
 Views on what ground it ſhould ſuſtaine his ruines,  
 And as a *Sauadge* Bore that (hunted longe,  
 Affayld and fet vp) with his onely eyes,  
 Swimming in fire keepes off the baying hounds,  
 Though funcke himſelfe, yet houlds his anger vp,  
 And ſnowes it forth in foame ; houlds firme his ſtand,  
 Of Battalouſe *Briſtles* : feedes his hate to die,  
 And whets his tuſkes with wrathfull maieſty.  
 So fares the furious Duke, and with his lookes,  
 Doth teach death horrors ; makes the hangman learne  
 New habites for his bloody impudence ;  
 Which now habituall horror from him driues,  
 Who for his life ſhunnes death, by which he liues.

*Enter Chauncellor, Harlay, Potier, Fleury, Vitry.*

*Vit.* Will not your Lordſhippe haue the Duke dif-  
 tinguifht  
 From other priſoners ? where the order is,  
 To giue vp men condemd into the hands  
 Of th'executioner ; he would be the death,  
 Of him that he ſhould die by, ere he ſufferd,  
 Such an abiection.

*Cha.* But to bind his hands,  
 I hold it paſſing needefull.

*Har.* Tis my Lord,

And very dangerous to bring him loofe.

*Pra* : You will in all difpaire and fury plunge him,  
If you but offer it.

*Pot.* My Lord by this,  
The prifoners Spirit is fome-thing pacified,  
And tis a feare that th' offer of thofe bands.  
Would breed fresh furies in him, and difturbe,  
The entry of his foule into her peace.

*Cha.* I would not that, for any poffible danger,  
That can he wrought, by his vnarmed hands,  
And therefore in his owne forme bring him in.

*Enter Byron, a Bishop or two ; with all the guards,  
fouldiers with mufkets.*

*Byr.* Where fhall this weight fall ? on what re-  
gion,  
Muft this declining prominent poure his lode ?  
Ile breake my bloods high billows gainft my ftarrs,  
Before this hill be fhooke into a flat,  
All France fhall feele an earthquake ; with what  
murmur,  
This world fhrinkes into Chaos ?

*Arch.* Good my Lord,  
Forgoe it willingly ; and now refigne,  
Your fenfuall powers entirely to your foule.

*Byr.* Horror of death, let me alone in peace,  
And leaue my foule to me, whome it concernes ;  
You haue no charge of it ; I feele her free,  
How ſhe doth rowze, and like a Faulcon ſtretch  
Her filuer wings ; as threatening death, with death ;  
At whom I ioyfully will caſt her off :  
I know this bodie but a finck of folly,  
The ground-work, and raif'd frame of woe and frailtie :  
The bond and bundle of corruption ;  
A quick corfe, onely fenfible of grieve,  
A walking ſepulcher, or houfehold thiefe :  
A glaffe of ayre, broken with leffe then breath,  
A flauie bound face to face, to death, till death :

And what fayd all you more ? I know, besides  
 That life is but a darke and stormy night,  
 Of fencelesse dreames, terrors, and broken sleepes ;  
 A Tyranie, deuising paines to plague  
 And make man long in dying, racks his death ;  
 And death is nothing, what can you say more ?  
 I bring a long Globe, and a little earth,  
 Am seated like earth betwixt both the heauens :  
 That if I rise ; to heauen I rise ; if fall  
 I likewise fall to heauen ; what stronger faith,  
 Hath any of your foules ? what say you more ?  
 Why lose I time in these things ? talke of knowledge,  
 It serues for inward vse. I will not die  
 Like to a Clergie man ; but like the Captaine,  
 That prayd on horse-back and with sword in hand,  
 Threatend the Sunne, commanding it to stand ;  
 These are but ropes of sand.

*Chan.* Desire you then

To speake with any man ?

*Byr.* I would speake with *La Force* and Saint  
*Blancart.*

Do they flie me ?

Where is *Preuost*, controwler of my house ?

*Pra.* Gone to his house ith countrie three daies  
 since.

*Byr.* He should haue stayd here, he keeps all my  
 blancks ;

Oh all the world forsakes me ! wretched world,  
 Consisting most of parts, that flie each other :  
 A firmnesse, breeding all inconstancy,  
 A bond of all disunction ; like a man  
 Long buried, is a man that long hath liu'd ;  
 Touch him, he falls to ashes ; for one fault,  
 I forfeit all the fashion of a man ;  
 Why should I keepe my soule in this dark light ?  
 Whose black beames lighted me to loose my selfe.  
 When I haue lost my armes, my fame, my winde,  
 Friends, brother, hopes, fortunes, and euen my furie ?  
 O happie were the man, could liue alone,



To know no man, nor be of any knowne !

*Har.* My Lord, it is the manner once againe  
To read the sentence.

*Byr.* Yet more sentences ?  
How often will you make me suffer death ?  
As yee were proud to heare your powrefull domes ?  
I know and feele you were the men that gaue it,  
And die most cruellie to heare so often  
My crimes and bitter condemnation vrg'd :  
Suffice it, I am brought here ; and obey,  
And that all here are priuie to the crimes.

*Chan.* It must be read my Lord, no remedie.

*Byr.* Reade, if it must be, then, and I must talke.

*Harl.* The proceffe being extraordinarily made and  
examin'd by the Court, and chambers affembled——

*Byr.* Condemn'd for depositions of a witch ?  
The common deposition, and her whoore  
To all whorish periuries and treacheries.  
Sure he cal'd vp the diuill in my spirits,  
And made him to vsurpe my faculties :  
Shall I be cast away now he's cast out ?  
What Iustice is in this ? deare countrey-men,  
Take this true euidence, betwixt heauen and you,  
And quit me in your hearts.

*Cha.* Goe on.

*Har.* Against *Charles Gontalt* of *Byron*: knight  
of both the orders ; Duke of *Byron*, peere and marshall  
of *France* ; Gouvernor of *Burgundy*, accus'd of treason  
in a sentence was giuen the 22. of this month, con-  
demning the said Duke of *Byron* of high treason, for  
his direct conspiracies against the kings person ; en-  
terprises against his state——

*Byr.* That is most false : let me for euer be,  
Deprived of heauen, as I shall be of earth,  
If it be true : knowe worthy country-men,  
These two and twenty moneths I haue bene clere,  
Of all attempts against the king and state.

*Har.* Treaties and trecheries with his Enemies ;  
being marshall of the Kings army, for reparation of

which crimes they depriued him of all his estates, honors, and dignities, and condemned him to lose his head vpon a Scaffold at the Greauē.

*Byr.* The Greauē? had that place stood for my dispatch.

I had not yeilded ; all your forces should not, Stire me one foote, wild horses should haue drawne, My body peece-meale, ere you all had brought me.

*Har.* Declaring all his goods moueable and im-moueable, whatsoeuer to be confiscate to the King : the Signeury of *Byron* to loose the title of Duchy and Peere for euer.

*Byr.* Now is your forme contented ?

*Chan.* I my Lord,  
And I must now entreat you to deliuer,  
Your order vp, the king demands it of you.

*Byr.* And I restore it, with my vow of fasty,  
In that world, where both he and I are one,  
I neuer brake the oath I tooke to take it.

*Cha.* Wel now my Lord wee'l take our latest  
leauē,

Befeeching heauen to take as clere from you,  
All fence of torment in your willing death :  
All loue and thought of what you must leaue here,  
As when you shall aspire heauens highest sphere.

*Byr.* Thankes to your Lordship and let me pray  
to,

That you will hold good censure of my life,  
By the cleere witnesse of my foule in death,  
That I haue neuer past act gainst the King,  
Which if my faith had let me vndertake,  
They had bene three yeares since, amongst the dead.

*Har.* Your foule shall finde his safety in her owne,  
Call the executioner.

*Byr :* Good sir I pray,  
Go after and beseech the Chancellor  
That he will let my body be interr'd,  
Amongst my predecessors at *Byron*.

*Desc.* I go my Lord.

*Exit.*

*Byr.* Go, go? can all go thus?  
 And no man come with comfort? farewell world:  
 He is at no end of his actions blest,  
 Whose ends will make him greatest, and not best;  
 They tread no ground, but ride in ayre on stormes;  
 That follow state, and hunt their empty formes;  
 Who see not that the Valleys of the world,  
 Make euen right with Mountains, that they grow  
 Greene, and lye warmer; and euer peacefull are,  
 When Clowdes spit fire at Hilles, and burne them  
 bare

Not Valleys part, but we should imitate Streames,  
 That run below the Valleys, and do yeeld  
 To euery Mole-hill; euery Banke imbrace  
 That checks their Currants; and when Torrents come,  
 That swell and raise them past their naturall height,  
 How madde they are, and trubl'd? like low straines  
 With Torrents crownd, are men with Diademes;

*Vit:* My Lord tis late; wilt please you to go vp?

*Byr:* Vp? tis a faire preferment, ha ha ha,  
 There should go showtes to vp-shots; not a breath  
 Of any mercy, yet? come, since we must;  
 Whose this?

*Pral:* The executioner, my Lord;

*Byr:* Death slaue, downe, or by the blood that  
 moues me

Ile plucke thy throat out; goe, Ile call you straight,  
 Hold boy; and this,

*Hang:* Soft boy, ile barre you that

*Byr:* Take this then, yet I pray thee, that againe  
 I do not ioy in fight of such a Pageant  
 As presents death; Though this life haue a curfe;  
 Tis better then another that is worfe.

*Arch:* My Lord, now you are blinde to this worlds  
 fight,

Looke vpward to a world of endles light.

*Byr:* I, I, you talke of vpward still to others,  
 And downwards looke, with headlong eyes your felues.  
 Now come you vp sir; but not touch me yet;

Where shall I be now ?

*Hang* : Heere my Lord ;

*Byr* : Wheres that ?

*Hang* : There, there, my Lord ;

*Byr* : And where, flauē, is that there ?

Thou seeft I fee not ? yet I fpeake as I faw ;

Well, now ift fit ?

*Hang* : Kneele, I befeech your Grace,  
That I may do mine office with moft order ;

*Byr*. Do it, and if at one blow thou art fhort,  
Giue one and thirty, Ile indure them all.

Hold ; ftay a little ; comes there yet no mercy ?

High Heaucn curfe thefe exemplarie proceedings,  
When Iuftice failes, they facrifize our example ;

*Hang*. Let me befeech you, I may cut your haire ;

*Byr* : Out vgly Image of my cruell Iuftice ;

Yet wilt thou be before me, ftay my will,

Or by the will of Heauen Ile ftangle thee ;

*Vit* : My Lord you make to much of this your  
body,

Which is no more your owne :

*Byr* : Nor is it yours ;

Ile take my death, with all the horride rites

And reprentments, of the dread it merits ;

Let tame Nobilitie, and nummed fooles

That apprehend not what they vndergo,

Be fuch exemplarie, and formall fheepe ;

I will not haue him touch me, till I will ;

If you will needs racke me beyond my reafon,

Hell take me, but Ile ftangle halfe thats here,

And force the reft to kill me. Ile leape downe

If but once more they tempt me to difpaire ;

You wifh my quiet, yet giue caufe of fury :

Thinke you to fet rude windes vpon the Sea,

Yet keepe it calme ? or caft me in a fleepe,

With fhaking of my chaines about mine eares ?

O honeft Soldiers, you haue feene me free,

From any care, of many thoufand deathes !

Yet, of this one, the manner doth amaze me.

View, view, this wounded bosome, how much bound  
Should that man make me, that would shoote it  
through ;

Is it not pittie I should lose my life,  
By such a bloody and infamous stroake ?

*Soldi*: Now by thy spirit, and thy better Angell,  
If thou wert cleere, the Continent of France,  
Would shrinke beneath the burthen of thy death,  
Ere it would beare it ;

*Vit*: Whose that ?

*Soldi*: I say well :  
And cleere your Iustice, here is no ground shrinks,  
If he were cleere it would : And I say more,  
Clere, or not cleere, If he with all his fouleneffe,  
Stood here in one Scale, and the Kings chiefe Minion,  
Stood in another, here : Put here a pardon,  
Here lay a royall gift, this, this, in merit,  
Should hoyste the other Mynion into ayre :

*Vit*: Hence with that franticke :

*Byr*: This is some poore witnes  
That my desert, might haue out-weighed my forfeit :  
But danger, hautes desert, when he is greatest ;  
His hearty ills, are prou'd out of his glaunces,  
And Kings suspicions, needes no Ballances ;  
So heer's a most decreetall end of me :  
Which I desire, in me, may end my wrongs ;  
Commend my loue, I charge you, to my brothers,  
And by my loue, and misery command them,  
To keepe their faiths that bind them to the King,  
And proue no stomakers of my misfortunes ;  
Nor come to Court, till time hath eaten out,  
The blots, and skarres of my opprobrious death ;  
Aud tell the Earle, my deare friend of *D'Auvergne*,  
That my death vtterly were free from grieffe,  
But for the sad losse of his worthy friendship ;  
And if I had beene made for longer life,  
I would haue more deseru'd him in my seruice,  
Beseeching him to know I haue not vsde  
One word in my arraignment ; that might touch him,



Had I no other want then so ill meaning :  
 And so farewell for euer : neuer more  
 Shall any hope of my reuiuall see me ;  
 Such is the endlesse exile of dead men.  
 Summer succede the spring ; *Autumne* the Summer  
 The Frosts of Winter, the falne leaues of *Autumne* :  
 All these, and all fruites in them yearely fade,  
 And euery yeare returne : but curfed man,  
 Shall neuer more renew, his vanisht face ;  
 Fall on your knees, then Statists ere yee fall,  
 That you may rise againe : knees bent too late,  
 Stick you in earth like statues : see in me  
 How you are powr'd downe from your cleereft  
     heauens ;  
 Fall lower yet : mixt with th'vnmoued center,  
 That your own shadowes may no longer mocke yee.  
 Strike, strike, O strike ;  
 Flie, flie commanding foule,  
 And on thy wings for this thy bodies breath,  
 Beare the eternall victory of death.

F I N I S.

# MAY-DAY.

A vvitty Comedie,  
diuers times acted at the  
Blacke Fryers.

---

Written by GEORGE CHAPMAN.

---

*Della mia morte eterna vita io vivo.*



*Semper eadem.*

---

LONDON.

*Printed for Iohn Browne, dwelling in Fleetstreete  
in Saint Dunstones Church-yard.*

1611.

X





# MAY-DAY.


---

*Actus prima, Scæna prima.*

Chorus Iuuenum cantantes & saltantes.

*Exeunt saltan.*

*Interim, Intrat Lorenzo, Papers in his hand.*

*Lor.*  Ell done mylusty bloods, Well done. Fit, fit obseruance for this May-morning; Not the May-Moneth alone, they take when it comes; Nor the first weeke of that Moneth; Nor the first day; but the first minute of the first houre, of the first day. Loofe no time bloods, loofe no time; though the Sunne goe to bedde neuer so much before you, yet be you vp before him; call

the golden fluggard from the filuer armes of his Lady, to light you into yours, when your old father *January* here in one of his last dayes, thrusts his fore-head into the depth of *Mayes* fragrant bosome: What may you *Aprilles* performe then? O what may you doe? Well yet will I say thus much for my selfe, wheresoeuer the affections of youth are, there must needs be the instruments, and where the instruments are, there must of necessity be the faculties; What am I short of them then? A sound old man, ably constituted, holsomly dyeted, that tooke his *May* temperately at their ages, and continued his owne; why should he not continue their ages in his owne? By the Masse I feele nothing that stands against it, and therefore sweet *May* I salute thee with the yongest: I haue loue to employ thee in, as well as the proudest yong princock, and so haue at you Mistris *Frances China*: haue at you Mistris *Franke*: I'll sprede my nets for you yfaith, though they be my very purse nets, wherein what heart will not willingly lye panting? (*Enter Angelo.*)

*Ang.* How now? Gods my life, I wonder what made this *May*-morning so cold, and now I see 'tis this *January* that intrudes into it; what paper is that he holds in hand trow we?

*Lor.* Here haue I put her face in rime, but I feare my old vaine will not stretch to her contentment. O haire, no haire but beames stolne from the Sunne.

*Ang.* Out vpon her, if it be shee that I thinke, shee has a Fox red cranion;

*Lor.* A fore-head that disdaines the name of faire.

*Ang.* And reason, for 'tis a fowle one.

*Lor.* A matchlesse eye.

*Ang.* True, her eyes be not matches.

*Lor.* A checke, vermillion red.

*Ang.* Painted I warrant you.

*Lor.* A farre commanding mouth.

*Ang.* It stretches to her eares in deede.

*Lor.* A nose made out of waxe.

*Ang.* A red nose, in sincerity.



*Lor.* This could I fend, but person, person does it : A good presence, to beare out a good wit ; a good face, a pretty Court legge, and a deft dapper personage, no superfluous dimensions, but fluent in competence ; for it is not *Heſtor* but *Paris*, not the full armefull, but the sweet handfull that Ladies delight in.

*Ang.* O notable old whyniard.

*Lor.* Such a size of humanity now, and braine enough in it, it is not in the strength of a woman to withstand ; well ſhee may hold out a parlee or two, for 'tis a weake fort that obeyes at the firſt or ſecond ſummons, if ſhee reſiſt the third ſhee is diſcharg'd, though ſhee yeeld in future : for then it appeares it was no fault of hers : but the man that would take no deniall. What reſts now ? meanes for acceſſe : True. O an honeſt Baude were worth gold now.

*Ang.* A plague vpon him, I had thought to haue appear'd to him, but now if I doe, he will take me for the man he talks on : I will therefore poſt by his dull eye-ſight, as in haſt in buſineſſe.

*Lor.* What Signior *Angelo* ? ſoſt I command you.

*Ang.* Gods precious, what meane you Sir ?

*Lor.* I would be loth to be out-runne I aſſure you Sir : was I able to ſtay you ?

*Ang.* Your ability flood too ſtiſſe Sir, beſhrow me eſe.

*Lor.* O moſt offenceſſe fault, I would thou would'ſt blaze my imperfection to one thou know'ſt, yfaith.

*Ang.* Well Sir another time, tell me where ſhee is, and Ile doe ſo much for you *gratis*. Good morrow Sir.

*Lor.* Nay ſtay good *Angelo*.

*Ang.* My buſineſſe ſayes nay Sir, you haue made me ſtay to my paine Sir, I thanke you.

*Lor.* Not a whit man I warrant thee.

*Ang.* Goe to then, briefly, to whom ſhall I commend your imperfections, will you tell me if I name her ?

*Lor.* That I will, yfaith Boy.

*Ang.* Is not her haire, no haire, but beames stolne from the Sunne ?

*Lor.* Blacke, blacke as an Ouzell.

*Ang.* A fore-head that disdaines the name of faire.

*Lor.* Away Witch, away :

*Ang.* A matchlesse eye.

*Lor.* Nay fie, fie, fie. I see th'art a very Deuill

*Angelo.* And in earnest, I iested, when I said my desire of thy friendship touch'd my selfe, for it concerns a friend of mine iust of my standing.

*Ang.* To whom then would he be remembered that I can sollicite ?

*Lor.* To sweet Mistris *Franciscina* : with whom I heare thou art ready to lye downe, thou art so great with her.

*Ang.* I am as great as a neare Kinsfeman may be with her Sir, not otherwise :

*Lor.* A good confanguinity : and good *Angelo*, to ner wilt thou deliver from my friend, in all secrecy, these poore brace of bracelets ?

*Ang.* Perhaps I will Sir, when I know what the Gentleman and his intent is.

*Lor.* Neuer examine that man ; I would not trouble you with carrying too much at once to her, only tell her, such a man will resolue her, naming me : and I doe not greatly care, if I take the paines to come to her, so I stay not long, and be let in priuily : and so without making many wordes : here they be, put them vp closely I beseech thee, and deliuer them as closely.

*Ang.* Well Sir, I loue no contention with friends, and therefore pocket many things, that otherwise I would not : but I pray Sir licence me a question. Doe not I know this Gentleman that offers my Cozen this kindnesse ?

*Lor.* Neuer saw'st him in thy life, at least neuer knew'st him ; but for his bounty sake to all his well willers, if this message be friendly discharged, I may

chance put a deare friend of him into your bosome :  
Sir, and make you profitably acquainted.

*Ang.* But I pray you Sir, is he not a well elderly  
Gentleman ?

*Lor.* Wide, wide ; as yong as day, I protest to  
thee.

*Ang.* I know he is yong too, but that is in ability  
of body, but is he not a prety little squat Gentleman,  
as you shall see amongst a thousand ?

*Lor.* Still from the cushion, still, tall and high, like  
a *Cedar*.

*Ang.* I know he is tall also, but it is in his minde  
Sir, and it is not *Hector* but *Paris*, not thy full arme-  
full, but the sweet handfull that a Lady delights to  
dandle.

*Lor.* Now the good Deuill take thee, if there be any  
such in hell, hell I beseech thee.

*Ang.* Well, well Signior *Lorenzo*, yfaith the litle  
Squire is thought to be as parlesse a peece of flesh, for  
a peece of flesh, as any hunts the hole pale of *Venus* I  
protest t'ee.

*Lor.* I cannot containe my selfe, yfaith Boy, if the  
Wenches come in my walke, I giue 'em that they come  
for, I dally not with 'hem.

*Ang.* I know you doe not Sir, his dallying dayes  
be done.

*Lor.* It is my infirmity, and I cannot doe withall,  
to die for't.

*Ang.* I beleeeue you Sir.

*Lor.* There are certaine enuious old fellowes, my  
neighbours, that say, I am one vnwiely and stiffe :  
*Angelo*, didst euer heare any wench complaine of my  
stiffenesse ?

*Ang.* Neuer in my life : your old neighbours mea-  
sure you by themselues.

*Lor.* Why ther's the matter then ?

*Ang.* But yfaith Sir : doe you euer hope to winne  
your purpose at my losing hands, knowing her (as all

the world does) a woman of that approued lowlyneffe of life, and so generally tryed?

*Lor.* As for that take thou no care, shee's a woman, is shee not?

*Ang.* Sure I doe take her to haue the flesh and blood of a woman.

*Lor.* Then good enough, or then bad enough, this token shall be my Gentleman Vsher to prepare my acceffe, and then let me alone with her.

*Ang.* I marry Sir, I thinke you would be alone with her; Well Sir, I will doe my best, but if your Gentleman Vsher should not get entrance for you now, it would be a grieffe to me. (*Enter Gasparo an old Clowne.*)

*Lor.* Feare it not man: Gifts and gold, take the strong'ft hold; Away, here comes a snudge that must be my sonne in law: I would be loth he should suspect these tricks of youth in me, for feare he feare my daughter will trot after me.

*Ang.* Fare you well Sir. *Exit.*

*Gasp.* Godge you God morrow Sir, godge you God morrow.

*Lor.* God morrow neighbour *Gasparo*: I haue talk't with my daughter, whom I doe yet finde a greene yong plant, and therefore vnapt to beare such ripe fruit, I thinke I might haue said rotten, as your felse: But shee is at my disposition, and shall be at yours in the end, here's my hand, and with my hand take hers.

*Gasp.* Nay by my faith Sir, you must giue me leaue to shake her portion by the hand first.

*Lor.* It is ready told for you Sir, come home when you will and receiue it, (*Enter Emilia.*) and see, yonder shee comes; away, shee cannot yet abide you, because shee feares shee can abide you too well.

*Gasp.* Well, I will come for her potion Sir, and till then, God take you to his mercy. *Exit.*

*Lor.* Adiew my good sonne in law, Ile not interrupt her, let her meditate a my late motion. *Exit.*

*Æmi.* 'Tis strange to see the impiety of parents,  
Both privileged by custome, and profest,  
The holy institution of heauen ;  
Ordeyning marriage for proportiond minds,  
For our chiefe humane comforts ; and t'encrease  
The loued images of God in men :  
Is now peruerted to th'increase of wealth ;  
We must bring riches forth, and like the Cuckoe  
Hatch others egges ; Ioyne house to house, in choices  
Fit timber-logs and stones, not men and women : (*En-  
ter Aurelio.*)

Ay me, here's one I must shunne, woude embrace.

*Exit.*

*Aur.* O stay and heare me speake or see me dye.  
(*Enter Lodouico and Giacono.*)

*Lod.* How now ? what haue we here ? what a loath-  
some creature man is being drunke : Is it not pittie to  
see a man of good hope, a toward Scholler, writes a  
theame well, scannes a verse very well, and likely in  
time to make a proper man, a good legge, specially in  
a boote, valiant, well spoken, and in a word, what not ?  
and yet all this ouerthrowne as you see, drownd, quite  
drownd in a quarte pott.

*Giac.* O these fame wicked healths, breede mon-  
strous diseases.

*Lod.* *Aurelio*, speake man, *Aurelio* ?

*Giac.* Pray heauen all be well.

*Lod.* O speake, if any sparke of speech remaine.  
It is thy deare *Æmilia* that calles.

*Aur.* Well, well, it becomes not a friend to touch  
the deadly wounds of his friend with a smiling coun-  
tenance.

*Lod.* Touch thee ? sblood I could finde in my  
heart to beate thee ; vp in a fooles name, vp : what a  
Scene of foppery haue we here ?

*Aur.* Prethee haue done.

*Lod.* Vp Cuckoe *Cupids* bird, or by this light Ile  
fetch thy father to thee.

*Aur.* Good *Lodouico*, if thou lou'ft me, leaue me ;



thou com'ft to counfaile me from that, which is ioynd with my foule in eternity : I muft and will doe what I doe.

*Lod.* Doe fo then, and I proteft thou fhalt neuer licke thy lips after my Kinfewoman, while thou liu'ft : I had thought to haue fpoken for thee, if thou hadft taken a manly courfe with her : but to fold vp thy felfe like an Vrchine, and lye a caluing to bring forth a husband : I am afham'd to thinke on't : sblood I haue heard of wenches that haue been wonne with finging and dancing, and fome with riding, but neuer heard of any that was wonne with tumbling in my life.

*Aur.* If thou knew'ft how vaine thou feem'ft.

*Lod.* I doe it of purpofe, to fhew how vaine I hold thy difeafe, S'hart art thou the firft that has fhoot at a wenches heart and mift it ? muft that fhoot that mift her wound thee ? let her shake her heeles in a fhrowes name : were fhee my Cozen a thoufand times, and if I were as thee, I would make her shake her heeles too, afore I would fhake mine thus.

*Aur.* O vanity, vanity.

*Lod.* S'death, if any wench fhould offer to keepe poffeffion of my heart againft my will, I'de fire her out with Sacke and Suger, or fmoke her out with Tobacko, like a hornet, or purge for her, for loue is but a humor : one way or other I would vent her, thats infalible.

*Aur.* For fhame hold thy tongue, me thinks thy wit fhould feele how ftale are thefe loue ftormes, and with what generall priuiledge loue pierfes the worthieft. Seeke to help thy friend, not mocke him.

*Lod.* Marry, feeke to helpe thy felfe then, in a halters name, doe not lie in a ditch, and fay God helpe me, vfe the lawfull tooles he hath lent thee. Vp I fay I will bring thee to her.

*Aur.* Shee'll not endure me :

*Lod.* Shee fhall endure thee doe the worft thou canft to her, I and endure thee till thou canft not endure her ; But then thou muft vfe thy felfe like a

man, and a wife man, how, how deepe foeuer shee is in thy thoughts, carry not the prints of it in thy lookes; be bold and carelesse, and stand not faultring a farre of, as I haue seene you, like a Dogge in a firmetypot, that licks his chops and wags his taile, and faine would lay his lips to it, but he feares tis too hot for him: thats the only way to make her too hot for thee. He that holds religious and sacred thought of a woman, he that beares so reuerend a respect to her, that he will not touch her but with a kist hand and a timorous heart; he that adores her like his Goddesse: Let him be sure shee will shunne him like her slaue. Alas good foules, women of themselues are tractable and tactable enough, and would returne *Quid* for *Quod* still, but we are they that spoile'em, and we shall answere for't another day. We are they that put a kind of wanton Melancholie into'em, that makes'em thinke their noses bigger then their faces, greater then the Sunne in brightnesse; and where as Nature made'em but halfe fooles, we make'em all foole. And this is our palpable flattery of them, where they had rather haue plaine dealing. Well, in conclusion, Ile to her instantly, and if I doe not bring her to thee, or at the least some speciall fauour from her, as a feather from her fanne, or a string from her shoo, to weare in thy hat, and so forth, then neuer trust my skill in poultry whilst thou liu'st againe.

*Exit.*

*Enter Quintiliano, Innocentio, Fransischina,  
Angelo, and Fannio.*

A purse of  
twenty  
pound in  
gold.

*Fran.* THOU shalt not to the warres, or if thou do'st Ile beare thee company, deare

*Quint.* doe not offer to forsake me.

*Quint.* Hands off wife, hang not vpon me thus;

how can I maintaine thee but by vsing my valour? and how can I vse that, but in action and employment? goe in, play at cardes with your Cozen *Angelo* here, and let it suffise I loue thee.

*Ang.* Come sweet Cozen, doe not cloy your husband with your loue so, especially to hinder his preferment; who shall the Duke haue to employ in these Marshall necessities if not Captaine *Quintiliano*, he beares an honorable minde, and tis pittie but he should haue employment. Let him get a company now, and he will be able to maintaine you like a Duches hereafter.

*Innoc.* Well faid Signior *Angelo*, goffaue me you speake like a true Cozen indeede, does he not *Quint*?

*Quint.* He does so, and I thanke him; yet see how the foole puts finger ith'eye still.

*Ang.* Ile cheere her vp, I warrant you Captaine; come Cuze, lets in to tables.

*Innoc.* Farewell sweet Miftris.

*Fran.* Farewell my good seruant.

*Ang.* Now take away thy hand, and show thou didst laugh all this while; good Lord who would not marry to haue so kinde a wife make much on him?

*Exit.*

*Quint.* After Boy, giue your attendance.

*Fann.* Coulede you not spare me money for mine hofteffe, where you put me to boarde? y'are a whole fortnight in arrerages.

*Quint.* Attend I say, the hostes of the Lyon has a legge like a Gyant, want for nothing Boy, so shee score truly.

*Fann.* Faith Sir, shee has chaulk't vp twenty shillings already, and sweares shee will chaulke no more.

*Quint.* Then let her choke, and choke thou with her: S'blood hobby horse, and she had chaulkt vp twenty pounds, I hope the world knowes I am able to pay it with a wet finger.

*Fann.* Alas Sir, I thinke y'are able, but the world does not know it.

*Quint.* Then the worlds an ignorant Sir, and you are an innocent, vanish Boy, away.

*Fann.* I hope he will foist some money for my score, out of this gull here. *Exit.*

*Innoc.* 'Tis a plaguy good wagge *Quint.* ist not ?

*Quint.* Ile make him a good one 'ere I ha done with him ; but this fame louing foole my wife now, will neuer leaue weeping, till I make her beleue I will not haue a company. Who would be combred with these soft hearted creatures, that are euer in extreames, either too kinde, or too vnkind ?

*Innoc.* Saue me, 'tis true, 'tis a hard thing must please'em in sadnesse.

*Quint.* Damne me, if I doe not pittie her with my heart ; plague on her kindnesse, she has halfe perfwaded me to take no company.

*Innoc.* Nay sweet *Quint* : then how shall I be a Lieftenant ?

*Quint.* Well, and my promise were not past to thee, I am a villaine if all the world should part *Franke* and me ; thinke I loue thee therefore, and will doe thee credit : It will cost me a great deale a this fame foolish money to buy me drum and ensigne, and furnish me throughly, but the best is I know my credit.

*Innoc.* Sfut *Quint*, wee'll want no money man, Ile make my row of houses flie first.

*Quint.* Let'em walke, let'em walke ; Candle rents : if the warres hold, or a plague come to the towne, theill be worth nothing.

*Innoc.* True, or while I am beyond Sea, some sleepey wench may fet fire ith bed-straw.

*Quint.* Right, or there may come an earthquake, and ouerturne'em.

*Innoc.* Iust, or there may be coniuring, and the winde may downe with'em.

*Quint.* Or some crafty petty-fogger may finde a

hole in the title, a thousand casualties belongs to 'em.

*Innoc.* Nay, they shall walke, thats certaine, Ile turne 'em into money.

*Quint.* Thats thy most husbandly course yfaith Boy, thou maist haue twenty ith' hundred for thy life, Ile be thy man for two hundred.

*Innoc.* Wil't yfaith *Quint*? goffaue me tis done.

*Quint.* For your life, not otherwise.

*Innoc.* Well, I desire no more, so you'll remember me for my Lieftenantship.

*Quint.* Remember thee? tis thine owne already Boy, a hundred pounds shall not buy it from thee; giue me thy hand, I doe here create thee Lieftenant *Innocentio*.

*Innoc.* If you haue a company Captaine.

*Quint.* If I haue : damne me if such another word doe not make me put thee out ath' place againe ; if I haue a company, Sfut, let the Duke deny me one, I would twere come to that once, that employment should goe with the vndeferuer, while men of seruice fit at home, and feede their hunger with the blood of red lattices. Let the Duke denie me to day, Ile renounce him to morrow. Ile to the enemy point blanke, I'me a villaine else :

*Innoc.* And I by heauen I sweare.

*Quint.* Well if that day come, it will proue a hot day with some body.

*Innoc.* But Captaine, did you not say that you would enter me at an Ordinary, that I might learne to conuerse ?

*Quint.* When thou wilt Lieftenant ; No better time then now, for now th'art in good clothes, which is the most materiall point for thy entrance there.

*Innoc.* I but how should I behaue my selfe ?

*Quint.* Marry Sir, when you come first in, you shall see a crew of Gallants of all sorts :

*Innoc.* Nay Captaine if I come first in I shall see no body.



*Quint.* Tush man, you must not doe so, if you haue good clothes and will be noted let am all come in afore you, and then as I said shall you see a lusty crew of Gallants, some Gentlemen, some none; but thats all one: he that beares himselfe like a Gentleman, is worthy to haue bene borne a Gentleman: some aged haue beards, and some haue none, some haue money, and some haue none, yet all must haue meate: Now will all these I say at your first entrance wonder at you, as at some strange Owle: Examine your person, and obserue your bearing for a time. Doe you then ath' tother side seeme to neglect their obseruance as fast, let your countenance be prooffe against all eyes, not yeelding or confessing in it any inward defect. In a word be impudent enough, for thats your chiefe vertue of society.

*Innoc.* Is that? faith and I neede not learne that, I haue that by nature I thanke God.

*Quint.* So much the better, for nature is farre aboue Art, or iudgement. Now for your behauiour; let it be free and negligent, not clogg'd with ceremony or obseruance, giue no man honour, but vpon equall termes; for looke how much thou giu'st any man aboue that, so much thou tak'st from thy selfe: he that will once giue the wall, shall quickly be thrust into the kennell: measure not thy carriage by any mans eye, thy speech by no mans eare, but be resolute and confident in doing and saying, and this is the grace of a right Gentleman as thou art.

*Innoc.* Sfut, that I am I hope, I am sure my father has bene twife Warden on's company.

*Quint.* Thats not a peare matter man, ther's no prescription for Gentility, but good clothes and impudence: for your place, take it as it fals, but so as you thinke no place to good for you; fall too with ceremony whatfoeuer the company be: and as neere as you can, when they are in their Mutton, be thou in thy Wood-cocke, it showes resolution. Talke any thing,

thou car'st not what, so it be without offence, and as neere as thou canst without fence.

*Innoc.* Let me alone for that Captaine I warrant you.

*Quint.* If you chance to tell a lye, you must binde it with some oath, as by this bread, for breads a binder you know.

*Innoc.* True.

*Quint.* And yet take heede you sweare by no mans bread but your owne, for that may breede a quarrell: about all things you must carry no coales.

*Innoc.* By heauen not I, Ile freeze to death first.

*Quint.* Well Sir, one point more I must remember you of. After dinner there will be play, and if you would be counted compleate, you must venture amongst them; for otherwise, theill take you for a Scholler or a Poet, and so fall into contempt of you: for there is no vertue can scape the accompt of basenesse if it get money, but gaming and law; yet must you not loose much money at once, for that argues little wit at all times.

*Innoc.* As goffaue me, and thats my fault; for if I be in once, I shall loose all I haue about me.

*Quint.* Is true, Lieftenant? birlady Sir Ile be your moderator, therefore let me see how much money haue you about you?

*Innoc.* Not much, some twenty marke or twenty pound in gold.

*Quint.* 'Tis too much to loose by my faith, Lieftenant; giue me your purse Sir, hold yee, heers two brace of Angels, you shall venture that for fashion sake, Ile keepe the rest for you, till you haue done play.

*Innoc.* That will be all one, for when thats lost I shall neuer leaue till I get the rest from you: for I know thou wilt let me haue it if I aske it.

*Quint.* Not a penny by this gold.

*Innoc.* Prethee doe not then, as goffaue me and you do :

*Quint.* And I doe, hang me ; Come lets to the Duke.  
*Exeunt.*

*Finis Aëtus Primi.*

---

*Aëtus Secundi, Scæna prima.*

*Enter Lucretia and Temperance,  
feuerall wayes.*

*Tem.* **N** Ay Mistris, pray eene goe in againe, for I haue some inward newes for you.

*Lucr.* What are those pray.

*Tem.* Tis no matter Mistris till you come in, but make much a time in the meane time, good fortune thrusts her selfe vpon you in the likenesse of a fine yong Gentleman, hold vp your apron and receiue him while you may, a Gods name.

*Lucr.* How say by that? y'are a very wise coun-failer.

*Tem.* Well Mistris, when I was a Maide, and that's a good while agoe I can tell you.

*Lucr.* I thinke very well.

*Tem.* You were but a little one then I wisse.

*Lucr.* Nor you neither I beleeeue.

*Tem.* Faith it's one of the furthest things I can remember.

*Lucr.* But what when you were a Maide ?

*Tem.* Marry Mistris I tooke my time, I warrant you. And ther's Signior *Leonoro* now, the very flower of Venice, and one that loues you deerely I ensure you.

*Lucr.* God forgiue him if he doe, for Ile be sworne I neuer deseru'd his loue, nor neuer will while I liue.

*Tem.* Why then, what say to Signior *Collatine* ? ther's a dainty peece of Venzon for you, and a feruent louer indeed.

*Lucr.* He ? I dare say, he knowes not what wood loues shafts are made of, his Signiory woud think it the deepest disparagement could be done to him, to say that euer he spent sigh for any Dame in Italy.

*Tem.* Well, you haue a whole browne dozen a futers at least, I am sure ; take your choice amongst 'em all, if you loue not all, yet you may loue three or foure on 'em to be doing withall.

*Lucr.* To be doing withall ? loue three or foure ?

*Tem.* Why not, so you loue 'em moderately. What must that strange made peece *Theagines* that you cry out vpon so often, haue all from other, and yet know not where he is ?

*Lucr.* O my *Theagine*, not *Theagines*, thy loue hath turn'd me woman like thy selfe, shall thy fight neuer turne me man againe. Come lets to the Minster, God heare my prayers as I intend to stop mine eares against all my futers.

*Tem.* Well Mistris, yet peradventure, they may make you open afore the Priest haue a penny for you.

*Exeunt.*

---

*Enter Lodouico and Emilia.*

*Lodo.* **H**Eer's a coyle to make wit and women friends : come hither wench, let me haue thee fingle ; now fit thee downe, and heare good counsaile next thy heart, and God giue thee grace to lay it to thy heart.

*Em.* Fie Cozen, will this wilde tongue of yours neuer receiue the bridle ?

*Lod.* Yes, thou shalt now see me stroke my beard, and speake sententiously : thou tell'st me thy little father is in hand with a great rich marriage for thee, and would haue thee commit matrimony with old *Gaspardo*, art thou willing with it ?

*Em.* I rather wish my selfe married to a thousand deaths.

*Lod.* Then I perceiue thou know'st him not ; did he neuer wooe thee ?

*Em.* I protest, I neuer chang'd three words with him in my life ; he hath once or twice woo'de my father for me, but neuer me.

*Lod.* Why thats the reason thou lou'st him not, because thou tak'st in none of his valiant breath to enflame thee, nor vouchsaf'st his knowledge ; Ile tell thee what he is, an old saplesse trunke, fit to make touch-wood of hollow, and bald like a blasted Oke, on whose top Rauens sit and croke the portents of funerals ; one that noints his nose with clowted creame, and *Pomatum*. His breath smels like the butt end of a shoo-makers horne. A leprous scaly hide like an Elephant. The sonne of a Sow-gelder, that came to towne (as I haue heard thy father himselfe say) in a tottred ruffet cote, high shooes, and yet his hose torne aboue 'em ; A long pike-staffe in his necke (and a tord in his teeth) and a wallet on his right shoulder, and now the cullion hath with *Nouerint vniuersi* eaten vp some hundred Gentlemen : he must needs rise a Gentleman as 'twere out of their Ashes, or disparage a Gentlewoman to make himselfe a Gentleman, at least by the wiues side.



*Æm.* The wurfe my fortune to be entangled with fuch a winding bramble.

*Lod.* Entangl'd? Nay if I thought twould euer come to that, I'de hire some fhag-ragge or other for halfe a chickeene to cut's throat, only to faue thy hands from doing it; for I know thou wouldst poison him within one moneth; loue thee he will neuer, and that must be thy happineffe; for if he doe, looke to be coop't vp like a prifoner, condemn'd to execution, fcarce fuffred to take the aire, fo much as at a window, or waited on continually by an old beldame: not to keepe thee company, but to keepe thee from company: thy pocket fearchit, thy cabinets ranfackt for letters: euer in opposition, vnleffe (like the Moone) once a Moneth in coniunction; wealth thou maift haue indeede, but enioy it as in a dreame, for when thou wak'ft thou shalt finde nothing in thy hand; (*Enter Gasparo*) and (to keepe my tale in goodneffe) fee how all the ill that can be fpoken of him is exprest in his prefence.

*Æm.* O ougly, and monftrous fpectacle.

*Lod.* Now tell me whether thou wouldst make choice of him or a yong gallant in prime of his choiceneffe; one that for birth, perfon, and good parts, might meritoriously marry a Counteffe; and one to whom his foule is not fo deere as thy felfe. (*Enter Aurelio*) For all the world fuch another as he that comes here now: marke him well, fee whether *Gasparo* and he be not a little different. *Exit Æmilia.* How now? Sownds *Aurelio*? stay beaft, wilt thou make fuch a blest opportunity curfe thee? Ile fetch her out to thee. *Exit Lod.*

*Aure.* Wretch that I am, how fhee lothes me? if I abide her, I shall confume in the lightnings of her anger. (*Enter Lodouico with Æmilia.*) *Exit Aure.*

*Lod.* Here's a life indeede; what's he gone? pafion of death, what a babe 'tis? I could finde in my heart to ierke him, but temper me friendship, no

remedy now ; now wit turne his defects to perfection. Why Cuze hee's quite out of fight. By my life I commend him ; why this is done like thy selfe *Aurelia*, were shee the Queene of loue and woude runne from thee, flie thou from her ; why now I loue thee, for I see th'art worthy of my loue, thou carriest a respect to thine owne worth, and wilt expresse it with spirit ; I dare say, thou look'st to haue had him fall on his knees, and ador'd thee, or begge his life at thy hands : or else turn'd Queene *Dido*, and pierce his tender heart with sword full sharpe ; no faith wench, the case is altered, loue made *Hercules* spin, but it made him rage after : there must goe time to the bridling of euery passion ; I hope my friend will not loue a wench against her will, if shee woude haue met his kindnesse halfe way, so : if shee skit and recoile, he shootes her off warily, and away he goes : I marry Sir, this was a Gentlemanly part indeede. Farewell Cuze, be thou free in thy choice too, and take a better and thou canst a Gods name. *Exiturus.*

*Æm.* Nay deere Cuze, a word.

*Lod.* A word ? what's the matter ? I must needs after him, and clap him ath' backe, this spirit must be cherisht.

*Æm.* Alas what would you wish me to doe ?

*Lod.* Why, nothing.

*Æm.* Would you counsaile me to marry him against my fathers will ?

*Lod.* Not for the world, leaue him, leaue him, leaue him : you see hee's resolu'd, hee'll take no harme an you, neuer feare to embrew your hands with his liuer I warrant you.

*Æm.* Come you are such an other.

*Lod.* This fame riches with a husband, is the only thing in the world, I protest ; good *Gasparo*, I am forry I haue abused thee yfaith, for my Cozens fake ; how prettily the wretch came crawling by with his trooked knees euen now : I haue seene a yong Gencewoman, liue as merry a life with an old man, as

with the proudest yong vpstart on 'em all : farewell Cuze, I am glad th'art so wise yfaith.

*Æm.* If you goe, I die : fie on this affection, it rageth with suppression. Good Cuze, I am no longer able to continue it, I loue *Aurelio* better then it is possible for him to loue me.

*Lod.* Away, away, and could not this haue beene done at first, without all these superfluous disgracing ? O this fame vnhearty nicenesse of women, is good for nothing but to keepe their hufwife hands still occupied in this warp of dissembling.

Well wench redeeme thy fault, and write a kinde letter to him presently, before this resolution of his take too deepe roote in him.

*Æm.* Nay sweet Cuze, make me not so immodest, to write so sodainly, let me haue a little time to thinke vpon't.

*Lod.* Thinke me on nothing till you write : thinke as you write, and then you shall be sure to write as you thinke.

Women doe best when they least thinke on't.

*Æm.* But rather then write I will meete him at your pleasure.

*Lod.* Meete him ? dost thou thinke that I shall euer draw him againe to meete thee, that rush't from thee euen now with so iust a displeasure ?

*Æm.* Nay good Cuze, vrge not my offence so bitterly, our next meeting shall pay the forfeit of all faults.

*Lod.* Well th'art my pretty Cuze, and Ile doe my best to bring him to thee againe, if I cannot, I shall be sorry yfaith, thou wr't so iniuriously strange to him. But where shall this interview be now.

*Æm.* There is the mischief, and we shall hardly auoide it, my father plies my haunts so closely : and vses meanes by our maide to entrap vs, so that this *Tarrasse* at our backe gate is the onely place we may safely meete at : from whence I can stand and talke to you. But sweet Cuze you shall sweare, to keepe this my kindnesse from *Aurelio*, and not intimate by

any meanes that I am any thing acquainted with his comming.

*Lod.* Slife, do'tt thinke I am an Affe? to what end should I tell him? hee and Ile come wandring that way to take the aire, or so, and Ile discouer thee.

*Æm.* By meere chance as t'were.

*Lad.* By chance, by chance, and you shall at no hand see him at first, when I bring him for all this kindnesse you beare him.

*Æm.* By no meanes Cuze.

*Lod.* Very good: And if you endure any conference with him, let it be very little; and as neere as you can, turne to your former strangenesse in any case.

*Æm.* If doe not Cuze, trust me not.

*Lod.* Or if you thinke good, you may flirt away againe as soone as you see him, and neuer let your late fault be any warning t'ee.

*Æm.* I will doe all this, I warrant thee Cuze.

*Lod.* Will you so Cozen foole? canst thou be brought to that filly humour againe by any perswasions? by Gods Lord, and you be strange againe, more then needs must, for a temperat modesty, Ile break's necke downe from thee, but he shall doe as he did to thee.

*Æm.* Now, fie vpon you Cuze, what a foole doe you make me?

*Lod.* Well Dame, leaue your superfluous nicety in earnest, and within this houre I will bring him to this Tarrasse.

*Æm.* But good Cuze if you chance to see my chamber window open, that is vpon the Tarrasse, doe not let him come in at it in any case.

*Sod.* Sblood how can he? can he come ouer the wall think't?

*Æm.* O Sir, you men haue not deuices with ladders of ropes to scale such walles at your pleasure, and abuse vs poore wench.

*Lod.* Now a plague of your simplicity, would you discourage him with prompting him? well Dame, Ile prouide for you.

*Æm.* As you loue me Cuze, no wordes of my kindnesse from me to him.

*Lod.* Goe to, no more adoe. *Exit Lodouico and Æmilia.*

*Enter Leonoro Lionell and  
Temperance.*

*Tem.* **G**Od yee God morrow Sir, truly I haue not heard a sweeter breath then your Page has.

*Leo.* I am glad you like him Mistris *Temperance*.

*Tem.* And how dee Sir?

*Leo.* That I must know of you Lady, my welfare depends wholly vpon your good speede.

*Tem.* How fay Sir? and by my soule I was coming to you in the morning when your yong man came to me; I pray let him put on, vnlesse it be for your pleasure.

*Leo.* He is yong, and can endure the cold well enough bare-headed.

*Tem.* A pretty sweet child 'tis I promise you.

*Leo.* But what good newes Mistris *Temperance*, will your Mistris be wonne to our kinde meeting?

*Tem.* Faith Ile tell you Sir, I tooke her in a good moode this morning, and broke with her againe about you, and shee was very pleasant as she will be many times.

*Leo.* Very well, and is there any hope of speede?

*Tem.* No by my troth Gentleman, none in the world, an obstacle yong thing it is, as euer I broke with all in my life: I haue broke with a hundred in my dayes, tho I say it, yet neuer met her comparifon.

*Leo.* Are all my hopes come to this Mistris *Temperance*?

*Tem.* Nay 'tis no matter Sir, this is the first time that euer I spake to any in these matters, and it shall be the last God willing.



*Leo.* And euen now shee had broke with a hundred and a hundred.

*Tem.* But doe you loue her Sir indeede ?

*Leo.* Do'st thou make a question of that ?

*Tem.* Pardon me I pray Sir, I meane dee loue her as a Gentleman ought to doe, that is, to consummate matrimony with her as they say ?

*Leo.* Thats no matter to you Mistris *Temperance*, doe you procure our meeting, and let my fauour be at her hands as I can enforce it.

*Tem.* You say like an honest Gentleman ; a woman can haue no more : and faith Sir I wish you well, and euery day ter dinner my Mistris vses to go to her chaire or else lie down vpon her bedde, to take a nappe or so, to auoide idlenesse as many good hufwives do, you know, and then doe I sit by her and sew, or so : and when I see her fast a-sleepe, Lord doe I thinke to my selfe, (as you know we waiting women haue many light thoughts in our heads) Now if I were a man, and should beare my Mistris an ill will, what might I doe to her now.

*Leo.* Indeede then you haue very good opportunity.

*Tem.* The best that may be, for shee sleepe like a sucking Pigge, you may jogge her a hundred times, and shee'll stirre no more then one of your stones, here.

*Leo.* And could you put a friend in your place thinke you ?

*Tem.* Nay birlady Sir, backe with that legge, for if any thing come on't but well, all the burthen will lye vpon me.

*Leo.* Why what can come of it? only that by this meanes I may folicite her loue my selfe.

*Tem.* I but who knowes if the Deuill (God bleffe vs) should be great wee', how you would vse her ?

*Leo.* What do'st thou take me for a beast, to force her that I would make my wife ?

*Tem.* Beast Sir, Nay ther's no beaflinesse in it neither, for a man will shew like a man in those cafes :

and besides, you may marre the bedde, which euery body will see that comes in ; and that I would not for the best gowne I shall weare this twelue Moneth.

*Leo.* Well, to put thee out of that feare, it shall be worth such a gowne to thee.

*Tem.* I thanke you for that Sir, but thats all one, and thus Sir, my old Master *Honorio*, at two a clocke will be at Tilting, and then will his sonne Signior *Aurelio*, and his man *Angelo*, be abroad ; at which houre if you will be at the backe gate, and muffle your selfe handsomely, you may linger there till I call you.

*Leo.* I marry Sir, so I may be there long enough.

*Tem.* Nay, but two a clocke; now, now is my houre Sir.

*Leo.* Very well, and till then farewell.

*Tem.* Boye to you hartily.

*Leo.* Boy to him indeede if he knew all. *Exeunt.*

*Enter Lodouico and Aurelio.*

*Lod.* I Haue prouided thee a ladder of ropes, therefore resolue to meete her, goe wash thy face, and prepare thy selfe to die, Ile goe make ready the ladder.

*Aur.* But when is the happy houre of our meeting?

*Lod.* Marry Sir, thats something vncertaine, for it depends wholly vpon her fathers absence, and when that will be God knowes: but I doubt not it will happen once within this twelue-Moneth.

*Aur.* Sownds a twelue-Moneth.

*Lod.* Nay harke you, you are all vpon the spurre now, but how many louers haue seru'd seauen twelue-Moneths prenticeships, for the freedome of their Mistris fauours? notwithstanding to shorten your torments, your man *Angelo* must be the meane, to draw

the lapwing her father from his nest, by this deuce that I tell you. (*Enter Angelo.*)

*Ang.* I did euer dreame that once in my life good fortune would warme her cold hand in my naked bosome. And that once is now come, Ile lay hold vpon't, yfaith ; I haue you my little squire, I haue you vpon mine Anueill, vpon which I will mallet you and worke you ; coyning crownes, chickins, bracelets, and what not out of you ; for procuring you the deere gullage of my sweete heart mistresse *Francischina*.

*Aure.* I am glad it rests in my kinde seruant *Angelo*. *Angelo*, well met, it lies in thee now, make me no more thy master, but thy friend, and for euer happy in thy friendship.

*Ang.* In what part of me does that lie Sir, that I may pull it out, for you presently ?

*Aure.* My friend *Lodouico* heere hath told me, what thou reuealedst to him to day, touching his vnckle *Lorenzo*, and his louefute to *Francischina*.

*Ang.* Siight I told it him in secreet fir.

*Lod.* And so did I tell it him *Angelo*, I am a Iew else.

*Ang.* It may well be fir, but what of that ?

*Lod.* This *Angelo*, he would haue thee procure my olde vnckles absence from home this afternoone, by making him meete or pretending his meeting with his mistresse, and thy sweete heart *Francischina*.

*Aure.* Which if thou do'st *Angelo*, be sure of reward to thy wishes.

*Aug.* What talke you of reward fir ? to the louing and dutifull seruant, 'tis a greater encouragement to his seruice to heare his master say, God a mercy *Angelo*, spie out *Angelo*, Ile thinke of thy paines one day *Angelo*, then all your base rewards and preferments : yet not to hinder your hand fir, I will extend mine to his seruice presently, and get your old vnckle (*Signior Lorenzo*) out of the waie long enough I warrant you.

*Lod.* Tis honestly said, which when thou hast performed, enforce vs

*Exeunt.*

*Aug.* I will not faile , I was resolu'd to make him away afore they spake to me, in procuring his accessse to *Francifchina*, for what is his prefence at her house, but his absence at his ownes? and thus shall I with one trewell daube two walles, (*Enter Francisc.*) see how fitly shee meetes me. I will stand close heere as if it were in my shop of good fortune, & in respect of all ornamēts I can help her to, I will out of the fulnesse of my ioy, put her out of her studie and encounter her thus; D'ee lacke gentlewoman, d'ee lacke: very fayre new gownes, kirtles, petticots, wrought smocks, bracelets, d'ee lacke gentlewoman, d'ee lacke? *Hold vp the bracelets.*

*Fran.* What means my loue by these strange salutations?

*Ang.* Prethee aske me no questions; hold take these bracelets, put vp this purse of gold quickly, and if thou wilt haue any of these things, I haue cried to thee, speake and tis performed.

*Fran.* From whose treasury comes all this, I prethee?

*Ang.* *Lorenzo, Lorenzo*, a gentleman of much antiquitie, and one that for his loue hath burn'd hundreds of hearts to powder; yet now it fals out, that his tree of life is scorch't and blasted with the flames of thy beauty, readie to wither eternally, vnlesse it be speedily comforted with the sweete drops of thy nose.

*Fran.* Gods my life, is that old squire so amorous?

*Ang.* You wrong him to terme him old, he can draw his bow, ride his horse, vse his sword, and traile his pike vnder Loues colours, as well as euer he did.

*Fran.* I beleue that easily.

*Ang.* Well, go thy waies in and prepare to entertaine him now thy husband is from home, only with good words, and best kindneses, making him put all into deeds till his treasury be deedlesse.

*Fran.* You speake as if I had nothing to respect but his entertainment, when you know how close and

timely it must be put in execution, considering with what envious eyes my neighbours suruey mee.

*Ang.* Think'st thou, I consider not all this? he shall come in disguis'd, wench, and do thou deuise for our mirth, what ridiculous disguise he shall come in, and he shall assume it.

*Fran.* What a magnifico of the Citie, and one of the Senate, thinkest thou he will not see into that inconuenience?

*Ang.* No more then no Senator, for in this case, my assurance is that *Cupid* will take the scarfe from his owne eyes, and hoodwinke the old buzzard, while two other true turtles enioy their happinesse: get thee in I beseech thee loue, tell thy gold, and say thy prayers. (*Enter Lorenzo.*) Now for a farre fetch't deuice to fetch ouer my loue-squire. *Exit. Fran.* I see him within eare-shot; well may beauty inflame others, riches may tempt others; but for mee, mine eares and mine eyes, are prooffe against all the Syrens, and Venusses, in all the seas of the world; beauty is a whore, riches a baud, and Ile trust none an you.

*Lor.* What ailes poore *Angelo*?

*Ang.* Nay Mistresse *Franke*, if you proue disloyall once, farewell all constancy in women.

*Lor.* How now man? what's the matter?

*Ang.* O Sir are you so neare? I shall trust your experience in women the better while I liue.

*Lor.* I pre thee why so?

*Ang.* Say true Sir, did you neuer sollicite your louefute to fayre mistresse *Francischina*?

*Lor.* Neuer I protest *Angelo*.

*Ang.* Vpon my life 'tis a strange thing; I would haue sworne all Italy, could not so sodainly haue fastned a fauour vpon her, I look't for a siege of Troy at least, to surprize the turrets of her continence; but to yeeld at the first sight of her assaylants colours, and before any Cannon was mounted afore her, 'tis one of the loofest parts of a modest woman that euer I heard of.



*Lor.* How faist thou? did not I tell thee as much? beware of an old colt while you liue, he can tell when to strike I warrant you.

*Ang.* Women and fethers? now fie on that affinity.

*Lor.* Alas *Angelo*, a feeble generation, the sooner ouercome God knowes, the honefter minde, the sooner ouercome.

*Ang.* Gods my life, what light hufwife would yeeld at first to a stranger, and yet does this whirligig stand vpon termes of honour forsooth? tenders her reputation as the Apple of her eye; she has a ielous and a cutting husband, enuious neighbours, and will die many deathes rather then by any friends open acceffe to her, be whip't naked with the tongues of scandall and slander; and a whole sanctuary of such ceremonies.

*Lor.* O she does worthily in that *Angelo*, and like a woman of honour, thou hast painted her perfection in her faults thou find'st, and tickil'st me with her appetite.

*Ang.* And to auoid all sight of your entrance, you must needs come in some disguise she sayes; so much she tenders your high credit in the Citie, and her owne reputation, forsooth.

*Lor.* How, come in some disguise?

*Ang.* A toy, a very toy which runnes in her head with such curious feete Sir, because if there be any resemblances of your person seene to enter her house, your whole substantiall selfe will be called in question; any other man she saies, might better aduenture with the least thing chang'd about'em then you with all; as if you were the onely noted mutton-monger in all the Citie.

*Lor.* Well *Angelo*, heauen forgiue vs the finnes of our youth.

*Ang.* That's true Sir, but for a paltry disguise, being a magnifico, she shall goe fnicke vp.

*Lor.* Soft good *Angelo*, soft, let's think on't a little: what disguise would serue the turne saies shee?

*Ang.* Faith, I know not what disguise shee would haue for you : shee would haue you come like a Calfe with a white face, I thinke, shee talkes of Tinkers, pedlers, porters, chimney-sweepers, fooles and Physicians, such as haue free egress and regress into mens houses without suspicion.

*Lor.* Out vpon 'em, would she haue me vndergoe the shame and hazard of one of those abiects ?

*Ang.* Yfaith I told her so, a squire of that worship, one of the Senate, a graue Iusticer, a man of wealth, a magnifico ?

*Lor.* And yet by my troth, for the safegard of her honour, I would doe much ; me thinks a Friers weede were nothing.

*Ang.* Out vpon't, that disguise is worne thread bare vpon euery stage, and so much villany committed vnder that habit ; that 'tis growne as suspicious as the vilest. If you will hearken to any, take such a transformance, as you may be sure will keepe you from discouery : for though it be the stale refuge of miserable Poets, by change of a hat or a cloake, to alter the whole state of a Comedie, so as the father must not know his owne child forsooth, nor the wife her husband, yet you must not thinke they doe it earnest to carry it away so : for say you were stuffed in a motley coate, crowded in the case of a base Violl, or buttond vp in a cloak-bag, euen to your chinne, yet if I see your face, I am able to say this is signior *Lorenzo*, and therefore vnlesse your disguise be such that your face may beare as great a part in it as the rest, the rest is nothing.

*Lor.* Good reason, in faith *Angelo* ; and what, shall I then smurch my face like a chimney sweeper, & weare the rest of his smokinesse ?

*Ang.* Ile tell you sir, if you be so mad to condescend to the humour of a foolish woman, by consideration that *Ioue* for his loue tooke on him the shape of a Bull, which is farre worfe then a chimney sweeper, I can fit you rarely.

*Lor.* As how I pre thee ?

*Ang.* There is one little fnaile you know, an old chimney sweeper.

*Lor.* What, hee that fings, Maids in your smocks, hold open your locks, fludgs.

*Ang.* The very fame fir, whose perfon (I borrowing his words) you will fo liuely refemble, that himfelfe in perfon cannot detect you.

*Lor.* But is that a fit refemblance to please a louer *Angelo*?

*Ang.* For that fir, fhe is provided: for you fhall no fooner enter but off goes your ruftie skabberd, fweete water is readie to fcoure your filthy face, milk, & a bath of fernebraks for your fuftie bodie, a chamber perfum'd, a wrought fhirt, night cap, and her husbands gowne, a banquet of Oyfters pyes, Potatoes, Skirret rootes, Eringos, and diuers other whetftones of venery.

*Lor.* O let me hugge thee *Angelo*.

*Ang.* A bed as foft as her hayre, fheets as delicate as her skinne, and as fweete as her breath, pillowes imitating her breasts, and her breasts to boote, Hypocras in her cups, and Nectar in her lips, Ah, the gods haue bene beafts for leffe felicitie.

*Lor.* No more good *Angelo*, no more, how fhall I requite the happineffe thou wilt bring me too? hafte any mind of marriage?

*Ang.* Not much fir, but an extraordinary wife might tempt me.

*Lov.* By my troth and fhe were not promift, thou fhouldeft haue my daughter: but come lets to our difguife, in which I long to be finging.

*Ang.* Ile folow you prefently. *Exit.* Signior *Lodouico.* (*Enter Lodouico and Giouenelle.*)

*Lod.* How now *Angelo*?

*Ang.* Why fir, I am prouiding meanes to leade your old vncle out a th' way, as you will'd me, by drawing him into the way of *Quintilianoës* wife, my fweet heart, and fo make roome for him by *Quintili-*

*anoes* roome : you that lead him any way, muſt needes ſeeke him out and employ him to ſome tauerne.

*Lod.* He will be with me preſently *Angelo*, and here's a freſhman come from Padua, whom I will powder with his acquaintance, and ſo make him an excellent morſell to relifh his caroufes.

*Ang.* Goe to Sir, by this light you'll be complain'd on, there cannot be a foole within twenty mile of your head, but you engroſſe him for your owne mirth : Noble-mens tables cannot be feru'd for you.

*Lod.* Sfut, Ile complaine of them man, they hunt me out and hang vpon me, ſo that I cannot be ridde on'em, but they ſhall get ſome body elſe to laugh at, or Ile turne'em ouer to our Poets, and make all the world laugh at'em.

*Ang.* Well Sir, here comes your man, make him ſure from his wife, and I'le make the tother ſure with her. *Exit.*

*Enter Quintiliano, Innocentio, Fannio, Taylor, Taylors ſonne, he Reads a bill.*

*Lod.* **S**Ee Signior *Giouanelle*, here comes the famous Captaine you would ſo faine bee acquainted withall ; be acquainted with him at your perill : Ile defend you from his ſwaggering humor, but take heede of his cheating.

*Gio.* I warrant you Sir, I haue not beene matriculated at the Vniuerſity, to be meretriculated by him : ſalted there to be colted here.

*Lod.* Very well Sir, lets heare him.

*Quin.* I haue examin'd the particulars of your bill Maſter *Taylor*, and if finde them true *Orthographie*, thy payment ſhall be correſpondent : marry I will ſet no day, becauſe I am loth to breake.

*Taylor.* Alas Sir, pray let this be the day : conſider my charge, I haue many children, and this my poore child here whom I haue brought vp at ſchoole, muſt looſe all I haue beſtowed on him hitherto, if I pay not his Maſter preſently the quartridge I owe him.

*Quint.* Foole do'st thou delight to heare thy sonne begge in Latin, pose him Lieftenant.

*Innoc.* How make you this in Latin boy? My father is an honest Taylor.

*Boy.* That will hardly be done in true Latin Sir.

*Innoc.* No? why so Sir?

*Boy.* Because it is false English fir.

*Quint.* An excellent Boy.

*Innoc.* Why is it false English?

*Boy.* Marry fir, as *bona Mulier* is said to be false Latin, because though *bona* be good, *Mulier* is naught; so to say my father is an honest Taylor, is false English; for though my father be honest, yet the Taylor is a theefe.

*Quint.* Beleeue it a rare shred, not of home-spunne cloth vpon my life: Taylor, goe, fend the schoole-master to me at night and Ile pay him.

*Tay.* Thanke you good Captaine, and if you doe not pay him, at night my wife will come to you her selfe, that's certaine, and you know what a tongue shee has.

*Quint.* Like the sting of a Scorpion, shee nailes mine eares to the pillory with it, in the shame and torment shee does me. Goe I will voide this Bill and auoide her.

*Tay.* I thanke you fir. *Exit cum filio.*

*Quint.* Lieftenant is not this a braue gullery? The slaue has a pretty wife, and shee will neuer haue me pay him, because shee may euer come to my chamber, as shee fayer, to raile at me, and then shee goes home and tels her husband shee has tickled me yfaith.

*Innoc.* By my life, a rare jest.

*Quint.* Thou maist see this Boy is no shred of a Taylor, is he not right of my looke and spirit?

*Innoc.* Right as a line, yfaith.

*Lod.* And will agree in the halter.—Saue you Captaine *Quintiliano.*

*Quint.* And do'st thou liue my noble *Lodouico*?



Boy, take my cloake, when shals haue a rouse, ha? my Lieftenant and I were drunke last night, with drinking health on our knees to thee.

*Giou.* Why, would not your legs beare you Sir?

*Quint.* How many miles to midfommer? S'blood, whose foole are you? are not you the tassell of a Gander?

*Giou.* No indeede not I Sir: I am your poore friend Sir glad to see you in health.

*Quint.* Health? S'fut, how meane you that? dee thinke I came lately out ath' powdering Tubbe?

*Giou.* Gossaue mee Sir 'twas the furthest part of my thought.

*Quint.* Why y'are not angry, are you?

*Lod.* No, nor you shall not be.

*Quint.* S'blood, I hope I may and I will.

*Lod.* Be and you dare Sir.

*Quint.* Dare?

*Lod.* I, dare.

*Quint.* Plague on thee, th'art the mad'st *Lodouico* in the world, s'fut doe thou stabbe me, and th'ast a minde too't, or bid me stabbe my selfe, is this thy friend? do'st thou loue *Lodouico*?

*Giou.* With my heart I protest Sir.

*Quint.* S'heart, a lyes in's throate that does not; and whence com'st thou wagge, ha?

*Giou.* Euen now arriued from Padua Sir to see fashions.

*Quint.* Giue me thy hand, th'art welcome; and for thy fashions, thou shalt first drinke and wench it: to which end we will carouse a little, some fixe or seauen miles hence, and eury man carry his wench.

*Innoc.* But where shall we haue them Captaine?

*Quint.* Haue'em Lieftenant? if we haue'em not, my Valentine shall be one, and shee shall take a neighbour or two with her to see their nurst childe or so; wee'll want for no wenches I warrant thee. (*Enter Cuthbert Barber.*)

*Lod.* But who comes here?

*Quint.* O tis my Barber.

*Lod.* S'blood how thy trades men haunt thee.

*Quint.* Alas they that liue by men, must haunt'em,

*Cut.* God faue you Sir.

*Quint.* How now *Cutberd*, what newes out of *Barbary*?

*Cut.* Sir, I would borrow a word with you in priuate.

*Quint.* Be briefe then *Cutbeard*, thou look'st leane me thinks, I thinke th'art newly marryed.

*Cut.* I am indeede Sir.

*Quint.* I thought so, keepe on thy hat man, twill be the lesse perceiu'd, what, is not my Taylor and you friends yet? I will haue you friends thats certaine, Ile maintaine you both else.

*Cut.* I know no enmity betwixt vs Sir, you know Captaine I come about another matter.

*Quint.* Why but *Cutbeard*, are not you neighbours? your trades Cofen german, the Taylor and the Barber? does not the Taylor sow? doest not thou Barber reape? and doe they not both band themselues against the common enemy of mankinde, the louse? are you not both honest men alike? is not he an arrant knaue? you next dore to a knaue, because next dore to him?

*Cut.* Alas Sir, all this is to no purpose, there are certaine odde crownes betwixt vs you know.

*Quint.* True *Cutbeard*, wilt thou lend me as many moe to make'em euen Boy?

*Cut.* Faith Sir, they haue hung long enough a conscience.

*Quint.* Cut'em downe then *Cutbeard*, it belongs to thy profession if they hang too long.

*Cut.* Well Sir if this be all, Ile come by'em as I can, and you had any honesty.

*Giou.* S'blood honesty you knaue? doe you taxe any Gentleman in this company for his honesty?

*Cut.* Blame me not fir, I am vndone by him, and yet I am still of as good credit in my Parish as he too.

*Quint.* S'blood Rascall, as good credit as I ?

*Lod.* Nay pre thee Captaine forbear.

*Innoc.* Good Captaine be gone.

*Quint.* Let me alone ; Ile not strike him by this hand, why hearke yee Rogue : put your credit in balance with mine ? do'st thou keepe this company ? here's Signior *Lodouico*, one of the *Clarissimi*, a man of worship : here's a Gentleman of Padua, a man of rare parts, an excellent scholler, a fine Ciceronian.

*Cut.* Well fir.

*Quint.* And here's my Lieftenant, I hope thou know'st the Worshipfull man his father with the blew beard, and all these are my companions ; and dare you a barbarous slaue, a squirting companion, compare with me ? but here's the point ; now behold and see : Signior *Giouenelle*, lend me foure or fife pounds, let it be fife pounds, if you haue so much about you.

*Giou.* Here's my purse fir, I thinke there be iust so much in't.

*Quint.* Very good, now *Cutbeard*, are you a slanderous cut-throat or no ? will thy credit doe this now ? without scrip or scrowle. But thou wilt thinke this is done for a colour now ; doe you not lend it me simply ?

*Giou.* What a question's that ?

*Quint.* For how long ?

*Giou.* At your pleasure Captaine.

*Quint.* Why so, here you poling Rascall, here's two crownes out of this money : now I hope wilt beleeeue 'tis mine, now the property is altered.

*Cut.* Why you might a done this before then.

*Quint.* No *Cutbeard*, I haue beene burnd ith' hand for that, Ile pay n'ere a knaue an yee all money, but in the presence of such honest Gentleman that can witnesse it ; of my conscience I haue paid it thee halfe a dozen times ; goe to fir be gone.

*Cut.* Fare yee well fir.

*Quint.* Thanke you Signior *Giouenelle* ; though y'are sure of this money againe at my hands, yet take

heede how this fame *Lodouico* get it from you, he's a great sharker ; but th'ast no more money about thee hast thou ?

*Giou.* Not a doit, by this candle.

*Quint.* All the better, for hee'd cheat thee on't, if thou had'st euer so much, therefore when thou com'st to Padua, ply thy booke and take good courfes, and 'tis not this againe shall serue thy turne at my handes, I sweare to thee.

*Giou.* Thanke you good Captaine.

*Quint.* Signior *Lodouico*, adiew.

*Lod.* Not so fir, we will not part yet, a caroufe or two me thinks is very necessary betwixt vs.

*Quint.* With all my heart Boy, into the Emperours head here.


*Lod.* Content.

*Exeunt.*

*Actus secundi Finis.*

*Actus Tertius.*

*Lodouico, Angelo.*

*Ang.*  Ay Sir, haue you plaid the man and hous'd the Captaine ?

*Lod.* I haue hous'd and lodg'd him in the Emperours head *Tauerne*, and there I haue left him glorified with his two guls, so that perfume of what thou wilt at his house, for he is out of the way by this time both waies.

*Ang.* T'is very well handled fir, and perfume you & your friend my master *Aurelio* of what may fatisfie you at your vncles, for he is now going out of the way, and out of himfelfe alfo: I haue fo befmeard him with a chimney fwepers refemblance, as neuer was poore *Snaile*, whose counterfaite he triumphes in, neuer thinking I haue daubd his face fufficient, but is at his glaffe as curiously bufied to beautifie his face (for as of Moo'rs fo of chimney fwepers) the blackeft is moft beautifull as any Lady to paint her lips.

*Lod.* Thou art a notable villaine.

*Ang.* I am the fitter for your imployment Sir: ftand clofe I befeech you, & when I bring him into the ftreets, encounter and bayte him in ftead of *Snayle*, but in any cafe let none elfe know it.

*Lod.* Not for the world.

*Ang.* If you should tell it to one, fo you charge him to fay nothing, 'twere nothing, and fo if one by one to it play holy water frog with twentie, you know any feeret is kept fufficiently; and in this, we fhall haue the better fport at a Beare baiting, fare ye well Sir.

---

*Enter Honorio and Gasparo.*

*Hon.* Signior *Lodonico* good euen to you.

*Lod.* The like to Signior *Honorio*, and harke you Sir, I muft be bound with my vncl *Lorenzo*, and tell you a pleafant fecrete of him, fo in no fort you will vtter it.

*Hon.* In no fort as I am a Gentleman.

*Lod.* Why Sir hee is to walke the ftreets prefently in the likeneffe of *Snayle* the chimney fweeper, and with his crie.

*Hon.* What is hee Sir? to what end I befeech you Sir wil hee diffigure himfelfe fo?



*Lod.* Yfaith Sir I take it for some matter of pollicy, that concernes towne gouernment.

*Hon.* Towne-bull gouernment, do you not meane fo Sir ?

*Lon.* O no Sir, but for the generall bufineffe of the Citie I take it.

*Hon.* Well fir well we will not examine it too farre, but gefse at it.

*Lod.* So fir when he comes forth do you take one corner to encounter him as I will doe another, and taking him for *Snayle*, imagine hee went about stealing of Citie venifon, (though he do not,) and make what sport you thinke good with him, alwaies prouided it be cleanly, and that he may still thinke he goes inuifible.

*Hon.* I warraut yee Signior *Lodouico*, and thanke you hartily for this good caufe of our honeft recreation.

*Lod.* Scarce honeft neither fir, but much good do it you, as it is,

*Hon.* O that my fonne, your friend *Aurelio*, were heere to helpe to candy this ieaft a little.

*Lod.* Alas fir, his ficke stomacke can abide no sweete meates, hee's all for aye me, wee'll make the Ieaft rellifh well enough I warrant you: *Lorenzo* my vncke an old Senator, one that has read *Marcus Aurelius, Gesta Romanorum, the Mirror of Magistrates, &c.* to be led by the nofe like a blind Beare that has read nothing. Let my man reade how hee deferues to be bayted.

*Hon.* 'Tis a pretty wonder yfaith Signior *Lodouico*.

*Lod.* Slife, 'twere a good deed, to get boyes to pinne cards at his backe, hang squibs at his tayle, ring him through the towne with bafons, befnowball him with rotten egges, and make him aſham'de of the Commiſſion before hee feale it.

*Gasp.* What faies Signior *Lodouico*, I befeech you fir ? me thinkes his pleaſant diſpoſition ſhould intend ſome waggerie.

*Hon.* I will tell you Signior *Gasparo*, but in any case you must say nothing.

*Gasp.* In no case will I say any thing fir.

*Hon.* Then this is the case : Signior *Lorenzo* (your probable father in law) in the case of *Snayle* the chimney sweeper, will straight tread the streets for his pleasure.

*Gasp.* For his pleasure ?

*Lon.* For his pleasure fir, say it be so, wonder not, but least at it, consider what pleasure the world sayes he is most giuen to, and helpe baite him hereafter, but in any case cleanly, and say nothing

*Gasp.* O monstrous, I conceiue you, my father in law, will his daughter haue his tricks thinke you ?

*Hon.* Faith for that you must euen take fortune *de la pace*, kisse the Paxe, and be patient like your other neighbours. So, here stand I, chose you another place.

*Gasp.* O me, what if a man should call him to sweepe a chimney in earnest, what would he doe ? Ile put him too't a my credit, and here will I stand. (*Enter Lorenzo with his glasse in his hand, and Angelo with a pot of painting.*)

*Ang.* How now fir, are you well yet thinke you ?

*Lor.* A little more here good *Angelo*.

*Ang.* Very well fir, you shall haue enough.

*Lor.* It will be the most perfect disguise that euer was imitated.

*Ang.* Ile warrant you that yfaith fir ; ya're fitted beyonde the forehead for a right counterfaite ; It is well now fir ?

*Lor.* Yet a little more heere *Angelo*, and then master Painter let *Michael Angelo* himfelfe amend thee.

*Ang.* For a perfect naturall face, I care not if all the world explaine it.

*Lor.* So now take this glasse, and giue me my furniture, and haue at your smoaky chimney.

*Ang.* Haue at your smoakie chimney Mistresse

*Franke*: heere fir take vp your occupation, and downe with *Snayle* for a chimney sweeper.

*Lor.* Away, see if the coast be cleare.

*Ang.* I will fir.

*Lor.* Take good view, looke about to the doores and windowes.

*Ang.* Not a dogge at a doore, not a cat at a window. Appaere in your likenesse, and not with your quality.

*Lor.* Chimney sweepe ; work for chimney sweepe, wilt do firha ?

*Ang.* Admirably.

*Lor.* Does my fute become me ?

*Ang.* Become you fir would to heauen mistresse *Franke* could bring you to the wearing of it alwaies.

*Lor.* Ile forth yfaith then ; Maids in your smocks, fet open your locks,

Downe, downe, downe :

Let Chimney sweeper in :

And he will sweepe your chimneys cleane,

Hey derry, derry, downe.

How do'ft like my crie, ha ?

*Ang.* Out of all crie, I forbid *Snayle* himselfe to creepe beyond you.

*Lor.* As God helpe, I begin to be proud on't : Chimney sweepe.

*Ang.* Gods pittie, who comes yonder ?

*Lor.* My nephew *Lodowicke* ; Gods me, Ile start backe againe.

*Ang.* Nay ther's no starting now, hee'll see you go into your house then ; fall into your note ; stand to *Snayles* person and I warrant you. (*Enter Lodowico.*)

*Exit Ang.*

*Lor.* Chimney sweepe.

*Lod.* How now *Snayle*, how do'ft thou ?

*Lor.* Thanke your good worship.

*Lod.* Me thinkes thy song is more hearty then 'twas wont to be, and thou look'ft much better.

*Lor.* Thanke God and good friends fir; and a merry heart that prolongs life. Chimney fweepe.

*Lod.* Nay good *Snayle*, lets talke a little, you know *Rofe* mine vncle *Lorenfoes* maide *Snayle* !

*Lor.* That I do well fir.

*Lod.* She complaines of you *Snayle*, and faves, y'are the bawdiest old knaue in venery.

*Lor.* Alas fir, she wrongs me : I am not fedde thereafter, let her looke for that commendation in her richer customers.

*Lod.* Who are they *Snayle*? I hope you doe not meane mine vncle her Master; hee's mine vncle and I loue him well, and I know the old lickspiggot will be nibling a little when he can come too't : but I must needs fay he will do no hurt, hee's as gentle as an Adder that has his teeth taken out.

*Lor.* Y'are a merry Gentleman fir; and I haue hastie labour in hand, I must craue pardon. (*Enter Honorio.*) Chimney fweepe.

*Hono.* What old *Snayle*? how do'ft thou and thy chimneyes?

*Lod.* Marry fir I was asking him questions about one of them.

*Hono.* What Signior *Lodouico*? what one is that I pray?

*Lod.* Mine vncle *Lorenzos* maide *Rofe* fir, and hee will needs perfwade me, her old master keepes her for his owne faddle.

*Hono.* Her old master? I dare sweare they wrong him that fay so; his very age would make him asham'd to be ouertaken with those goatish licences.

*Lod.* True fir, and his great authority in the Citie, that should whippe fuch vnseasonable letchers about the wals of it.

*Hono.* Why, y'are ith' right fir, and now you talke of your vncle, I heard fay Captaine *Quintiliano* cheated him yesterday of five pounds, as hee did a yong Gentleman of Padua this morning of as much more.

*Lod.* Faith fir he drew fuch a kinde of tooth from him indeede.

*Hono.* Is it possible he should be fo wrought vpon by him? Now certaine I haue euer held him a most wise Gentleman.

*Lod.* An arrant Rooke by this light; a capable cheating stocke; a man may carry him vp and downe by the eares like a pipkin.

*Hono.* But do you thinke he will let the Captaine passe so?

*Lod.* Why alas, what should he doe to him fir? the pasture is fo bare with him, that a goose cannot graze vpon't.

*Hono.* Marry fir then would I watch him a time when he were abroad, and take out my penniworthes of his wife, if hee drew a tooth from me, I would draw another from her.

*Lod.* Well, God be with your worships: chimney sweeper, I thought I should neuer haue beene ridde of them, (*Enter Gasparo*) Chimney sweepe.

*Gasps.* What old *Snayle*, do'st thou crie chimney sweepe still? why they say thou art turnd mightie rich of late.

*Lor.* I would they said true fir?

*Gasps.* Yes by the masse, by the same token, that those riches make thy old name for a venery encrease vpon thee.

*Lor.* Foolish tales fir, foolish tales.

*Gasps.* Yes by the masse, *Snayle*, but they be told for such certaine tales, that if thou hast a daughter to marry with tenne thousand crownes, I would see her pit-hole, afore I would deale with her, for feare she should trot through her fathers trumperies.

*Lor.* Alas fir your worship knowes, I haue neither daughter nor riches, Idle talke fir, Idle talke: chimney sweepe.

*Gasps.* Nay stay *Snayle*, and come into my house, thou shalt earne some money of mee, I haue a chimney to sweepe for thee.



*Lor.* I thanke your worship, I will waite vpon you next morning early fir: but now I haue promi't to sweepe another mans chimney in truth.

*Gasp.* But good *Snayle* take mine in the way.

*Lod.* What does he crie chimney sweepe, and refuse to sweepe 'em?

*Lor.* No master, alas you know I liue by it, and now I crie as I go to worke that I haue promi't, that I may get more against other times: what would ye haue me do true?

*Honor.* Alas poore *Snayle*; farewell good *Snayle*, farewell.

*Lor.* Lord keepe your good worship.—And a very vengeance, I beseech the blacke father of vengeance.

*Lod.* Poore vncke, he begins to be melancholy, has lost his song among's

*Gasp.* Was neuer such man touch't with such ouerfight?

*Hon:* Beare with age, Signior *Gasparo*, beare with age, and let vs all tender his credite as we haue vow'd, and be silent; he little thought to haue beene thus betrayed as he is; and where secrecy is assur'd, it beares with many bad actions in the very best I can tell you, and so good Signior *Lodouico* adew, and I heartily thanke you.

*Lod.* Adue good Signior *Honorio*.

*Gasp.* Adue to you likewise fir. *Exeunt Gasparo & Honorio.*

*Lod.* Likewise to you fir. Alas poore vncke, I haue monstrously abused him; and yet maruellous worthie, for he disparageth the whole bloud of vs; and I wish all such old sheepebiters might alwaies dippe their fingers in such fauce to their mutton; but thus will he presently bee safe; for by this hee is neere his sweete hearts house, where he is like to be entertain'd with worfe cheere then we made him. *Quintilliano* is now caroufing in the Emperours head, while his owne head buddes hornes to caroufe in; and in the meane time

will my amorous friend and I, make both their absences  
shooing hornes to draw on the prefence of *Æmilia*.

*Exit.*

*Enter Lorenzo and Angelo (Francisco aboue)*

*Ang.* **W**Hat sayes your worship now? Do you  
not walke inuisible, all your ancient  
acquaintance, your owne nephew to talke with you and  
neuer discouer you?

*Lor.* But *Angelo*, a villanous feare shooke me the  
whiles I sweare, for still I was afraid my tongue would  
haue likt away the foote of my face, and bewrayed me;  
but *Snayle*, hitherto thy rustie shell has protected me:  
perfeuer till I haue yonder house a my head, hold in  
thy hornes, till they looke out of *Quintillianoos* fore-  
head: for an old man to make a yong man cuckold,  
is one of *Hercules* labours.

*Ang.* That was the cleansing of other mens stables.

*Lor.* To make youth rampant in age, and age  
passant in youth, to take a man downe at his owne  
weapon; to call backe time in one, and thrust him  
headlong vpon another.

*Aug.* Now your worship is Oracle to your owne  
miracles; how you shine in this smoaky cloud? which  
you make the golden net to embrace *Venus*, y'auē  
past the pikes yfaith, and all the Iayles of the loue-god  
swarme in yonder house, to salute your recouery.

*Lor.* Wel *Angelo*, I tell thee, now we are past the  
danger, I would not for 40 crowns but haue heard,  
what I haue heard.

*Ang.* True sir, now you know what the world  
thinks on you, 'tis not possible for a great man, that  
shines alwaies in his greatnesse, to know himselfe; but  
O twice yong *Leander*, see where your *Hero* stands

with torch of her beauty to direct you to her tower, aduance your sweete note, & vpon her.

*Lor.* Chimney sweepe, worke for chimney sweepe.

*Fran.* Come in chimney sweeper.

*Lor.* O *Angelo*.

*Ang.* Why now fir thine *Angelo* is your good Angell; enter and prosper, and when you are in the mid'st of your happinesse. thinke of him that prefer'd you. *Exit Lorenzo.*

*Fran.* *Angelo*, giue him not too much time with me, for feare of the worst, but goe presently to the backe gate, and vse my husbands knocke, then will I presently thrust him into my cole-house: and there shall the old flesh-monger fast for his iniquity. *Exit.*

*Ang.* Well said mine owne *Franke* yfaith, we shall trim him betwixt vs, I for the most flouently case in the towne; shee, for the most sluttish place in the house: Neuer was old horse-man so notoriously ridden; well, I will presently knocke him into the cole-house, and then haste to *Lodouico*, to know when he shall be releast. *Exit.*

*Enter Lodouico with a ladder of ropes, Aurelio,  
(Æmilia aboue.)*

*Lod.* **H**ere's thy ladder, and ther's thy gallowes, thy Mistris is thy hangman, and must take thee downe: This is the Tarrasse where thy sweet heart tarries; what wouldst thou call it in Rime?

*Aur.* Celestiall spheare, wherein more beauty shines.

*Lod.* Roome for a passion.

*Aur.* Then on Dardanian Ida, where the pride Of heauens selected beauties striu'd for prize.

*Lod.* Nay you shall know, we haue watred our houses in Helicon. I cannot abide this talking and vndoing Poetry, leaue your mellifluous numbers : yonder's a fight will steale all reason from your rime I can tell you ; downe of your knees you slaue, adore. Now lets heare you inuocate, O the fuple hammes of a loue, goe to, doe not, stand vp close, for she must not see you yet, though she know you are here.

*Æm.* Cozen *Lodowicke* ?

*Lod.* Who cal's *Lodowicke* ?

*Æm.* What tempest hath cast you on this follitary shore ? Is the party come ?

*Lod.* The party ? now a plague of your modesty, are your lips too nice to name *Aurelio* ?

*Æm.* Well, is he come then ?

*Lod.* He, which he ? s'fut name your man with a mischiefe to you, I vnderstand you not.

*Æm.* Was there euer such a wild-braine ? *Aurelio.*

*Lod.* *Aurelio* ? Lord how loth you are to let any found of him come out an you, you hold him so deare within, Ile present her with a fight, will startle her nicety a little better ; hold you, fasten the end of this ladder I pray.

*Æm.* Now Iesus bleffe vs, why cofen, are you mad ?

*Lod.* Goe to you spirit of a feather, be not so soft hearted, leaue your nicety, or by this hemp Ile so hamper thy affections in the halter of thy louers absence, making it vp in a gordian knot of forgetfulnessse, that no *Alexander* of thy allurements, with all the swordes of thy sweet words, shall euer cut in peeces.

*Æm.* Lord, how you roule in your rope-ripe termes.

*Lod.* Goe to, tell me, will you fasten the ladder or no ?

*Æm.* I know not what I should say t'ee : I will fasten it, so only your selfe will come vp.

*Lod.* Only my selfe will come vp then.

*Æm.* Nay sweet Cuze, sweare it.

*Lod.* If I should sweare thou wouldst curse me : take my word in a halters name, and make the ladder as fast to the Tarrasse, as thou would'st be to *Aurelio*.

*Æm.* Nay see if he doe not make me giue ouer againe ?

*Lod.* Was there euer such a blew kitling ? fasten it now, or by heauen thou do'st loose me for euer.

*Æm.* Well sir, remember your word ; I will fasten it, but yfaith Cuze, is not the Gentleman, and his parting choller parted yet ?

*Lod.* Yfaith with much adoe :

*Æm.* Nay, nay, choose him : I shall liue, if they be not : and if I liue till his choller kill me, I shall liue till he leaue louing me, and that will be a good while first.

*Lod.* Lord, Lord, who has enform'd you of such amorous feruecy in him : are you so confident in his kindnesse ?

*Æm.* Nay by my troth, tis but a carelesse confidence neither, which alwaies last longer then that which is timorous : well Cuze, here I haue fastned it for your pleasure ; but alas, the feare of my fathers comming so distract me, that I scarce know what I doe or say.

*Lod.* Your father ? do'st thinke we would venture all this preparation, and not make him safe ?

*Æm.* But are you sure he is safe ?

*Lod.* Am I sure this is *Aurelio* ? looke vpon him wench, is it not thy loue ? thy life ? come sir, mount.

*Æm.* O cosen *Lodwicke*, doe you thus cosen and betray me ?

*Lod.* Cuze, Cuze, thou hast acted thy dissembling part long enough, in the most modest iudgement, aud passing naturally, giue ouer with thy credit then, vnmaske thy loue, let her appeere in her natiue simplicity, striue to conceale her no longer from thy loue, for I must needs tell thee he knowes all.

*Æm.* What does he know ?



*Lod.* Why all that thou told'st me, that thou lou'st him more then he can loue thee, that thou hast set vp thy resolution, in despight of friends or foes, weales or woes, to let him possesse thee wholly, and that thou didst wooe me to bring him hither to thee : All this he knowes ; that it was thy deuice to prepare this ladder, and in a word, all the speech that past betwixt thee and and me he knowes, I told him euery word truly and faithfully Gods my Iudge.

*Æm.* Now was there euer such an immodest creature ?

*Lod.* *Via*, with all vaine modesty, leaue this colouring, and strip thy loue starke naked, this time is too precious to spend vainly ; mount I say.

*Aur.* Modell of heauenly beauty.

*Lod.* Sownds, wilt thou melt into rime a the tother side ? shall we haue lines ? change thy stile for a ladder, this will bring thee to Parnassus, vp I say.

*Aur.* Vnworthy I t'approach the furthest step to that felicity that shines in her.

*Lod.* O spurblinde affection, I haue seene a fellow, to a worse end ascend a ladder with a better will, and yet this is in the way of marriage, and they say, marriage and hanging haue both one constellation. To approue the which old saying, see if a new ladder make 'em not agree.

*Æm.* Peace, some bodie comes.

*Lod.* That you heard, was but a mouse, so boy I warrant thee.

*Aur.* O sacred goddesse, what soe're thou art  
That in meere pittie to preferue a soule  
From vnderferu'd destruction, hast vouchsaf't  
To take *Æmiliaes* shape.

*Lod.* What a poetically sheepe is this ? S'life, will you stand riming there vpon a stage, to be an eye-marke to all that passe ? is there not a chamber by ? withdraw I say for shame, haue you no shame in you ? heere will come some bodie presently I lay my life on't.

*Aur.* Deare mistresse, to auoid that likely danger,  
Vouchsafe me onely priuate conference,  
And 'tis the fulnes of my present hopes.

*Exeunt.*

*Lod.* *Aurelio*, Occasion is bald, take her by the forelock ; so, so. In *Hymens* name get you together, heere will I stand Sentinell. This is the backe gate to *Honorios* house, which shall be *Aurelios*, if God giue him grace to weepe for his fathers death in time. And in this garden, if I could see the chaste *Lucreffe*, or the affable mistresse *Temperance*, I might (thus wrapt in my cloake) steale a little courtship through the chinke of a pale. But indeed I thinke it safer to sit closer, and so to cloud the summe of my visnomy, that no eye discernes it. (*He sits downe and muffles himselfe in his cloake.*) So be it, thats my resolution. Now to my contemplation, this is no Pandarisme, is it ? No, for there is neither money nor credit propos'd or expected, and besides there is no vnlawfull act intended, no not this same *lasciuia actio animi*: I thinke for his part, much lesse hers : go to, let me do my kinfwoman, and her sex right, sit at rest with me then reputation, and conscience, fall asleepe with the world, but this same idle attendance is the spite of it, Idleneffe is accounted with other men a sinne, to me 'tis a penance, I was begot in a stirring season, for now hath my soule a thousand fancies in an instant, as what wench dreams on when she lies on her backe, when one hen layes an egge and another sits it, whether that hen shall mother that chicken ? If my bull leape your cow, is not the calfe yours ? yes no doubt, for *Ædificium cedit solo* saies the Lawyer : and then to close all comes in a sentence, *Non omnia possumus omnes* : for some are borne to riches, others to verses, some to be bachelers, others to be cuckolds, some to get crownes, and others to spend'm, some to get children, and others to keepe 'em : and all this is but idleneffe, would to God I had some scuruy poeme about me to laugh at, (*Enter Temperance.*) but marke, yonders a motion to be seene.

*Temp.* Yonder he sits yfaith, well done true loue, good Signior *Leonoro*, he keepes promise the best, he does not see me yet.

*Lod.* 'Tis the stai'd Madam *Temperance*, a pretty pinnace she has bene in her daies, and in her nights too, for her burthen, and reasonable good vnder fayle, and see she hath discovered a fayle, see, see, she hailes him in, ha? tis this way to the rewards, flight 'tis this way: I hope the baud knowes not me, and yet I know not, she may be a witch, for a whore she was before I knew her, a baud I haue knowne her any time this dozen yeares, the next step to honour then is a witch, because of Nature, for where the whore ends, the baud begins, and the corruption of a baud, is the generation of a witch. And *Pythagoras* holds opinion, that a witch turnes to a wild Cat, as an old Ofler turnes to an ambling nagge. (*Enter Leonoro muffled in his cloake with Lyonell.*)

*Leo.* This is the backe gate, where *Temperance* should meete me at this howre.

*Lyon.* I wonder she fayles, for I see her not.

*Leo.* Why sits that fellow there troe? come let's houer here abouts 'twill not be long er'e we encounter.

*Exit.*

*Lod.* So, now this riddle is expounded, this baud tooke me for this aduenturer whom (twentie to one) she attended, to waft him into *Lucretias* chamber, what a beast was I, not to apprehend this aduantage, thus muffled as I am, she could not haue perceiued mee till I had bene in, And I might safely haue staid a while without endangering my louers: (*Enter Temperance stealing along the stage.*) S'light she takes me still for her first man.

*Tem.* Come, come, gingerly fo r Gods fake, gingerly  
*Exe unt*

---

*Enter Leonoro and Lyonell.*

*Leo.* See *Lyonell*, yet she is not come, and the  
S priuy attendant is gone.

*Lyo.* I wonder what it was.

*Leo.* I feare me some other clyent of hers, whom  
she preferres before me, come, we must not linger  
here too long together, wee'll enter on this backside, to  
the Emperours head, where we will stay a little, and  
then make the last triall of this bauds honesty. (*Enter  
Quintiliano, Giouenelli, and Fannio in their doublet and  
hose.*)

*Quint.* Come Ancient, lets leaue our company a  
little, and ayre our selues in this backside.—Who goes  
there?

*Leo.* A friend.

*Quint.* The word.

*Leo.* God faue you Captaine *Quintiliano*.

*Quint.* Shote him Ancient, a spie, the word's the  
Emperours head, and thither you shall go fir.

*Leo.* Pardon me good Captaine.

*Gio.* Come, be not retrograde to our desires.

*Leo.* I attend a friend of mine.

*Quint.* Th'ast attended him already, I am witnesse  
too't, deni't and he dare, whatfo're he bee, and he  
shall attend thee another while, and he will: Th'art as  
good a man as he, and he be the Duke himselfe, for a  
*Clarissimo*; entertaine him Ancient, bid the *Clarif-  
simo*, welcome, Ile call a drawer, and wee'll haue some  
wine in this Arbor. *Exit.*

*Gio.* Y'are very welcome Signior *Clarissimo*, desire  
you more acquaintance fir.

*Leo.* My name is *Leonoro* fir, & indeed I scarce  
know you.

*Gio.* No fir, and you know me, you must know as  
much as I know, for *Scientia* and *Scientificus* is all one;  
but that's all one, in truth fir, you shall not spend a  
penny here, I had money, I thanke God euen now,  
and peradventure shall haue againe e're we part, I  
haue sent to a friend of mine.

(*Enter Quintilliano and a drawer with a cup of wine & a towell.*)

*Quint.* Here honourable *Clarissimo*, I drinke to thee.

*Leo.* Thanke you good Captaine.

*Quint.* S'fut, winefucker, what haue you fild vs heere, baldredash ? taste *Leonoro*.

*Leo.* Me thinks 'tis facke.

*Geo.* Let vs taste fir, 'tis claret, but it has beene fetch't againe with *Aqua vitæ*.

*Quint.* S'light me thinks t'as taken salt water, who drew this wine you rogue ?

*Draw.* My fellow *Sam* drew it fir, the wine's a good neat wine, but you loue a pleasanter grape, Ile fit your palate fir. (*He stands clofe.*)

*Quint.* Is this thy boy *Leonoro* ?

*Leo.* For fault of a better fir.

*Quint.* Afore heauen 'tis a sweete fac't child, me thinks he should show well in womans attire : and hee tooke her by the lilly white hand, and he laid her vpon a bed. Ile helpe thee to three crownes a weeke for him, and she can act well. Ha'st euer practis'd my pretty *Ganimede* ?

*Lyo.* No, nor neuer meane fir.

*Geo.* Meane fir ? No marry Captaine, there will neuer be meane in his practife I warrant him.

*Quint.* O finely taken ; Sirha, *Clarissimo*, this fellow was an arrant Affe this fore-noone, afore he came to be an Antient.

*Leo.* But where's your Lieftenant Captaine ?

*Quint.* Sownds man, hee's turnd fwaggerer.

*Leo.* Ist possible ?

*Quint.* Swaggerer by this light he ; and is in the next roome writing a challenge to this tall Gentleman my Antient here.

*Leo.* What, mutinous in your owne company ?

*Quint.* S'fut man, who can bridle the asses valour ?



*Giou.* S'blood and any man thinke to bridle me.

*Leo.* But what was the quarrell?

*Quint.* Why fir, because I entertaind this Gentleman for my Antient, (being my deare friend and an excellent scholler) he takes pepper ith'nose and sneefes it out vpon my Antient; now fir (he being of an vn-cole-carrying spirit) fals foule on him, cals him gull openly; and euer since I am faine to drinke with 'em in two roomes, dare not let 'em come together for my life, but with pen and inke-hornes, and so my Lieftenant is in the next chamber casting cold Inke vpon the (*Enter Innocentio.*) flame of his courage, to keepe him from the blot of cowardise, see where he comes with his challenge: good *Clarissimo* hold my Antient.

*Leo.* Good Antient, forbear in a Tauerne.

*Quint.* Reuenge noble Lieftenant, hast thou done it?

*Innoc.* S'light I thinke I haue pepperd him, but twas his owne seeking you know.

*Quint.* Thats certaine.

*Giou.* Sownds my seeking fir?

*Quint.* Hold him *Leonoro*; and if it be possible, perswade him to heare the challenge from the enemies owne mouth.

*Leo.* Ile vndertake he shall Captaine: Good Antient let me entreate you.

*Giou.* Well fir, because y'are a stranger to me, you shall doe more with me.

*Leo.* Thanke you good ancient.

*Quint.* Reade fiery Lieftenant, reade boy, legibly.

*Innoc.* Here it is fir: Signior *Giouenelli*, it is not ignorant vnto you, that euen now you crost me ouer the cocks-comb.

*Giou.* I did so fir: I will not denie it I warrant you.

*Leo.* Good Ancient peace.

*Innoc.* And that openly, or else it would neuer haue greeu'd me.

*Quint.* That openly was all indeede.

*Innoc.* And moreouer, very vnreuerendly to call me gull, and asse to my face : And therefore, though I held it good discretion in me to winke at the blow, not feeling to take notice of it.

*Leo.* Good discretion in deede.

*Innoc.* Yet know that I will haue satisfaction from you.

*Giou.* Well sir, and you shall.

*Quint.* Nay good Ancient heare him.

*Innoc.* And desire you to send me word, whether you will maintaine it or no, hoping that you will not offer that discourtesie to doe me wrong, and stand to it when you haue done.

*Leo.* That were foule indeede.

*Innoc.* And as for the words, in that you call'd me gull, and Assé to my face, resolute me by letter (for I do not thinke fit we should meete) first whether you spake any such words or no : and secondly by whom you meant 'em. And if by me (as I thinke you durst not) confesse you are sorry for 'hem : and if I haue offended you, I heartily aske you forgiuenesse. And so farewell.

*Quint.* Afore heauen Ancient, this would haue tickled you, but good *Leonoro*, and thou bee'st a right *Clarissimo*, lets make 'em friends, and drinke to one another : S'fut, we haue no wine here me thinks, where's this Aperner ?

*Drawer.* Here Sir.

*Quint.* Haue you mended your hand sir.

*Draw.* I Captaine, and if this please not your taste, either you or I cannot tast a cup of wine.

*Quint.* Sounds y'are very saucy sir, here Lieftenant, drink to thy Ancient, and voide mutinies with your officer, marshall law is dangerous.

*Innoc.* Is he content I should drinke to him ?

*Leo.* He is I warrant thee.

*Innoc.* Why then Ancient good lucke t'ee.

*Giou.* Let come Lieftenant, I pledge you.

*Quint.* Why so, now my company is cur'de againe,

afore 'twas wounded. Come honorable *Clarissimo*, lets retire to our strength, taste a fresh caroufe or two, aud then march home with Musicke. Tapster, call vs in some Musicke.


*Draw.* I will fir.

*Finis Actus Tertij.*

---

## ACTUS Quartus.

*Enter Quintiliano, Leonoro, Innocentio, Lionello, Fannio, with Musicke.*

*Quint.*  Trike vp Scrapers, honorable *Clarissimo*, and thy sweet *Adonis*, adieu, remember our deuce at the show foone.

*Leo.* I will not faile Captaine, farewell t'ee both : come *Lionel*, now let vs trie the truth of Madam *Temperance*, and see if shee attend vs.

*Innoc.* I hope by this time shee remembers her promise fir. *Exeunt Leo. and Lio.*

*Quint.* How now Lieftenant, where's my Ancient ?

*Innoc.* Marry Captaine y'aue left him casting the reckoning ith' chimney.

*Quint.* Why then his purse and his stomacke wil be empty together, and so I cashier him ; let the scholler report at Padua, that Venice has other manner of learning belongs to it : what does his *Continuum* & *Contiguum* here ? let 'em goe to the Inke pot and beware of the wine pot.

Fill red cheek't *Bacchus*, let the *Burdeux* grape  
Skip like *la voltos* in their fwelling vaines.

*Te dan, dan tidle, te dan de dan tidle didle, &c.*

*Innoc.* O God Captaine that I could dance fo.

*Quint.* He tooke her by (strike vp fidlers) the lilly white hand and he laid her vpon the bedde. Oh what a fpirit haue I now? I long to meete a Sergeant in this humor, I would but haue one whiffe at one of thefe fame peuter button'd foulder-clappers, to trie whether this chopping knife or their peftels were the better weapons. Here's a blade Boy, it was the old Dukes firft predeceffors; Ile tell thee what Lieftenant, this fword has dubd more Knights then thy knife has opened Oysters.

*Innoc.* Ift poffible Captaine, and me thinks it ftands a little.

*Quint.* No matter for that, your beft mettald blades will ftand fooneft: fo, now we haue attaind our Manfion houfe. At which Ile fing a verfe shall breake the dores. *O noble Hercules*, let no Stygian lake.

*Te dan dan tidle, te dan de dan tidle didle, &c.*

Farewell ferapers, your reward now shall be that I will not cut your strings nor breake your fiddles, *via*, away.

*Innoc.* Come Captaine, lets enter, I long to fee my Miftris, I warrant shee's a heauy Gentlewoman for your abfence.

*Quint.* S'fut she's an Afle, honour wooes me, preferment cals me, and I must lye pampred in a wench's lap, becaufe shee dotes on me. Honour faies no, Lieftenant. *Pugna pro patria*, we must too't yfaith and feeke our portion amongft the scratcht faces.

*Lorenzo within.* Miftris, Miftris, is he gone?

*Quint.* Whoe's that cals there?

*Innoc.* I heard no body.

*Quint.* No? there was one cald Miftris: I fay who cald Miftris, s'blood I hope I am not drunke.

*Fann.* In truth fir I heard no body.

*Quint.* I tell thee I fmelt a voice here in my

entry, s'fut Ile make it smell worfe and' cheare it againe.

*Innoc.* O me, hee'll draw vpon his owne shaddow in this humour, if it take the wall of him. Follow him *Fannio*, looke he doe no harme for God fake.

*Lor.* Helpe, helpe, helpe.

*Innoc.* Name of God, what's there to doe? (*Enter Quintil. and Lorenzo.*)

*Lor.* Good Captaine doe not hurt me.

*Quint.* Sounds is hell broke loose? why *Snaile*, though you can sing songs and doe things *Snaile*, I must not allow yee to creepe into my wiues cole-houfe, what *Snaile* into my withdrawing chamber?

*Lor.* I beseech your worship heare me speake.

*Quint.* O *Snaile*, this is a hard case; no roome serue your turne, but my wiues cole-houfe, and her other house of office annex to it? a priuy place for her selfe, and me fometimes, and will you vse it being a stranger? s'light how comes this about? vp sirha and call your Mistris.

*Lor.* A plague of all disguises. *Exit Fannio.*

*Innoc.* Alas poore *Snaile*, what didst thou make here?

*Lor.* I protest fir for no harme, my Mistris cald me in to sweepe her chimney, and because I did it not to her minde, she made me doe pennance in her cole-houfe.

*Innoc.* Search him Captaine and see, if he haue stolen nothing.

*Lor.* Kill me, hang me, if I haue.

*Quint.* Yes *Snaile*, and besides I heare complaints of you, y'are an old luxurious hummerer about wenches *Snaile*, does this become your grauity fir? Lieftenant, fetch me a cole-sacke, Ile put him in it and hang him vp for a signe.

*Lor.* I beseech your Worship be good to me.

*Innoc.* Good Captaine pardon him, since he has done nothing but swept your chimney worfe then my



Mistris would haue it swept, he will doe it better another time.

*Quint.* Well *Snaike*, at this Gentlemans request, (to whom I can denie nothing) I release you for this once, but let me take you no more thus I aduise you.

*Lor.* Not while I liue good Captaine.

*Quint.* Hence, trudge you drudge, goe away.

*Lor.* A plague of all disguises. *Exit Lorenzo.*

(*Enter Fannio.*)

*Fann.* I haue look't about all the house for my Mistris fir, but I cannot finde her.

*Quint.* Goe then, looke all about the towne for her too ; come in Lieftenant, lets repose a little after our liquor. *Exeunt.*

*Enter Aurelio and Emilia, aboue.*

*Aur.* D Eare life, be resolute, that no respect  
Heighted aboue the compasse of your  
loue,

Depresse the equall comforts it retaines ;  
For since it finds a firme consent in both,  
And both our births and yeares agree so well,  
If both our aged parents should refuse,  
For any common obiect of the world,  
To giue their hands to ours, let vs resolue  
To liue together like our liues and soules.

*Em.* I am resolu'd my loue ; and yet alas,  
So much affection to my fathers will  
Conforts the true desires I beare to you,  
That I would haue no sparke of our loue seene,  
Till his consent be ask'd, and so your fathers.

*Aur.* So runnes the mutuall current of my wish,  
And with such staid and circumspect respects,  
We may so serue and gouerne our desires,

That till fit obseruation of our fathers,  
Preferre the motion to them ; we may loue  
Without their knowledge and the skill of any,  
Saue only of my true friend *Lodowicke*.

*Æm.* I wonder where he is.

*Aur.* Not farre I know,  
For in some place, he watcheth to preuent  
The feared danger of your fathers prefence.

---

*Enter Lorenzo and Angelo running.*

*Ang.* SOUNDS stay for the loue of your honour  
fir.

*Lor.* A plague of all disguifes *Angelo*.

*Ang.* What reason haue you to curse them ? has  
not one of them kept you safe from the shame of the  
world, as much as a poore disguise might doe ; but  
when your ridiculous feares will cast it off, euen while  
it is on, so running through the streets, that they rise  
all in an vprore after you ; alas what is the poore dis-  
guise to blame fir ?

*Lor.* Well then fortune is to blame, or some thing ;  
come as thou didst helpe to dawbe me, helpe to cleanse  
me, I prethee.

*Ang.* Let alone a while fir for Gods sake, Ile goe  
see whether the Captaine be gone from home or no.

*Lor.* Out vpon that course *Angelo* ; I am frighted  
out of it, come enter my house, enter.

*Ang.* What, will you enter your house fir afore you  
know who is in it : keepe your selfe close, and let me  
first enter and discover.

*Lor.* I know there is no body.

*Ang.* You cannot know it fir, I heard euen now  
that diuers of the Senate were determin'd to come and  
sit in Counsell there.

*Lor.* A tale, a very tale *Angelo*, enter for the loue of heauen, enter and vnmother me. *Exit.*

*Ang.* What shall I doe? my poore Master is beraid, O that fame faithlesse *Lodowicke*, that could drowne the swaggering Captaine no better in his drunkenesse; alas how should Ialue this? *Exit.*

(*Enter Lorenzo and after him Angelo*)

*Lor.* How now? whom doe I see? my daughter and a yonker together? passion of death, hell and damnation, what lecherous capricorne raignes this vnhappy day? old and yong in a predicament? O fie of filthy sinne and concupiscence, I will conceale my rage a while that it may breake forth in fury; Ile shift me presently *Angelo*, and goe fetch the Prouost.

*Ang.* O vnspeakable madnesse, will you for euer dishonour your daughter, and in her your selfe sir?

*Lor.* Talke not to me, out vpon this abhominable concupiscence, the pride of the flesh, this witchcraft of the Diuell: talke not to me, iustice cries out an't in the streets, and I will see it punish't, come good *Angelo* to helpe to shift me.

*Ang.* Ile follow you Sir instantly; Master, Master.

*Aur.* *Angelo*? what newes?

*Ang.* Miserable Master, cast downe your ladder, and come downe instantly.

*Æm.* Alas, why, *Angelo* is my father comming.

*Ang.* Let vs not talke but come downe I say.

*Aur.* Deere life, farewell, wee'll shortly meete againe,

So parts the dying body from the foule;

As I depart from my *Æmilia*.

*Æm.* So enter frighted foules to the low world,

As my poore spirit vpon this foddaine doubt,

What may succede this danger.

*Ang.* Come away, you'll be whipt anone for your amourosity, hast for shame hast, &c.

*Æm.* Once more and euer, fare my deere life well.

*Exit Æmil.*

*Ang.* Leaue your amorous congeis & get you in

Dame ; fir you and I will talke as 'twere betwixt the pales, now, get you and shift you of this fute presently.

*Aur.* Shift me *Angelo* ? why man ?

*Ang.* Aske me no questions, but goe home and shift you presently, and when I haue done a little businesse here within, Ile come and tell you my deuice : there hath more chanc't then you are aware of, and then I can stand to tell you ; away therefore presently goe home and shift you.

*Aur.* Very good fir, I will be rul'd by you, and after learne the misteries. *Exit Aurel.*

*Ang.* Now will I let the little squire shift and cleanse himselfe without me, that he may be longer about fetching the Prouost, and in the meane time will I take my Masters fute (of which the little squire tooke note) and put it on my sweet heart *Francischina*, who shall presently come and supply my Masters place, with his Mistris ; for the little squire amaz'd with his late affrights and this suddaine offencefull spectacle of his daughter, tooke no certaine note who it was that accosted her ; for if he had, he would haue blam'd me for my Master, only the colour of his garment sticks in his fancie, which when he shall still see where he left it, he will still imagine the same person weares it, and thus shall his daughters honour and my Masters be preferu'd with the finest sugar of inuention. And when the little squire discouers my sweet heart, shee shall sweare, shee so disguised her selfe, to follow him, for her loue to him ; ha, ha, ha, O the wit of man when it has the winde of a woman. *Exit.*

---

*Enter Lodouico and Lucretia, with Rapiers fighting.*

*Lod.* **H**Old, hold, I pre thee hold ; I yeeld my rapier,  
Let my submission, my presumption fall.

*Lucr.* Ignoble *Lodwicke*, should I take thy life,  
It were amends too little for the wrong.

*Lod.* O the precious heavens :  
How was I gul'd ? haud, hide thy selfe for shame.  
And henceforth haue an eye before thy fingers.

*Lucr.* Well do not ieast it out, for I protest  
If this disguise, which my inhumane fate  
Puts on my proper sexe, be by thy meanes  
Seene through, by any other then thy selfe,  
The quarrell twixt vs shall be more then mortall,  
And thy dishonour to a friendlesse stranger  
(Exild his natiue countrey, to remnine  
Thrall to the mercy of such vnknowne miads  
As fortune makes the rulers of my life)  
Shall spread it selfe beyond my misery,

*Lod.* Nay, mixe not cause of mirth with passion,  
Do me the grace t'vnfold thy name and state,  
And tell me what my whole estate may doe,  
To salue this wrong vnwittingly I did thee ?  
And set the plantife thoughts of thy hard fate  
In such peace, as my friendship may procure :  
And if I faile thee, let *Ioue* fayle my foule,  
When most this earth makes it need help of heauē.

*Lucr.* In the more then temper my late rage  
And show your vertues perfectly deriu'd  
From the Venetian nobleffe ; for my name  
It is *Lucretio*, which to fit this habit  
I turn'd *Lucretia* : the rest that rests  
To be related of my true estate,  
Ile tell some other time : least now your presence  
Might dumbly tell it (if it should be seene)  
To all the world, or else make it suspect  
My femall life of lightnesse : then with thanks



And vow of all true friendship, for th'amends  
 Your kindnesse makes me, take your sword againe,  
 And with it while I liue the power of mine  
 In any honor'd vse shall commaund.  
 Then till we meete, and may laugh at this error,  
 Ile once more trie the free peace of my chamber.

*Exit.*

*Lod.* Do so sweet friend : a plague of Gingerly ?  
 Where is that stale and fulsome Gingerly,  
 She brought me to a fury, Ile be sworne  
 Rather then man or woman : a flat beating :  
 I found her suppos'd mistresse fast asleepe,  
 Put her to the touchstone, and she prou' a man,  
 He wak't, and with a more then manly spirit  
 Flew in my face, and gaue me such a dash  
 In steed of kissing, of these licorish lips  
 That still my teeth within them bled I sweare

*(He spits.)*

*Gengerly, Gingerly, a plague a you. (He spits againe.)*  
 But now how does my louers on the Tarraffe ?

*Enter Aurelio with Angelo, shifting his Apparell.*

*Aur.* **H**Old, take my dublet too, my hat and  
 all, and quickly hie thee to thy sweete.

*Ang.* S'ounds, see fir see, your proper Sentinell,  
 that when you needed him gaue you a slip.

*Aur.* Friend *Lodouico*, by my life, well welcome to  
 this my fathers backefide.

*Lod.* Well fir, well, I would I had kist almost your  
 fathers backefide so I had neuer knowne it.

*Ang.* A my life he faints extremely, he left you  
 euen now to purchase him the amorous enteruiew of  
 your fayre cuze *Lucretia* that lies heere.

*Aur.* Gods me, sweete friend, would'st thou vse such a flight to any one that lay within my walke? who was thy meane to her?

*Ang.* I lay my life, tame madam *Temperance*, the notorious Pandar.

*Aur.* S'fut friend, wat a notorious ouersight was that? and what a violent iniury vnto thy friend?

*Lod.* A plague vpon you both, you scuruy hinde, haue you no gull but me to whet your wit vpon?

*Aur.* My friend a priuie loue? I'de haue sworne Loue might spend all his shafts at butterflies As well as at his bosome.

*Ang.* 'Twas your fault then,  
For I haue noted a most faithfull league  
Betwixt him and his barber now of late,  
And all the world may see, he does not leaue  
One haire on his smooth chinn, as who should say,  
His haplesse loue was gone against the hayre.

*Lod.* S'bloud & these rogues knew how I was de-  
ceiu'd,  
They'd flout me into motley, by this light.

*Ang.* Well sir, I euer thought y'ad the best wit  
Of any man in Venice next mine owne,  
But now Ile lay the bucklers at your feete,

*Lod.* A poxe vpon thee, tame your bald hewed  
tongue,  
Or by the Lord of heauen Ile pull it out.

*Aur.* O my sweet friend, come Ile no more of  
this,  
And tell thee all our fortune, hence good *Angelo*.

*Ang.* O, if this man had patience to his braine,  
A man might load him till he smart againe. *Exit Ang.*

*Lod.* Patience worthy friend, hee knowes you loue  
him for his knauish wit. *Exeunt.*

---

*Enter Leonoro, Temperance and Lyonell.*

*Leo.* THOU shalt not stay sweet *Temperance*, tell vs the manner of our warre and wee'll leaue thee presently.

*Temp.* Why that perl's man *Lodowicke*, according to your appointment was iumpe at three with mee, iust, eene full at your hower; Muffled as I wild you, ee'ne your fashion and your very leg for all the earth, and followed me in so gingerly, that by my troth I must needs say, he was worthy the pleasuring; but in what a taking was I when I perceiued his voyce? & when I saw my mistresse & he together by the eares?

*Leo.* What did thy mistesse fight him?

*Temp.* O king a heauen, she ranne vpon his naked weapon the most finely that euer liu'd, and I ran away in a swoone for feare.

*Leo.* Has she a good courage?

*Lio.* It seemes she is too honest for our companies, a little more good *Temperance*.

*Temp.* And when he saw me, he call'd me punke, and pandor, and doxie, & the vilest nicknames as if I had ben an arrand naughty-packe.

*Leo.* 'Tis no matter *Temperance*, hee's knowne and thou art knowne.

*Temp.* I thanke heauen for it, and ther's al indeed, I can stay no longer. *Exit.*

*Leo.* Farewell honest *Temperance*, how was it possible, *Lodouico* should fit all these circumstances without the confederacy and trechery of this beldam? well *Lodouico* must satisfie this doubt when I see him.

*Lio.* That will be at the May night shew at Signior *Honorios*.

*Leo.* I would not meet him there, I shall offend him; but there I must needs be, and haue thee disguis'd like a woman.

*Lio.* Me sir?

*Leo.* No remedy, the Captain *Quintilliano* and I

haue deuis'd it to gull his Lieutenant : for thou shalt dance with him, we will thrust him vpon thee, and then for his courting and gifts, which we will tell him he must win thee withall, I hope thou wilt haue wit enough to receiue the tone, and pay him againe with the tother, come *Lionell* let me see how naturally thou canst play the woman. *Exit.*

*Lio.* Better then you thinke for.

*Enter Quintiliano and Innocentio.*

*Quint.* Come Lieutenant, this nap has fet a nap of sobriety vpon our braines, now lets sit heere & consult, what course were best for vs to take in this dangerous mansion of mans life.

*Inno.* I am for you yfaith Captaine & you go to consult once.

*Quint.* I know it Lieutenant, say then what think'st thou ? we talk't of employemēt, of action, of honor, of a cōpany & so forth.

*Inno.* Did we so Captaine ?

*Quint.* Did we so Affe ? S'fut, wert thou drunke afore thou went'st to the tauerne, that thou hast now forgotten it ?

*Inno.* Crie you mercy good Captaine, I remember I am your Lieutenant.

*Quint.* Well fir, and so thou shalt be called stil, and I Captaine, though we neuer leade other company then a fort of quart pots.

*Inno.* Shall we Captaine, bith masse then lets neuer haue other company in deed.

*Quint.* Why now th'art wise, and hast a minde transform'd with maine right, and to confirme thee, I

will compare the noble seruice of a feast with the honourable seruice of the field, and then put on thy hand to which thou wilt.

*Inno.* Thanke you good Captaine, but do you thinke that warre is naught fir ?

*Quint.* Exceeding naught.

*Inno.* Why then fir take heede what you say, for 'tis dangerous speaking against any thing that is naught, I can tell you.

*Quint.* Thou faist wisely Lieutenant, I will not then vse the word naught, nor speake ill of eyther, but compare them both, and choose the better.

*Inno.* Take heede then good Captaine, there be some pricke-ear'd intelligencers conuaid into some wall or other about vs.

*Quint.* If there were I care not, for to say true, the first modell of a battell was taken from a banquet. And first touching the offices of both : for the generall of the field, there is the master of the feast, for the Lieutenant Generall, the mistresse, for the Sergeant Maior, the Steward, for the Gentleman vsier, the Marshall, for master oth' Ordinance the Sewer, and all other officers.

*Inno.* Yet y'are reasonable well Captaine.

*Quint.* Then for the preparation, as in a field is all kinde of Artillery, your Cannon, your Demicannon, Culuerings, falkons, Sacres, minions, & such goodly ornaments of a field, I speake no hurt of em thou feest, Ile haue nothing to do do with 'am.

*Inno.* Hold you still there Captaine.

*Quint.* Besides other munition of powder and shot, and so for the feast, you haue your Court, cubbords planted with flagons, cannes, cups, beakers, bowles, goblets, basens and ewers : And more glorious shew I wisse then the tother, and yet I speake no hurt of the other.

*Inno.* No Ile be sworne Captaine.

*Quint.* Besides your munition of manchets, napery plats, spoons, glasse and so forth ; Then for your



kitchen artillerie, there shall you see all your brasse peeces mounted in order, as your beefe-pots, your chaldrons, your kettles, chafingdishes, ladles, spits, a more edifying spectacle then your Cannon & Culuering, and yet I speake no hurt of them neither.

*Inno.* No Captaine, thus farre, I goe wee.

*Quint.* Then sir, as in the field the drumme, so to the feast the dresser giues the Alarme, Ran tan tara, tan tan tantara tan.

*Inno.* O how it stirres my stomacke ?

*Quint.* First then sets forward a wing of light horse, as fallads, brothes, fauces, stew'd meats, and other kickshores, and they giue a charge, then do the battell ioyne Captaine Capon in whitebrith, Lieutenant calues head.

*Inno.* Thats my place.

*Quint.* Ancient Surloigne, a man of a goodly presence, and full of expectation, as you ancient ought to be bee, then haue you *Sergeant Piemeat, Corporall Conny, Lanceprizado Larke*, Gentlemen, Panbakex, & all the species of a company.

*Inno.* Would we might fall to the fight once.

*Quint.* Why now growes the fight hot man, now shall you see many a tall piece of beefe, many a tough capon go downe, and hee'rs the triall of a mans stomacke, all the while the Artillery playes on both hands, the Canons lay about them, the flagons go off, thicke and threefold, and many a tall man goes halting off, some quite ouerthrowne both horse and foote.

*Inno.* O my heart bleeds.

*Quint.* That is, thy teeth water. In conclusion, as the remnant of the feast, (I meane such dishes as scap't the fury of the fight) if they be seruiceable, are referu'd to furnish out another day, if they be maim'd or spoyld, they are sent abroad to relieue prisons and hospitals. So the remainder of the fight, if they be seruiceable, they are referu'd to supply a second field, for the fragments of the fight, viz. the maimd soldiers, they are sent like-

wife to furnish prisons and hospitals, how sayest thou now Lieutenant, shall we to the feast, or to the fight?

*Inno.* No fighting good Captain, to the feast for Gods sake.

*Quint.* Tha'rt a my mind right, and so will we presently march on to the facke of the Emperours head, then to the May-night feast, and shew at Signior *Honorios*, and there will be a wench there boy, a delicate yong morfell, a kinswoman of Signior *Honorios*, and her fathers only child, he a mighty rich *Clarissimo*, and her shalt thou court, winne her and weare her, thou hast wit at will.

*Inno.* But shall that wench be her fathers sonne and heire Captaine?

*Quint.* Shee shall be his heire, a mine honesty.

*Innoc.* But shall not my Mistris your wife bee at that show?

*Quint.* Shee shall, and we could finde her; *Fannio* has beene abroade this houre to seeke her: the Assie is stept into some corner or other mourning for my absence. (*Enter Angelo and Francischina in disguise.*) See who comes here?

*Ang.* Come Cuze, march faire, me thinks thou becom'ft a Page excellent naturally, cheere vp thy heart wench. *Kisse her.*

*Franc.* Fie for shame kisse in the streets?

*Ang.* Why not? truth seekes no corners, and 'twas a true loues kisse, and so is this.

*Quint.* Ware riot, do'ft thou marke Lieftenant?

*Franc.* Gods pittie, my husband.

*Exeunt Franc. Ang.*

*Innoc.* What were these Captaine?

*Quint.* Vpon my life the hindermost of them, is a wench in mans attire, didst thou not marke besides his slabbering about her, her bigge thighes and her splay feete.

*Innoc.* By the meskin me thought they were so indeede.

*Quent.* S'life, the hungry knaue her squire, could not hold in the open streets.

*Innoc.* What should shee be ?

*Quint.* The Doxie was muffeld in her cloake, I had but a glimpse of her ; but s'light I will know her. shee paffes not so, come wee'll follow. Ile beate the Rogue and take away's whore from him. *Exeunt.*

*Enter Angelo and Francischina.*

*Ang.* **C**ome courage Cuze, wee haue fail'd the man of Warre out of fight, and here wee must put into harbour. Hift, hawe *Amila* ?

*Amil.* O welcome good *Angelo*.

*Ang.* Here take in, goe, get vp lightly, away, take heed you slip not Cuze, remember y'are short heel'd.

*Franc.* Hold fast for Gods sake.

*Ang.* Nay hold you fast, you'll shame vs all else ; so *Ioue* receiue thy foule ; I take away the ladder : Now till you haue deceiued the Prouost, farewell, remember your lesson Cuze. *Exit.*

*Franc.* I warrant you. (*Quintil. and Innocentio.*)

*Quint.* How vnhappily did we misse 'em ? they slipt into some vaulting house, I hold my life.

*Innoc.* Faith its good we mist 'em, she was some stale punke I warrant her.

*Quint.* Twenty to one shee is some honest mans wife of the Parish that steales abroad for a trimming, while he sits secure at home, little knowing, God knowes, what hangs ouer his head ; the poore Cuckold

esteeming her the most vertuous wife in the world. And shoude one tell him, he had seene her drest like a Page following a knaue thns, Ile lay my life he would not beleeeue it.

*Innoc.* Why no Captaine, wiues take all the faith from their husbands. And that makes 'em do so many good workes as they doe.

*Quint.* Mercy for that yfaith Lieftenant, stand close. (*Enter Fannio and Giacono.*)

*Fann.* My Mistris in mans apparell saist thou?

*Giac.* Thy Mistris in mans apparell I assure thee, and attended by *Angelo*.

*Fann.* Would to heauen I had seene her, canst tell whither shee went.

*Giac.* Full butt into *Lorenzoes* house, and if thou knewst him, thou know'st wherefore, an ill-fauour'd trimming is her errand.

*Fann.* 'Tis very well, shee trims my Captaine prettily, in the meane time his head paies for all, and yet alas poore hornestocke, he thinks her to haue no fault, but her too much dotage vpon him, well, my conscience will not let me keepe her counsaile, he shall know on't.

*Giac.* Why man if both of vs should tell him her fault he will not beleeeue vs.

*Fann.* No, nor if he had seene it with his owne eyes I thinke, I shal neuer forget how the profound Cockatrice hung on his sleeue to day, and he shoude not from her sight, shee'd follow him into the warres, one day should make an end of both their loues and liues, and then to see him the wittall, my Captaine began to stroote, and batle the pride of his merits that so heightned her affection.

*Giac.* True, and how the foppasty his Lieftenant, stept in to perswade with her, to take it patiently, for friends must part, we came not all together, and we must not goe all together.

*Fann.* Well, 'twill not be for any man to follow him, if this were knowne once.

*Giac.* Lord how all the boyes in the town would flocke about him as he walks the streets, as 'twere about a bagge-pipe, and hoot the poore Cuckold out of his hornecafe.

*Fann.* Well, and I were worthy to giue him counsaile, he should e'ne faire and well hang himselfe.

*Giac.* No, no, keepe it from him, and say thou found'st her at a womans labour.

*Fann.* A plague of her labour, the Captaines browes sweate while shee labours.

*Giac.* If I were in thy case, I should laugh out right when I saw him.

*Fann.* That dare not I doe, but as often as he turnes his backe to me, I shall be here V with him thats certaine : or when I follow him and his cheating stocke *Innocentio*, in the streets, I shall imagine still I am driuing an Oxe and an Affe before me, and cry phtroh, ho, phtrough.

*Innoc.* S'light Captaine take this and take all.

*Quint.* Not a word for the world, for if we should take notice of his words the flaue would denie all, leaue it to me to sift it in priuate. Now fir, what newes with you ? where's your Mistris, that you range thus at your pleasure ?

*Fann.* In health fir I trust.

*Quint.* Come forward you rogue you : come forward, whither creepe you behinde so ? where's your Mistris fir ?

*Fann.* At a poore womans labour fir.

*Quint.* Very well fir, come Lieftenant, goe you afore, and doe you follow him fir.

*Fann.* What afore my Captaine fir : you shall pardon me.


*Quint.* Afore you rogue, afore. *Exeunt.*

*Finis Actus Quarti.*



*Actus Quintus.*

*Enter Honorio, Lorenzo, Gasparo and Angelo.*

*Hon.*  Ignior *Lorenzo*, and *Gasparo*, y'are very welcome, we shall haue good company and sport to entertaine you ere long I hope, shall we not *Angelo* ?

*Ang.* Yes fir, I haue enuited all you commanded me.

*Lor.* This is the honest man indeede, that tooke the paines to come for me.

*Gasp.* And for me also.

*Ang.* No paines but pleasure fir, I was glad I had such good meanes to be knowne to your Worship.

*Lor.* Nay, I haue knowne you before, to be the seruuant of Signior *Honorio* here, I take it.

*Hon.* Not my seruuant Signior *Lorenzo*, but my sonnes.

*Lor.* O, your sonne *Aurelios* seruuant ? beleeeue me you or your sonne (in mine opinion, though I say it before him) made good choice of him : for he hath a good honest face, and to a man of iudgement (I tell you) that's as good as a good surety for him. I will be better acquainted with you fir, pray you giue me your hand.

*Ang.* Both my hand and heart fir, shall be euer at your seruice.

*Lor.* Thanks my good friend, Ile make thee laugh anone *Angelo*.

*Ang.* I thanke your Worship, you haue done so often.

*Hon.* A notable wagge Signior *Gasparo*.

*Gaspo.* How curiously *Lorenzo* thinks he carries the matter ?

*Lor.* How now Gentlemen, ist a merry secret, that you smile so ?

*Hon.* No secret Signior *Lorenzo*, but a merry conceipt we were thinking on, to furnish our shew anone, if it had beene thought on in time.

*Lor.* What was that I pray ?

*Hon.* Marry fir, we had good sport to day with *Snayle* the chimney-sweeper.

*Lor.* Had you so fir ?

*Gaspo.* That euer was.

*Lor.* Lord that I had beene amongst you, but what more of him fir ?

*Hon.* Marry fir, we were thinking how we might merrily deceaue our company that is to come, if we could haue gotten him some *Magnificoes* sute of the Citty, whom for his little stature and leane face he might resemble, that in that habit he might haue stolen some kind fauours from the Ladies, to make him amends and please him for the anger we put him in.

*Lor.* It would haue made excellent merriment.

*Ang.* You are his best Master fir, and if it please you to send me for him by some token, Ile goe for him ; otherwise he will not come to these Gentlemen.

*Lor.* Shall he come Gentlemen ?

*Amb.* If you please fir.

*Lor.* Why then hearke thee *Angelo* ; not for the world.

*Ang.* Thinke you me such an Affe fir ?

*Lor.* Shall he haue one of my little brothers suites, and come in amongst the Dames for him ?

*Hon.* If you could, it would fit him exceedingly.

*Lor.* Much ; now laugh *Angelo* : what Gentleman was that I spi'd aloft with my daughter thinkst thou ?

*Ang.* I know not fir ; I beseech your Worship who was it ?

*Lor.* Franke, in mans apparell *Angelo*.

*Ang.* O wonderfull.

*Lor.* We cannot inueut a token, for my loue  
*Angelo*.

*Ang.* O excellent.

*Lor.* We will hit it anone Gentlemen.

*Amb.* At your leafure fir.

*Lor.* The fwaggerer her husband, had note of it by his Page, and yet the fame Page hath perfwaded him, fince that 'twas but a gullery.

*Ang.* 'Tis a notable cracke ; and his Master hath fuch a pure beleefe in his wife, that hee's apt to beleeeue any good of her.

*Lor.* True *Angelo*, enough for this time ; thou fhalt make as if thou went'ft for *Snaile*, and returne without him, faying thou canft not finde him.

*Ang.* Agreed fir.

*Lor.* Now Gentlemen, we haue deuis'd a wile to bring *Snaile* amongft vs, and I haue giuen *Angelo* order for a fute for him, that is my little brothers, and him he fhall counterfeit ; goe *Angelo* feeke him out.

*Ang.* I will fir.

*Exit Ang.*

*Hon.* Thanke you for this good Signior *Lorenzo*.

*Gasp.* It will quicken the company well. (*Enter Emilia, Lionell, Francischina and another woman.*)

*Lor.* For their fakes and yours, I haue done it Gentlemen ; and fee the faire flocke come vpon vs.

*Hon.* Welcome faire Ladies, but efpecially you Lady, that are fo meere a ftranger, Signior *Lorenzo* you know yong *Leonoro* ?

*Lor.* Very well fir, a gallant fparke.

*Gasp.* And I thinke you know his father.

*Lor.* Know him ? I faith fir there was a reueller, I fhall neuer fee man doe his lofty tricks like him while I liue.

*Hon.* This Gentlewoman is his Neice fir.

*Lor.* His Niece ? fhee fhall doe her felfe wrong not to be acquainted with her deere vnkles companion :  
*Kiffe her.*

*Gasp.* You know not this Gentlewoman fir ?

*Lor.* Not very well fir indeede, but entertainment must be giuen, mercy *Franke* for thy mans apparell, a plague of all swaggering husbands. Nay I must forth yfaith, Signior *Honorio*, this is for your sake, am I not a kinde helpe to your entertainment ?

*Hon.* An exceeding kinde one fir, and I exceedingly thanke you. (*Enter Meffenger.*)

*Meff.* The maskers are come fir.

*Hon.* Doe you and your fellowes attend them in.

*Meff.* We will fir. *Exit Meff.*

*Hon.* Sit gētle Ladies till the maskers raife you to dance.

*Enter Aurelio, Leonoro, Quintiliano, and Innocentio,  
in a maske dancing.*

*Hon.* **W**elcome Gallants, O the roome's too scant, a hall Gentlemen.

*Leo.* See how womanly my Boy lookes *Quintiliano*.

*Quint.* 'Twill be rare sport ; Lieftenant, that sweet wench in the brancht gowne is the heire I told thee of.

*Innoc.* Gods me, Ile to her and kisse her.

*Quint.* O no, you must not vnmaske.

*Innoc.* No, no, Ile kisse her with my maske and all.

*Leo.* No Lieftenant, take her and court her first, and then kisse her.

*Omnnes.* To her flaue.

*Aur.* There's thy wife too, *Quintiliano*.

*Quint.* True, little knowes shee I am so neere her ; Ile fingle her out, and trie what entertainment a stranger may finde with her.

*Aur.* Doe so, and wee'll take vp the tother. (*Enter Angelo.*)  
*They dance.*

*Ang.* I can by no meanes finde *Snaile* fir.

*Hon.* The worfe lucke, but what remedy?

*Lor.* Gramercy *Angelo*; but Signior *Lorenzo*, mee thinks I misse one flower in this femall garland.

*Hon.* VVhose that?

*Lor.* Your Neice *Lucretia*.

*Hon.* By my foule 'tis true; whats the reason *Angelo Lucretia* is not here?

*Ang.* I know no reason but her owne will fir.

*Gasp.* Ther's fomewhat in it certaine. *They dance againe.*

*Inno.* Did you see the play to day I pray?

*Lio.* No, but I see the foole in it here.

*Inno.* Doe you so forfooth? where is he pray?

*Lio.* Not farre from you fir, but we must not point at any body here.

*Inno.* Thats true indeede, cry mercy forfooth, doe you know me through my maske?

*Lio.* Not I fir, shee must haue better skill in bak't meats then I, that can difcerne a woodcicke through the cruft.

*Inno.* Thats true indeede, but yet I thought I'de try you. (*Enter Lodouico.*) *They dance.*

*Lor.* VVhat Nephew *Lodwicke*, I thought you had beene one of the maskers.

*Lod.* I vse no masking fir with my friends.

*Hon.* No signior *Lodowick*, but y'are a very truant in your schoole of friendship, that come so late to your friends.

*Gasp.* Somewhat has croft him sure.

*Leo.* Somewhat shall croffe him; *Lodouico* let me speake with you.

*Lod.* VVith me fir?

*Leo.* You are the man fir, I can scarce say the Gentleman, for you haue done a wrong the credit of a Gentleman cannot answere.

*Lod.* VVould I might see his face, that durst say so much.

*Leo.* Obserue him well, he shoves his face that will proue it when thou dar'st.



*Aur.* How now *Leonoro*, you forget your selfe too much, to grow outragious in this company.

*Leo.* *Aurelio*, doe not wrong me, and your selfe, I vndertake your quarrell, this man hath dishonord your Kinswoman *Lucretia*, whom (if I might) I intended to marry.

*Aur.* Some error makes you mistake *Leonoro*, I assure myselfe.

*Hon.* VVhat interruption of our sport is this gentlemen?

*Lor.* Are not my Nephew and *Leonoro* friends?

*Lod.* He charges me with dishonoring his mistress *Lucretia*.

*Hon.* Birlady *Lodouico*, the charge touches you deeply, you must answere it.

*Lod.* I desire I may fir, and then will referre me to your censures.

*Lor.* VVell Nephew, well; will you neuer leaue this your haunt of fornication? I schoole him, and doe all I can, but all is lost.

*Lod.* Good Vnkle giue me leaue to answere my other accufer, and then Ile descend, and speake of your fornication, as the last branch of my diuision.

*Lor.* Very well, be briefe.

*Lod.* I will fir; The ground vpon which this man builds his false imagination, is his sight of me at *Honorios* backe gate, since dinner, where muffled in my cloke, kinde Madam Temperance, the attendant of *Lucretia*, from the Tarrasse, wafted me to her with her hand; taking me (as now I vnderstand) for this honest Gentleman, I not knowing what vse shee had to put me to, obaid the attraction of her signall, as gingerly as shee bad me, (A plague vpon her gingerly) till shee lockt me into *Lucretias* chamber, where *Lucretia* lying asleepe on her bed, I thought it rudeneffe to wake her; and (imagining when shee wak't shee had something to say to me) attended her leasure at my ease, and lay downe softly by her; when (hauing chaster and simpler thoughts then *Leonoro* imagines) because he mea-

fures my waft by his owne ) in the very coldneffe and dulneffe of my fpirit, I fell fodainly a-fleepe. In which my fancy prefented me with the ftrangeft dreame, that euer yet poffeft me.

*Lor.* Pray God you did but dreame Nephew.

*Lod.* You fhall know that by knowing the euent of it.

*Hon.* Goe to, pray let vs heare it.

*Lod.* Me thought *Lucretia* and I were at mawe, a game Vnkle that you can well skill of.

*Lor.* Well fir I can fo.

*Lod.* You will the more mufe at my fortune ; or my ouerfights. For my game flood, me thought, vpon my laft two tricks, when I made fure of the fet, and yet loft it, hauing the varlet and the fiae finger to make two tricks.

*Lor.* How had that beene poffible ?

*Hon.* That had beene no misfortune fure but plaine ouerfight.

*Gasp.* But what was the reafon you thought you loft it fir ?

*Lod.* You fhall heare ; fhee had in her hand the Ace of Hearts, me thought, and a Coate-carde, fhee led the bord with her coate, I plaid the varlet, and tooke vp her coate, and meaning to lay my fiae finger vpon her Ace of hearts, vp ftart a quite contrary card ; vp fhee rifes withall, takes me a dafh a the mouth, drew a rapier he had lay by him, and out of dores we went together by the eares.

*Hon.* A rapier he had by him ?

*Lor.* What a fhee turned to a he ? do'ft thou not dreame all this while Nephew.

*Lod.* No nor that time neither, though I pretended it ; let him be fetcht, I warrant you he will fhew as good cards as the beft on you, to proue him an heire Male, if he be the eldeft child of his father.

*Hon.* This is exceeding ftrange : goe *Angelo*, fetch her and her hand-maide.

*Ang.* I will fir, if her valure be not too hot for my fingers. *Exit.*

*Hon.* Could fuch a disguise be made good all this while without my knowledge? to say truth, shee was a stranger to me, her father being a Sicilian: fled thence for a disastrous act, and coming hither grew kindly acquainted with me, and called me brother. At his death committing his supposed daughter to my care and protection, till she were restor'd to her estate in her native Country.

*Lor.* Was he in hope of it?

*Hon.* He was, and in neere possibility of it himselfe, had he liu'd but little longer.

*(Enter Angelo and Lucretia.)*

*Ang.* Here's the Gentlewoman you talkt of fir, nay you must come forward too graue Mistris *Temperance.*

*Lod.* How now fir? who wants gentility now I beseech you?

*Leo.* Who haue we here?

*Lucr.* Stand not amaz'd, nor disparage him: you see fir, this habit truly doth sute my sexe, howsoever my hard fortunes haue made me a while reiect it.

*Hon.* What hard fortunes?

*Lucr.* Those you know of my father fir: who feared my following of him in my native likenesse, to the hauen, where he by stealth imbarqu't vs, and would haue discover'd him, his offence being the slaughter of a Gentleman, that would haue slaine him.

*Hono.* But did you not tell me you were betroth'd before this misfortune hapned, to a yong Gentleman of Sicily, call'd *Theagines*?

*Lucr.* I told you I was betroth'd to one *Theagine*, not *Theagines*, who indeed was a woman.

*Leo.* And yet whosoever had seene that *Theagine* since might haue taken him for a man.

*Lucr.* Do you know her Gentlewoman?

*Lio.* It seemes you will not know her.

*Leo.* Hearke how my boy plaies the knaue with her.

*Quint.* A noble rogue, S'fut Lieutenant, wilt thou suffer thy nose to be wipt of this great heire?

*Inno.* S'light fir you are no handkercher are you?

*Lucr.* Pre thee forbear, more happy then vlookt for is this deere accident: adopted and noble father, this is the Gentlewoman to whom I told you I was betroth'd, the happy newes she had to relate to me, made her a traueller, the more searck of her passage made her a Page, and her good fortune obtaind her —— this honest Gentleman to her Master, who I thanke him, being (as he supposed me) lou'd me, accept vs both for your children.

*Hono.* Most gladly and with no lesse care, then mine owne protect you.

*Quint.* S'fut, how now *Leonora*? new fireworkes?

*Lod.* New fir, who wants gentility? this is a gentlemanly part of you to keepe a wench in a Pages furniture?

*Leo.* It was more then I knew Sir, but this shall be a warning to me while I liue, how I iudge of the instrument by the case againe.

*Lucr.* Nay it is you friend *Lodouico* that are most to blame, that holding the whole feminine sexe in such contempt, would yet play the pickpurse, and steale a poore maids maidenhead out of her pocket sleeping.

*Leo.* 'Twas but to coufen mee.

*Aur.* And to be before me in loue.

*Lor.* And to laugh at me.

*Lod.* Nay, ieast not at me sweete Gentles, I v'd plaine and mannerly dealing, I neither v'd the brokage of any, as you know who did *Leonoro*, nor the help of a ladder to creep in at a wenchs chamber window (as you know who did *Aurelio*.) Nor did I case my selfe in buckrame, and crie chimney sweepe (where are you vncke!) but I was train'd to it by this honest matron here.

*Temp.* Meddle not with me fir.

*Lucr.* I am beholding to her, she was loth to haue me leade apes in hell.

*Quint.* Looke that you keepe promise with me Ladie, when will thy husband be from home ?

*Fran.* Not so soone as I would wish him, but whensoever you shall be welcome.

*Quint.* I very kindly thanke you Lady.

*Fran.* Gods me, I tooke you for Signior *Placentio*.

*Quint.* S'fut, thou liest in thy throte, thou knewst me as well as my selfe.

*Hono.* What, Signior *Quintilian*, and friend *Innocentio* ? I look't not for you here, & y'are much the better welcome.

*Quin.* Thanks dad *Honorio*, and liues my little fquire ? when shall I see thee at my house lad ?

*Lor.* A plague a your house, I was there too lately.

*Lod.* See Lordings, her's two will not let go till they haue your consents to be made surer.

*Lor.* By my foule, and because old *Gasparo* heere has bene so cold in his loue sute, if she be better pleas'd with *Aurelio*, and his father with her, heauen giue abundance of good with him.

*Hono.* So you stand not too much vpon goods, I say, Amen.

*Lor.* Faith vse him as your sonne and heire, and I desire no more.

*Hono.* So will I of mine honour, are you agreed youths ?

*Ambo.* And most humbly gratulate your high fauors.

*Gasp.* Faith & *Ioue* giue 'em ioy together for my part.

*Lod.* Yet is heere another nayle to be driuen, heer's a vertuous Matron, Madam *Temperance*, that is able to doe much good in a commonwealth, a woman of good parts, fels complexion, helpes maids to seruices, restores maidenheads, brings women to bed, and men to their bedfides.

*Temp.* By my faith, but faue votre grace fir.

*Lod.* Hath drinks for loue, and giues the diet.

*Temp.* Birladie, and thats not amisse for you fir.



*Lod.* For me, with a plague tee?

*Temp.* No nor for any man thats not found I meane  
fir.

*Lod.* S'fut mafters thefe be good parts in the old  
wench, wilt thou haue her Lieutenant? sheele be a  
good ftay to the reft of thy liuing, the gallants will all  
honour thee at thy houfe I warrant thee.

*Inno.* Fore God Captaine I care not if I haue.

*Temp.* Well yong Gentleman, perhaps it fhould not  
be the worft for you.

*Quint.* Why law, thy vertues haue won her at firft  
fight, fhee fhall not come to thee emptie, for Ile pro-  
mife thee that Ile make her able to bid any Gentleman  
welcome to a peece of mutton and rabbet at all times.

*Lor.* Birladie, a good Ordinarie.

*Quint.* Thow't vifit fometimes *Dad.*

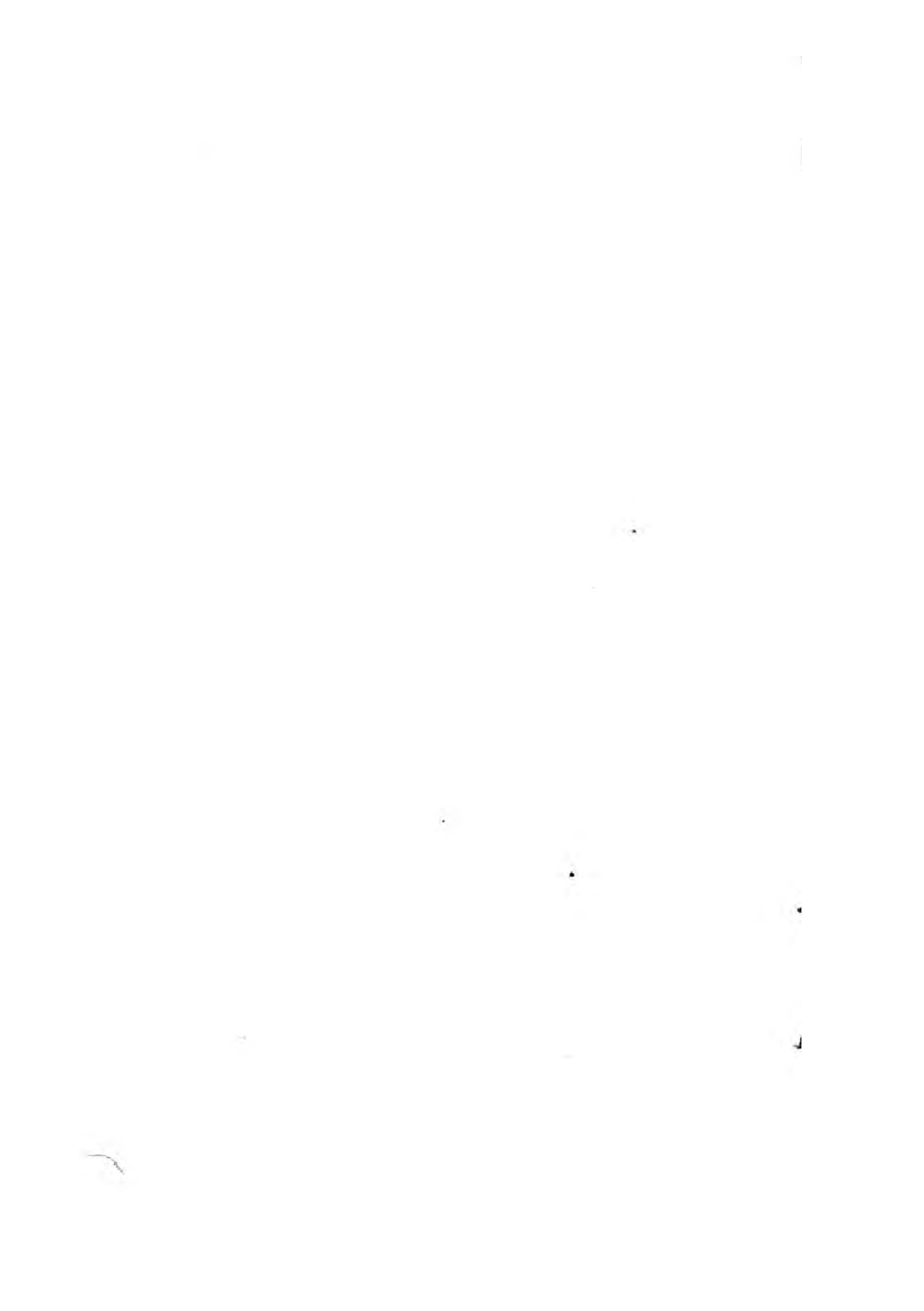
*Lor.* That I will yfaith boy in authority wife.

*Quint.* Why then ftrike hands, and if the reft be  
pleas'd,

Let all hands ftrike as thefe haue ftrucke afore,  
And with round Ecchoes make the welken rore.

*Exeunt.*

*Finis Actus Quinti & ultimi.*



## NOTES AND ILLUSTRATIONS.

---

PAGE 3.

*Prologue to BUSSY D'AMBOIS.*

—Field is gone

*Whose action first did giue it name—*

It appears from an account of the English Stage by Chalmers, that Field was originally one of the children of the Chapel, and played a principal part both in *Cynthia's Revels* and the *Poetaster* of Ben Jonson, and that he was alive in 1632, between which period and 1641 (when the present Prologue was first prefixed to the play) he must have died. He wrote two dramatic pieces, and assisted Massinger in *The Fatal Dowry*.

PAGE 4.

*a third man with his best*

*Of care and paines, defends our interest.*

The third man here alluded to was probably Hart, who performed the part of D'Ambois with great applause, and who accepted a military commission under King Charles I. soon after the time that this Prologue was spoken ; and was a lieutenant of horse. He returned to the stage after the Restoration,

and continued to perform with the highest approbation till the year 1682, when he retired. His performance of the character of Buffy D'Ambois is spoken of with the greatest enthusiasm by D'Urfey, who alludes to "the graceful action of that eternally renowned and best of actors."

## PAGE 6.

*To put a Girdle round about the world.*

Puck in *Midsummer Night's Dream*, says :

"I'll put a girdle round about the earth  
In forty minutes.

## PAGE 10.

*Table, Chefbord, and Tapers, behind the Arras.*

This stage direction has no apparent allusion to anything which passes in the present scene, and was most probably meant to be introduced in the next, where it seems certain that the King and the Duke of Guise play at chess.

## PAGE 12.

*(beside your chaine  
And velvet Jacket)*

The stewards of noblemen and gentlemen wore a chain of gold, accompanied, it seems probable from the text, by a velvet jacket. See also Middleton's "A Mad World, my Masters :"

"That's my grandfire's chief gentleman i' the chain of gold. That he should live to be a pander, and yet look upon *his chain and his velvet jacket.*"

## PAGE 12.

*I feare his wodden dagger.*

In the old "Mysteries" the devil was the source of entertainment to the vulgar : when the Moralities were introduced, his office was filled by the Vice ; this latter had a dress peculiar to himself, and a *wooden dagger* was used by him in belabouring the actors. Shakespeare alludes to this instrument in the first part of *Henry IV.*, and in *Twelfth Night* ; and Ben Jonson in his *Staple of News* :

"Here is never a friend to carry him away : besides he has never a *wooden dagger*. I'd not give a rush for a Vice that hath not a *wooden dagger* to snap at every one he meets."

## PAGE 16.

*come I'le enseame thee.*

*Enseam* seems to mean here, to enter amongst the number of intimate friends. The word occurs in the fourth book of Spenser's *Faerie Queene*, and means there simply to enclose :

"Bounteous Trent, that in himself enseams  
Both thirty ferts of fish, aud thirty fundry streams."

## PAGE 17.

*good Accius Næuius, doe as much with your tongue as he  
did with a Razor.*

The person mentioned was a famous augur, who being asked by Tarquinius Priscus, then King of Rome, whether that which he was thinking of might be effected, answered that it might. "I was thinking," replied the King, "whether this whetstone might be cut in pieces with a razor ; upon which the augur is reported to have taken a razor and cut the whetstone in pieces in the King's presence.

## PAGE 23.

*That the n'ere-shutting wounds, they needes must open,  
Might as they open'd, shut and neuer kill.*

"One can hardly believe" (says Charles Lamb) "but that these lines were written after Milton had described his warring angels."

## PAGE 85.

*Terror of darknesse: O thou King of Flames, &c.*

"This calling upon Light and Darkness for information," says



Charles Lamb, "but above all, the description of the spirit — 'Threw his changed countenance headlong into clouds'—is tremendous, to the curdling of the blood. I know nothing in poetry like it."

## PAGE 93.

*Looke vp and see thy spirit made a star,  
Joine flames with Hercules.*

Here the original edition supplies us with the correct text : in the edition of 1641, we find the nonsensical misprint, "*Jove* flames with *her* rules." The Editor of *Old English Plays* (Lond., 1814), in the third volume of which the text of 1641 is reprinted, has given some of the more important original readings of 1607 in footnote form. Towards the end of the play, however, he seems to have tired of his work of collation, for in the above passage he adopts the corrupt reading of the posthumous edition, without apparently being aware of any other, and thus ingeniously endeavours (p. 339.) to elucidate its obscurity:—"The word *Jove* is probably here used to denote the visible heavens."

## PAGE 113.

*The splenative Philosopher that euer  
Laught at them all.*

The splenative Philosopher was Democritus, and the twenty lines that follow are paraphrased from a passage in Juvenal's Tenth Satire (l. 33-55), beginning :—

"Perpetuo rifu pulmonem agitare solebat  
Democritus," &c.

## PAGE 142.

*When Homer made Achilles passionate, &c.*

These twelve lines, headed "Of Great Men," appear, with a few unimportant verbal differences, among the Epigrams printed at the end of Chapman's *Petrarch*, in 1612, a year before *The Revenge of Buffy D'Ambois* was published.

## PAGE 179.

*The Conspiracie and Tragedie of Charles Duke of Byron.*

The historical facts on which these two plays are founded are thus related in the *History of France* by Eyre Evans Crowe, (Lond., 1863, III. 353—357) :—"Accustomed to a century of

anarchy and licence, the restless spirits of the noblesse could not at once reconcile themselves to the authority, the order, and above all, the strict economy of Henry's government. None chafed more under the curb thus applied to unquiet and ambitious chiefs than the Maréchal Biron, son of the veteran, who had so long led the armies of Henry, he himself the successful leader of so many fights. He formed, like his father, an overweening estimate of his own services, which, though he was duke, marshal, and governor of Burgundy, he thought not sufficiently recompensed. Sent to Brussels to witness the ceremony of the archduke swearing to the treaty of Vervins, Biron had been swayed from his allegiance by the flattery and insinuations of that court. He had subsequently come in contact with the Duke of Savoy, and that arch-tempter had held out to him the prospect of a marriage with his third daughter, and the support of Spain towards his retaining Burgundy in his own right provided he joined a league of Spain and Savoy against France. Biron's consequent lukewarmness in conducting the war against the Duke of Savoy in La Bresse, had produced remarks and remonstrances from the king; and Biron, seeing how easily the Duke of Savoy had been reduced and destroyed, and fearing betrayal in that quarter, made a clean breast of it to Henry and asked pardon. He had obtained it nominally, but soon perceived that he could never again aspire to the full confidence of the king. A short time after the same causes of discontent which affected him also manifested themselves in the noblesse south of the Loire. Biron's aim in associating the Duke of Bouillon in his plot was not only to unite Huguenot and Catholic malcontents against Henry, but also to make use of De Bouillon's influence at the Court of England and of Protestant Germany. When Biron was despatched from Calais to England by Henry, he was accompanied in secret by the Count d'Auvergne, his associate in conspiracy, and no doubt they hoped to find encouragement in England for their disaffection. In this they were altogether disappointed, Elizabeth taking the opportunity to read Biron a lecture on the shame of disloyalty and the perilous consequences of treason.

Little profiting by this lesson, Biron continued his intrigues with Spain and Savoy. His chief confidant, De Luz, had the imprudence first to employ, and then offend, a person named La Fin, who had been entrusted with a confidential mission on his

part to Milan and Turin. It was indeed the Count de Fuentes who conceived suspicion of him, and recommended his being made away with. La Fin discerned his danger, saw that he was suspected, and looked to turn his former knowledge to profit by disclosing it to the court. Henry caused him to be brought to Fontainebleau, where he not only gave proofs by word of mouth of Biron's intelligence with the enemies of the country, but produced letters and documents in support of his revelations.

Biron was then enticed from his government of Burgundy, and from the towns which he held there, and came at length, in the course of 1602, believing that nothing perilous was known, and that by showing a bold face he would confound his enemies. La Fin contributed to lull him in this fatal security by his assurance that nothing important had been discovered. Receiving the traitor blandly, the king showed him familiarly the buildings and improvements of his palace, and took the opportunity of pressing him to own frankly aught hostile to his crown that Biron might have been engaged in. The marshal shrank from repeating the same confession, and asking the same pardon, as those which he had made and obtained at Lyons. He declared he had nothing to confess, and merely desired to be confronted with his enemies. Henry allowed a day to pass; again had a conversation with Biron, and again counselled him to be frank. The king consulted his council, which recommended the arrest and punishment of so dangerous a chief. Still he employed Sully and the Count of Soissons to bend the marshal to submission. But the latter was so confident and defiant, that in a conversation respecting the hopes of the King of Spain, he observed that Philip entertained no fear of the French monarch. Henry himself made a last attempt to induce his proud noble to confess, without, however, warning him that he was in possession of the proofs of his guilt, and finding him obstinate, departed with the words, "Adieu, Baron de Biron;" thus depriving him in a word of the titles and honours he had gained. In a few minutes after he was arrested with the Count d'Auvergne and conducted by Sully to the Bastille. The parliament instantly proceeded with his trial, and the evidence was such that, without hesitation, they condemned Biron to death.

"To order the execution of a capital sentence upon one, who had so long fought by his side, and rendered him important ser-

vice, was not in the nature of Henry, or, indeed, in the habits of the age. But the king felt it requisite for the pacification of his kingdom, and the reduction of his high nobleſſe to ſentiments of loyalty and allegiance. And he, moreover, feared to allow ſo dangerous a perſonage to ſurvive him, and be at liberty to recommence his intrigues during his ſucceſſor's minority. The friends of the marſhal, eſpecially Caumont, Duke de la Force, his brother-in-law, beſought Henry to ſhow mercy, and Biron himſelf, in a touching appeal, pleaded his thirty-two wounds, and prayed to be allowed to go in exile to Hungary. But he was too dangerous to be let looſe. Still the unhappy man could not believe to the laſt in the reality of his fate. He quarrelled with the executioner ; uttered wild threats of reſiſtance to the guards and witneſſes of the ſcene ; accused the king of cowardice, and thus, ſpending his laſt moments in imprecations, delayed the final ſtroke a whole day, and at laſt, in an acceſs of rage and uncertainty rather than reſignation, his head was ſevered from his body."

## PAGE 228.

*There is no danger to a man, that knowes  
What life and death is : there's not any law,  
Exceeds his knowledge ; neither is it lawfull  
That he ſhould ſtoope to any other lawe.*

These are the lines now memorable and conſecrated as having been choſen by Shelley as a motto for the Dedication of his *Revolt of Iſlam*.

## PAGE 275.

*The faithfull ſervant right in<sup>d</sup> holy writ ;  
That ſaid he would not come and yet he came.*

Matthew, xxi. 29. There is alſo an alluſion to the ſtory of the Prodigal Son at the bottom of the page.

## PAGE 288.

*Trust that deceives our ſelves in treachery,  
And Truth that truth conceales an open lie.*

There can be very little doubt that for "in" we ſhould read *is* in the firſt of theſe two lines ; but we have adhered to our rule of introducing no conjectural emendations into the text.

## PAGE 288.

*All this my Lord to me is misery.*

Here again is a palpable corruption of the text. It is not "misery" but *mystery* that the King promises in the next line to make plain enough.

## PAGE 325.

*a deft dapper perjonage.*

*Deft* is a word still in use in the northern counties, and means, in the text, "neat and well looking." It is used in Brome's *Northern Lasse* in the same sense: "He said I were a *deft* las, but there he feign'd."

## PAGE 330.

*to fold up thy selfe like an Vrchine.*

"An urchin," i.e. the common hedge-hog,

## PAGE 331.

*A purse of twenty pound in gold.*

The insertion of this marginal notice is a very conclusive evidence that this play was originally printed from the theatre copy, as it was evidently a direction to the property-man to furnish Innocentio with such a purse.

## PAGE 334.

*while men of seruice sit at home, and feede their hunger  
with the blood of red lattices.*

A quibble on the words "lettuce" and "lattice." Ale-houses were formerly known by red lattices at the doors and windows.

## PAGE 335.

INNOC. *Sfut, that I am I hope, I am sure my father has  
been twise Warden on's company.*

QUINT. *Thats not a peare matter man."*

It is perhaps needless to say that a pun is here intended. The *warden* was a species of *pear* well known in our author's time. A "warden tree" is mentioned in the Second Part of Dekker's *Honest Whore*: and "warden pies" in the *Winter's Tale*: they are also spoken of by Beaumont and Fletcher in *Cupid's Revenge*; and Ben Jonson makes the same use of the word as Chapman, and



talks of "a deputy tart, a church-warden pye," in his *Masque of Gyphes Metamorphosed*.

## PAGE 339.

*His breath smells like the butt end of a shoo-makers horne.*

In allusion to the rancid grease kept by shoe-makers in a horn.

## PAGE 350.

*Beware of an old colt while you liue.*

A former editor of this play suggests that we should read "cock" instead of *colt*, in order to make the speech that follows intelligible.

## PAGE 353.

*Salted there to be colted here.*

"Colted," *i.e.* cheated, tricked. So Bellamore, in the *Wit without Money* of Beaumont and Fletcher, says,

"He shall be hang'd before he colt us basely."

And Falstaff, in the First Part of *Henry IV*.

"What a plague mean ye, to colt me thus."

## PAGE 355.

*Are not you the taffell of a Gander ?*

The taffel or tiercel is said by Steevens, in a note on *Romeo and Juliet*, to be male of the goshawk. By the taffel of a *gander*, therefore, is probably meant a goose. Quintiliano expresses his astonishment at the simplicity of Giovenelle, who, fresh from Padua, presumed they could only drink healths on their knees, because their legs would not bear them. It was, however, very common among the fwaggerers of our poet's age, and is frequently, with other of their ceremonies, alluded to by the dramatic writers. So in the *Coxcomb* of Beaumont and Fletcher, Act. 1. Scen. V., when the drawer brings in the wine, Uberto says:—

"—— every man on's knees,

And betake himself to his faint : Here's to your wench signior."

And in *Westward Hoe* by Dekker and Webster : "My master and Sir Gollin are guzzling : they are dabbling together fathom

deep. The knight has drank so much healths to the gentleman yonder, *on his knees*, that he hath almost lost the use of his legs."

PAGE 361.

*Kisse the Paxe.*

The pax or pix was a box in which the consecrated wafers were kept.

PAGE 373.

*Come, be not retrograde to our desires.*

This phrase is from *Hamlet*, which was published eight years before Chapman's comedy of *May-Day*. Claudius says to Hamlet (Act I. sc. 2) :

"for your intent  
In going back to school at Wittenberg,  
It is most retrograde to our desire."

PAGE 374.

*S'fut, winesucker, what haue you fild vs heere, baldredash? taste Leonoro.*

"Balderdash" means a strange mixture of liquors. So Petruccio in *The Woman's Prize* of Fletcher (act iv. sc. 5) describing his wife, says :—

" — mine is such a *drench of balderdash*," &c.

PAGE 377.

INNOC. *I hope by this time shee remembers her promise sir.*

This speech seems properly to belong to Lionell ; and to have been attributed to Innocentio by an error of the press.

PAGE 378.

*Fill red cheek't Bacchus, let the Burdeux grape  
Skip like la voltos to their swelling vaines.*

This is composed from a bombastic passage in the Second Part of *Antonio and Mellida*, act v. sc. 4 :

" Why then Iö to Hymen, mount a loftie note :  
Fill red-cheekt Bacchus, let Lycus flote  
In burnisht gobblets. Force the plumpe-lipt god,  
Skip light lavoltaes in your full fapt veines," &c.

## PAGE 386,

*But now Ile lay the bucklers at your feete.*

A similar phrase occurs in Shakespeare, (*Much Ado about Nothing*, Act V, Sc. 2.), upon which Johnson observes, "I suppose that to 'give the bucklers' is to *yield*, or to *lay by all thoughts of defence*, fo *clypeum abjicere*." Steevens in a note on the same passage adduces, in addition to the above from Chapman, four or five other instances of the use of a similar expression in this sense by the Elizabethan writers.

## PAGE 387,

*Why that perl's man Lodowicke, according to your appointment, was iumpe at three with mee.*

"*Jump at three*," i.e. exactly at three. It occurs commonly in the writers of the time. So in *The Prophetess* of Fletcher (act I, sc. 3):

"They are a *jump* and squared out to his nature."

## PAGE 387,

*as if I had ben an arrand naughty-packe,*

*Naughty-pack* is yet in use in our northern counties. It is found in the *Roaring Girl* of Middleton and Dekker, and applied to the character who gives the name to that piece.

## PAGE 390,

*As in the field the drumme, so to the feast the dresser giues the Alarme,*

Innumerable passages in the old dramas show, that formerly when dinner was ready, the servants were summoned by the cook's knocking on the dresser to attend and carry it to table. So in Massinger's *Unnatural Combat* (act III. sc. 1.)

When the *dresser*, the *cook's drum*, thunders, come on!"

## PAGE 405.

*And with round Ecchoes make the welken rore.*

Compare Marlowe's *Dido Queen of Carthage*, act iv.

"Whose hideous echoes make the welkin howl."



